SHURA'S WRATH

BOOK 02

Mars Gravity

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Shura's Wrath

(网游之天谴修罗)

by

Mars Gravity

(火星引力)

Synopsis

To save his terminally ill little sister, Ling Chen enters the newly released virtual game world and joins a small gaming studio comprising entirely of women.

From now on walking upon his path towards the pinnacle.

An ancient, evil item almost forgotten by history, the “Lunar Scourge” helps forge his unsurpassable legend, and causes him to unknowingly step upon a path that is destined to be punished by the heavens, the way of the shura.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by WhatTranslate, Kaycee Liang, Sophia, Sylver135, Mr Voltaire @ Gravity Tales

Translation Edits by TheNo1Fan,Pebbles, xXmA5ta0f5hAd0WZzzXx, Niku @ Gravity Tales

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Book 02 - Heart's Dream

Chapter 101 - Xi Ling (1)

[Forgotten continent map]: Qian Gun Gun had travelled the Forgotten Continents countless times, this is a map that he painted himself. It covers the entire forgotten continent as well as the surrounding area, the information is comprehensive and detailed and even includes some hidden areas that ordinary people don't know about. Certain important or special areas also have additional annotations. With each region where monsters are located, there is a corresponding level associated with it. Different regions are coloured differently depending on their level of risk, the darker the colour, the more dangerous the region is. The black areas are where it is forbidden to set foot. Price: 50,000 gold. Stock: 1.

The first item that from Qiang Gun Gun's list surprised Ling Chen. One map that is selling for 50,000 gold seemed like a high price but Ling Chen knew well that the map for the entire Forgotten Continent is invaluable to players. The Forgotten Continent is extremely vast. Players who have just entered the Forgotten Continents would know nothing and can could only gradually explore everything. With this map, you can get information about the entirety of the Forgotten continent with a glance. It would be significantly more convenient to travel across the Forgotten Continent with the aid of the map. Moreover this is not just any plain old simple map. It includes numerous hidden areas of the Forgotten Continent, the complex labels allow for the map to contain much more information than just conventional maps.

[broken spatula]: Qiang Gun Gun spent 5 silver coins to buy a broken spatula from the residents of the Underworld. Contaminated by Death's breath, the spatula was able to easily remove minerals from the ground. Effect: 100% chance to successfully mine any ore, after being used it will become an ordinary broken spatula. Price: 20,000 gold. Stock: 59.

Ling chen: (⊙o⊙) ！ ！

Even though it can only be used once and even though it's a broken spatula being sold for 20,000 gold, it's effect is incredibly strong! If he had this spatula, even if he had no mining ability, he would be able to mine ore no matter what level it is– Including the one he encountered previously, the mysterious red sun gold that he was completely helpless with!

But what made Ling Chen really grind his teeth was that these spatulas were bought by Qian Gun Gun for 5 silver in the Underworld, like he was taking trash. But he is selling them for 20,000 gold! The price is increased by 40,000 times!

Profits on top of profits!

[Emptying Rock]: Qian Gun Gun picked up stones from the Underworld. Inside of which contains a low amount of spatial power. After placing it within a bag it can increase 300 storage space. Price 30,000 gold. Stock: 3.

At this point players can expand their storage space to a max of 200 in Azure Dragon City. This amount of space is considered enough for the current players, but for players that are from Mystic Moon, there will be more and more things to store in their backpacks… various equipment, crystals, items, potions and scrolls… with only 200 storage space, it would be hard to fit it all in. Especially for someone like Ling Chen who takes large volumes of a variety of items, with the current 200 storage space he can't fit everything in. With the addition of this stone in his bag, he can increase it by 300 storage space! Increasing storage space to a total of 500!! In addition the price doesn't seem too high… even though Qian Gun Gun didn't need to spend a single cent for them!

[Supernatural Crystal]: Category: Energy Crystal, Grade: Super, Attribute: Light. Effect: Experience gained +10%. Price: 300,000 gold. Stock: 1.

This Supernatural Crystal can increase Exp earnt by 10%. To players who want to level like madmen, seeing this item would bring great surprise and joy. No matter how much it would cost, they would want to purchase it. But Ling Chen is not interested in it, he didn't spend any further time looking at it and continued down the list.

[Strange yellow smelling beans]: Qian Gun Gun can't remember where he got these beans from but regards, it makes a person's shit yellow. Additionally it was also releasing a foul odor. After eating -100 HP, exp +50,000. Price: 5000 gold. Stock: 300.

[Strange black smelling beans]: Qian Gun Gun can't remember where he got these beans from either, their shape is similar to that of sheep shit. These beans were also releasing a foul odor. After eating -100HP, skill potential points +100. Price 5000 gold. stock: 300.

Items that will greatly increase exp and skill potential points... This time Ling Chen was once again quite surprised. In his state of being surprised, he couldn't help but take a look at the skinny Qian Gun Gun. Qi Yue had said that the things he sold were all unusual, after seeing his goods, Ling Chen now knew that the goods were more than just unusual. They had incredible effects as well! And these were only just his cheapest goods! No wonder so many people on the Forgotten Continent wanted to meet and trade with him.

[Skill Scroll — Second jump]: Usage requirements: Agility cannot be below 100. Perception cannot be below 8 points. After using the user will gain a "second jump". They can jump again in any direction after jumping to reposition. Highest level: lvl 5, at max level when a perception of 12 points and agility is at 360, it can be upgraded to "triple jump". Price: 500,000 gold. stock: 1.

[Flying scroll]: Usage requirements: None. After using this item, the user can increase the level of any unmaxed skill by 1 permanently. Price 500,000 gold, stock: 3.

After seeing these last 2 scrolls and looking at how much gold he had left, Ling Chen suddenly felt like crying with disappointment. In this moment, he had a very clear understanding of “money isn’t everything, but everything needs money” (Something Lu Shen had said).

If he could get [skill scroll — second jump], then with his agility, this ability [double jump] could yield terrifying results. Allowing him to enhance his protective and combative skills. It can even greatly increase his escape abilities. If he can obtain [triple jump], Ling Chen couldn’t hold back his excitement at the just the thought of it. On top of that the [flying scroll], directly level up one skill. Early on in the game, this scroll’s effet doesn’t seem to have such a dramatic impact but in the late game where skills are extremely difficult to level up, because not only will they need skill points but also other harsh conditions to fully raise the level, it would be extremely useful.

But these two scrolls both cost 500,000 gold each. He couldn’t afford them…

Additionally on top of that, another thing he remembered, these are Qian Gun Gun’s cheapest goods… which is to say they are only his lowest grade items.

“Fair trade, fair deals, no haggling allowed. How about it, these are all good items right. I don’t carry any ordinary items around. Same rules, see one you like, pay first before taking the goods.” said Qian Gun Gun. Seeing Ling Chen had finished reading his list

of goods, Qian Gun Gun narrowed his eyes. He only revealed his goods up to the price of 500,000 gold, because he could tell by the Ling Chen's appearance that he only was carrying about that much.

"I want to buy all these things." Ling Chen struggled to say: "but i'm not carrying that much money... Is there any way I can find you again in the future?"

Qian Gun Gun stared, and started shaking his head: "No no no! There are many people who want to buy my items, if I was found by people, how can I continue living happily! The business I make is based on fate! Want to buy more things? If you don't have enough money then you'll just have to wait till the next time you encounter me. But, my whole life I've never come across the same living being more than twice. Even seeing someone twice happens very very rarely."

The already demoralized Ling Chen now felt completely helpless. He pondered about in his thoughts for a while, then took out 80,000 gold and gave it to Qian Gun Gun: "buy [Forgotten continent map] and [Emptying rock]."
"OKAY!" gold in hand, Qian Gun Gun eyes turned into gold coins, and very quickly took out a map and a rock, that looked no different from a marble, and handed them to Ling Chen. "Boy, you have good taste, I have spent several hundred years drawing this map, only seeing it for 50,000 gold, you've gotten a bargain!"

After buying the map and the emptying rock, Ling Chen still had 340,000 gold, he couldn't afford the skill scroll, the flying scroll or the supernatural rock... too bad, it felt like a waste. As for the two

strange smelling beans, Ling Chen thought for a moment. For the amount he thought it cost, he felt that the effects were not worth it. So instead he took out his 340,000 gold... and gave it all to Qian Gun Gun: “Buy 17 spatulas.”
Perhaps for the average player, even if there was a 100 percent chance to mine any high level ore they still aren’t much use, because high level ore is not so easy to find. But because Ling Chen had Xiao Hui by his side, that wouldn’t be a concern when finding treasure. So, after another brief moment of consideration, he decided to spend the rest of his gold to buy the spatulas that can give him 100% chance to mine ores.

“OKAY!” Qian Gun Gun exclaimed, with gold in his hands. He then quickly took out 17 broken spatulas and gave them to Ling Chen. Qian Gun Gun eyes gleamed as he looked more and more pleased.Transaction complete, “What else do you want, pay with gold and you’ll get it immediately.” he then said with a smile

Holding the last 7583 gold in his hands, Ling Chen took out 5000 gold and said “buy 1 black bean.”

A single strange smelling black bean was placed in his hands. Ling Chen only had 2583 gold left, having this amount was still considered wealthy among the players, but he is no longer able to buy anything from Qian Gun Gun. He could only helplessly say: “I will not making any more purchases.”

Then the items, each one stronger than the other, were all stored away by Qian Gun Gun. Using a map that can be reproduced infinitely, a stone that he picked up, and more than a dozen broken spatulas and a black bean that looked like sheep shit to make over

400,000 gold, he put his possessions away and said with a smile: “If there’s nothing else i’ll be heading off, see you next time. Oh right, for all our trade, i can tell you something for free. The reason you can be standing there and still be alive is because the bastard who lives in front of the Lonely Spirit Ridge just happened to not be here. Every year he leaves for 1-2 days, normally never leaving for too long. It’s like it seems to be guarding something, so it’s best you leave quickly, if he comes back you’re dead meat. I’ll be going now.”

After squeezing all the gold out of Ling chen, Qian Gun Gun seemed to no longer have an interest in Ling Chen. After finishing talking, he bent his back, twisting his body, and hobbled away. His running was like that of a monkey being chased by a wolf. That attitude made Ling Chen’s heart twitch. He stood there silently thinking about what Qian Gun Gun said, his eyes suddenly lit up... According to Qian Gun Gun, there’s an extremely powerful “bastard” living in Lonely Spirit Ridge and the people who have died here in the past were because of that ‘scary bastard’. Lucky he is still safe and still hasn’t even faced a great danger and it was all because that “scary bastard’ had conveniently left.

Which is to say, now is the golden opportunity!!

Could this also be the luck that Xiao Hui brings? Ling Chen no longer hesitated. He changing from his cautious movements to one that charged straight for the entrance of the lonely spirit ridge.

Chapter 102 - Xi Ling (2)

“Ding... You have entered ‘Lonely Spirit Ridge’.”

“Ding...”Lonely Spirit Ridge’ is an extremely dangerous area, proceed with caution.”

It was less than 100m away from the entrance to the underworld, when Ling Chen had stepped into the lonely spirit ridge. The ground underfoot was wet, the light and air is similar to the ghastly grounds but even more gloomy. The road became bumpy. Before him he could blurrily make out tall and short mountains one after another, the air was a terrible grey. The environment felt as if he just stepped into the underworld.

After going in, Ling Chen started to feel afraid. He took a moment to calm himself, stabilizing his emotions and calming down.

Folding open the map that he bought from Qian Gun Gun. He looked at it a few times, and felt more and more strongly that the 50,000 gold was worth it. On the forgotten continent were marked all the towns big and small, ruins, forests, mountains, plains, rivers, historic remains... etc. Even the main buildings in big cities were labelled. Many special locations also came with detailed comments. The colours of the regions were also significantly different. Where he is now was coloured black, meaning that it was forbidden. Next to the picture of the Lonely Spirit Ridge, was a paragraph of text.

Lonely Spirit Ridge: Ten thousand years ago it was called the Silent Ridge. But it was affected by the death's breath produced by the entrance to the underworld, few people would come by, but it wasn't officially forbidden at first. Often explorers would venture in. Ten thousand years ago, suddenly a black fog appeared on the silent ridge. Then from that point, everyone who stepped in died, and no one ever came out. Then the Silent Ridge was renamed a few hundred years later to Lonely Spirit Ridge, the power levels within are at least of Mysterious God, do not enter!

Ling Chen: "..."

Power levels of least mysterious god, do not enter... which is to say, those people who have come here were all killed by someone or some monster, who was at least of mysterious God strength! No wonder its been so many years, where countless masters of the forgotten continent have gone in without ever coming back. Mysterious God level... human beings simply could not compete. If he ran into it himself, it would certainly be the death of him. Moreover, Qian Gun Gun obviously knew what was around here, but it wasn't not marked, looks like even Qian Gun Gun was afraid of it.

Putting the map away, Ling Chen quickly went ahead. After putting the Emptying Rock into his bag, his storage space increased to 500.

After entering the Lonely Spirit Ridge, he realised that there wasn't any Death's Breath. Based on what Qian Gun Gun said, the biggest danger in Lonely Spirit Ridge had left, but he was unsure as to when it will return. Ling Chen quickly walked ahead, looking

around and observing his surroundings. He was trying to look for what he came here for — the flaming black grass! According to the master in Azure dragon city, the flaming black grass were in little clusters of black flame, they were very easy to identify.

After discovering the entrance to the underworld, he memorised it, but gave up on going in. Qian Gun Gun said the lowest level undead that were in there were at least level 50, it was a region that he couldn't touch at all.

Flaming black grace...flaming black grass...

Ling Chen' heart was pounding, but he continued look around with Xiao Hui, pushing ahead. Lonely Spirit Ridge was big and there was a weird distribution of big and small mountains, on which were countless rocks. Sometimes you could see some black weeds, which seemed like the only plant that could grow even in this deathly environment. But it wasn't the same shape as the flaming black grass. Ling Chen continued up the path, until he reached the top of the first hill... The top was covered in gravel. The cold wind caused his heart to shiver, and there wasn't the slightest hint of the flaming black grass.

Ling Chen stood on top of the mountain and looked into the distance. Under the black fog, he couldn't see how far the Lonely Spirit Ridge spread, and only could vaguely see the higher mountains ahead.

At this time, from when he entered the lonely spirit ridge, it had already been half an hour.

“Qi Yue, have you seen flaming black grass before? do you know where is it in the Lonely Spirit Ridge?” Ling Chen asked. Qi Yue who has existed for 10,000 years might know where the black flaming grass is.

“…’

“Qi yue?”

He called a few more times, but with no reply from Qi Yue. Just then she was telling him about Qian Gun Gun, but she hasn’t made a sound since. Obviously she has strained her spiritual energy, and is now resting in the Lunar Scourge.

It looked like, he could only rely on himself. Ling Chen did a quick look around, and continued to move ahead. Even though he didn’t find anything in the Lonely Spirit Ridge, but also he didn’t run into anyone living or dead. Besides the wind, the whole Lonely Spirit Ridge was silent. The silence was scary… and there seems to be a big mountain range before him, without a single living thing on it!

Going down the slope, Ling Chen made sure to check every single corner. But even after reaching the other side of the mountain, there were still no flaming black grass to be seen.

The master in Azure Dragon city that talked about the flaming black grass in the Lonely Spirit Ridge couldn’t have been a lie could it? Why couldn’t he find even 1?

Ling Chen suddenly thought of a possibility... it could be that the flaming black grass was a story that had been passed down for a very very long time. In that time the Lonely Spirit Ridge wasn't called the Lonely Spirit Ridge, not even the Silent Ridge. But today, many tens of thousands of years has passed... and the area now, can't flaming black grass can't grow like before right?

Then immediately, Ling Chen discarded the idea. This is mystic world's unique hidden task. Since the task exists, even though it is very difficult, there is definitely a chance to complete it. Which is also the say that the flaming black grass definitely exists. Ling Chen looked ahead... this should be a safe area of the Lonely Spirit Ridge, would the flaming black grass be in the middle area of the Lonely Spirit Ridge?

Upon thinking of this, Ling Chen increased his movements. He continued ahead, further increasing the speed he is moving ahead. But this didn't mean he was travelling leisurely. every time he headed to a new place, he will use his binoculars to closely observe it first.

After an hour, "Undead stone"'s effect was lost, and disappeared from the lunar scourge. But the atmosphere of the Lonely Spirit Ridge was different from the Ghastly Grounds. He didn't seem to lose any HP without the undead stone. But it's been an hour, and he has moved a few kms of distance, but still had not found any traces of the flaming black grass.

While looking around, the real world time just hit 12am. A new day had started. Two days ago azure dragon city was a desolate

place but now it was bustling with people coming and going. A large number of players were all trying to get transfers, or finding tasks to do, or finding upgrades for equips for the first time. Businesses owned by players have also started to plan... but no one would have thought that a single player had already travelled over 200km from that place, under horrific circumstances, taking a great risk doing a difficult task.

Qian Gun Gun mentioned the “scary bastard” could be back in any moment. Making the Lonely Spirit Ridge a taboo and killing any masters, one can only imagine how scary that guy is. If he couldn’t find any flaming black grass before he gets back, not only will he have to cut his work short, it will also mean certain death. He stil have to bear the cruel punishment for failing the task.

He needed to find it immediately!

And another 2 hours has passed...

Crossing over multiple hills, Ling Chen had already forgotten and didn’t bother remembering them. He focused all his attention looking for the flaming black grass. He obviously had entered the Lonely Spirit Ridge, and now it was the perfect time to avoid the danger. But now he had already been searching for 3 hours, but still couldnt even find the shadow of this flaming black grass. in these large gaps of time, even Ling Chen, has had huge mood swings. He even vaguely felt like his guess may have been right... after so many years had past, the Lonely Spirit Ridge no longer was the same as before, it may be true that there is no flaming black grass!

But he had already come so far, Ling Chen couldn't give up without feeling bad now. He grit his teeth, and continued ahead. If he reached the end of the Lonely Spirit Ridge without finding the flaming black grass. Then, this finding flaming black grass task, is a task that really can't be accomplished!

Under the cover of the black fog, he couldn't see too far away. It was also hard to know if the mountain he was on was at the centre of the Lonely Spirit Ridge, or if it was the highest one.

After 10 minutes, Ling Chen sat at the top of a mountain. The whole way here, the black weeds were everywhere, but the flaming back grass was nowhere to be found. Now, he was beginning to feel some numbness.

The mountains in the Lonely Spirit Ridge were generally not tall, the one Ling Chen was standing on was the tallest. But also the one that seemed to be the most centre of the Lonely Spirit Ridge. Ling Chen observed his surroundings, on right side in 50m there was a large rock, in the middle of a large empty area, there was not even the shadow of the flaming black grass.

Still nothing? Ling Chen let out a long sigh. But as he walked down the mountain, Xiao Hui behind him called out. it took off, running towards that round rock that was tall as a person and then standing behind the rock, using its paws to touch the rock.

Ling Chen's expression lit up, and quickly came over. Seeing Xiao Hui's actions, he asked: "Are you saying, there's something under the rock?"

Xiao Hui quickly scratched with his front paw in response....its movement, clearly told Ling Chen to move the stone away.

Ling Chen then took 2 steps back, and glanced at the rock. This rock was a similar height to him, and looked really heavy. But it was a long oval shape, so if he tried with all his strength, he should be able to take it down. Immediately, he put away his weapons, and stood before the rock. He put both hands on the rock, letting out a breath of air, and gave it a hard push.

Even though this rock was big, it wasn't as heavy as Ling Chen thought it would be. Coupled with it's unstable shape, Ling Chen used some strength, and the boulder suddenly tilted. Ling Chen frowned, bit down and tried harder. This time, this human sized rock suddenly was shifted by Ling Chen making a "poof" sound as it hit the ground.

Below the rock, was a dark cave opening. It appeared half a metre wide. Ling Chen was startled, and quickly came to see what was in the hole... the hole was deep, and pitch black, he couldn't see anything at all. But at the edge, a rope ladder was hanging off the side.

Rope ladder!?

The rope ladder was put up by a person! which is to say, people come out of this little hole!!

Could it be that the "scary bastard" that Qian Gun Gun talked

about? Is a person? A person with a minimum strength level of Mysterious God?

“Ding... you have discovered a hidden area, the region has no name.”

Chapter 103 - Xi Ling (3)

Another hidden region had been found by Xiao Hui. Whist looking at the rope ladder it became obviously that it was possible to descend into the cave, but Ling Chen hesitated... Did he want to go down? The reason he came here was to look for the Flaming Black Grass but he had been looking for 4 hours but his efforts had been in vain. The hole that stood before him clearly leads deep below, to a place where there clearly was no Flaming Black Grass. If he went down, not only would he possibly face unexpected danger, he might also lose a lot of time and then the “Scary Bastard” will return. Then he will have lost all hope of finding the Flaming Black Grass. Does he want to go down!?

Ling Chen looked back at the path that he took to get here. After searching for so long, with all his efforts in vain, he was becoming more and more convinced that the Lonely Spirit Ridge actually had no Flaming Black Grass.

“Fine, if the Lonely Spirit Ridge really had Flaming Black Grass, I would have found it ages ago.” Ling Chen thought aloud. Walking towards the hole, holding onto the rope ladder, he slowly descending down into the hole. He wanted to know where this hidden cave, hidden in the Lonely Spirit Ridge would lead to.

In reality, Ling chen had already subconsciously accepted it as fact... that the Flaming Black Grass did not exist in Lonely Spirit Ridge. Ever since a long long time ago, the Flaming Black Grass had already been extinct from the Lonely Spirit Ridge. In regards to the documents that talked about the Flaming Black Grass in Lonely Spirit Ridge, they must have been passed down for tens of thousands of years. Within these recent years, no one had survived

after entering the Lonely Spirit Ridge so there is no way anyone could have know this… even the Azure Dragon City Master.

So Ling Chen had received this task, but it was a task that couldn't even be completed. Not only that it was the father of all cruel and painful tasks.

The hole was very narrow. Whist descending, Ling Cheng's shoulders were scraping against the wall. Xiao Hui was also using its paws to climb down from the ladder, slowly following Ling Chen down. It had more dexterity than Ling Chen so climbing down the ladder proved a simple enough task.

No one is allowed to step into the Forbidden Lands, a hidden underground cave… This sense of adventure and mystery made Ling Chen's heart beat faster. So that this secret place remains secret, normal people can't enter, so it must be hiding some kind of precious item or some big secret or perhaps some kind of special people or beast… It's also possible, that a treasure of immeasurable scale is hidden here.

After traveling down about 10m, Ling Chen suddenly noticed that there was a faint light.

Light!?

Could it be that there are other people here?

Ling Chen stopped immediately stopped moving, only staring

downwards towards the source of the light. The faint red light appeared to the light from a fire. Judging from the position of the light, he was only about a dozen metres away from it. Ling Chen listened for a moment but didn't hear a single thing. There did not seem to be any traces of life. He assured himself of this but didn't let his guard down. Making as subtle movements as possible, slowly descended further down the hole.

After going for about a dozen metres, his feet finally touched the bottom of the hole. When he reached the bottom, it made a thump. Ling Chen kept both hands tightly holding onto the ladder so if there were dangerous creatures following he would be able to judge based on their strength whether he needed to quickly climb back up.

His landing was extremely loud compared to this quiet underground space, but after a long time the underground returned to pure silence. Ling Chen felt relieved of his great burden. Looks like there weren't any creatures down here after all.

Letting go of the ladder, Ling Chen turned around and started looking around this underground space. In front of him was a narrow underground tunnel. The faint red light he saw before was being emitted from this this exact tunnel.

What was emitting that strange red light? ... Could it be that it was the strange treasure that was hidden in this place?

There didn't seem to be any dangerous gas ahead, Xiao Hui was also comfortably following him, not giving any warnings of danger. Ling Chen took a step forward, moving towards the

tunnel, with his advance, the the red light grew stronger and stronger. The air in the Lonely Spirit Ridge was cold, this underground space should be even colder, but with every step he took, the coldness he felt seemed to dissipate bit by bit. After traveling through about half the tunnel, the icy cold has been replaced with a vague warmth, and Ling Chen's body felt relaxed. Ling Chen pushed forward, the warmth then started to grow into a intense heat, this was becoming clear... but it was not completely intolerable.

Could it be that this red light was a burning flame... or the light emitted by the flow of lava? How could it be so hot? Ling Chen thought to himself.

Continuing to walk for a few meters, the exit of the tunnel appeared ahead. The heat around him cause his forehead to be covered in sweat. He quickly walked up a few steps, walking out of this tunnel. Suddenly he saw the light before him, a full circle with an area of several hundred square metres was before him. At the same time he also felt a hot blast of air, making him feel suffocated.

This is...

Under the strong red light, Ling Chen could clearly see the space around him, the first half of the space was completely empty, not a single thing to be seen and the other half was a dark thread that was crisscrossed. Under the red light these black threads remained completely black, numerous threads overlapping in a crisscross pattern, creating fine black web. In the middle of the web, it was the source of the high temperature and red light. In the moment of

seeing it, Ling Chen was stunned in shock and awe...

What a beautiful bird!

In the middle of the black web, releasing searing temperatures and a red glow, turned out to be a large red bird. Its body was around 1 metre long, wings spread out, head held high, just like the phoenix, both beautiful and noble. Its feathers were all red, just like a cluster of burning flames, the abdomen were burning with a gold colour, the feathers at the tip of its wings were also golden with a mixture of red. It looked like two layered golden pattern. Its tail was long, and was a similar fiery red colour but it was the patternless areas that were truly beautiful, especially the central tail feathers, they were like noble flames flickering in the light, it was beautiful beyond description.

Ling chen took a moment to take it all in as because this was absolutely the most beautiful thing he had seen in his life, the most gorgeous creature. Beautiful to a point where it felt surreal. It had it's wings spread yet remained motionless, it seemed to be a gorgeous sculpture. Its surroundings, were numerous black threads, blocking a large proportion of the beautiful light that it was releasing.

Could it be that it was just a beautiful sculpture? Then what are the black threads around it? Why would it be hidden here in this dangerous and forbidden place. Ling Chen took a step forward whist thinking. He started to observe the web which holds the beautiful bird. As he approached, it grew even hotter, making it hard to breathe, but he endured and still could withstand it. Once he got close, Ling Chen found that even its eyes were red, shining a

bright red light. Even though it wasn't moving, the light released from its eye gave a sense of it overlooking all with it's elegant gaze. Then the eyes moved a little, it flashed gold for just a moment.

Ling Chen's body was stunned, he stood fixed in place, staring at it out of surprise.

The large bird's eyes... moved!

This wasn't a sculpture, it was a living creature!!

He was sure that he had not seen an illusion, but that the large bird's eyes actually moved. Ling Chen did not move any further forwards, instead he kept staring at its eyes... finally, after a minute had passed, he once again saw the faint quiver of its eyes.

It really was a living bird!!!

Ling Chen looked around in this space again, finally looking at the black threads, they didn't seem to be a single entity, because it was covered with a black light, it was unclear how many of these black threads there were.

Ling chen instantly understood... these threads, the big red bird was trapped within them! In other words, these black threads, are to restrict the large bird.

Then he realised the the space around him was also to contain the big bird.

This is actually a living creature, why would it be blocked in here?

Ling chen's mind flashed back to something Qian Gun Gun said... "That Scary Bastard normally doesn't ever leave, it seemed to be guarding something."

Could it be that the "Scary Bastard" has been guarding the bird, preventing it from escaping?

A being with at least mysterious god strength, living within Lonely Spirit Ridge for at least 10,000 years, not allowing any other creatures to enter. Could it be to guard this bird? If it was the case, what kind of creature is it, requiring someone so powerful to retrain and guard it. If the bird was one of the most dangerous creatures, why haven't they killed it, but sealing it off instead... Could it be that there's no way to kill it?

Or... everything that he thought of was completely wrong?

Ling Chen walked closer, wanting to see the large bird more clearly. Whilst raising his left hand, he used his communication watch's camera to take a picture of the large bird's appearance and the environment. As he came closer... about 10 meters away from the black threads, his right hand suddenly began to have a black glow. The Lunar Scourge had revealed its original state, in the form of a black glow.

What's this... Ling Chen stopped moving. While standing in a

state of shock, he watching the Lunar Scourge on his right hand. Without warning he felt something and urgently looked up.

Along with the Lunar Scourge's black glow, the black glow emitted from the threads directly next to Ling Chen grew weaker and fainter. After a few seconds, the black glow on all the treads had gone...

Chapter 104 - Xi Ling (4)

“…”

The disappearance of the black threads made Ling Chen stay. After staring at it for a while, he looked at his Lunar Scourge as the black glow disappeared. After a brief hesitation, he stepped forward with his right hand stretched out.

As he drew closer to other lines, his Lunar Scourge glowed black again, and the threads in front gradually dimmed and slowly dissipated.

These black threads were bodies of energy… which were afraid of the Lunar Scourge!?

Why this happened, Ling Chen didn’t know. The Lunar Scourge still had many secrets that he didn’t know of. But the reality is before his eyes… The black web that keeps the beautiful red bird in captivity is afraid of the Lunar Scourge’s light and under the glow of the Lunar Scourge, the threads silently dissipated.

If he approached step by step, then, these black threads will all have completely disappeared under the light of the Lunar Scourge. And that beautiful red bird… with the flutter of its eyes proving that it was alive, and with these black threads gone, it will no longer be captive, it will be set free.

Ling Chen put his foot down, no longer moving ahead. He was an idiot. He should have known that this captured bird was no normal

beast. It undoubtedly had powerful strength. The red light and hot breath coming from it even under captivity was proof of its extraordinary nature. If it was an evil beast, and he released it with his Lunar Scourge, then it will immediately kill him, and bring terror to the land around it after it escapes... then he will be the bad guy. Moreover, if this really was the thing that that “scary bastard” was keeping watch of, if he found out that Ling Chen let it go, then, without a doubt, there would be someone with Mysterious God level strength that would hate him, and would relentlessly try to find and kill him... Being hunted by someone with Mysterious God strength, no matter how powerful a player is, they would ultimately be destroyed, never advancing further in this game.

So, Ling Chen stopped walking, no longer pushing ahead.

The black threads disappearing under the influence of the Lunar Scourge could clearly be seen by the red bird. Its red eyes were flashing, the red feathers made little sparks of excitement. But then, seeing Ling Chen stopping, and retracting his arm, and the black glow fading from his bracelet... it became anxious. The red light in its eyes fluttered... it was crying with light.

Ling Chen could understand its pleading eyes, it was a psychic beast. It had a very strong sense of emotional perception. But, Ling Chen still didn’t know. He still didn’t know if it was good or evil. Even if it really was a good creature, saving it was a huge risk for Ling Chen.

But, he didn’t turn and leave. Because the bird was so beautiful and such a beautiful thing was completely captured in this web,

with all freedom taken away and perhaps no one could bear to see such a thing. Ling Chen subconsciously couldn't bear to see it. He even had the urge to save it after staring at the red bird that was anxious for some hope, even though it couldn't move or make a sound, and could only express itself through its eyes. It had no idea how many years it had been stuck there for... so, it would give anything for freedom.

"You must have been here for over 10,000 years, it's really sad indeed." Ling Chen looked at it, and suddenly said out loud. "I don't know why you're stuck here, or whether you're good or evil, I don't even know why this thing on my hand can save you... so, I have no idea whether I should save you."

"But..." Ling Chen laughed, stepping forwards, and raising his right arm at the same time, and as he moved ahead, Lunar Scourge's glow appeared again, making the threads disappear as he got close: "Me meeting you here, is a great opportunity. My ability to save you with this thing on my hand, makes it an even bigger opportunity. This event... I can't say for sure, but perhaps it is destiny that you are freed. But this isn't the main reason I decided to free you... I have a sister, and after a long period of time, she developed a terminal illness. That is a kind of despair where you can't see any hope, that it was inevitable that she would soon meet God, but my sister was saved. Because of this, it was the first time I sincerely thanked God. Here where I met you, if I dig deep into my heart, there's no way I can't save you... because if everyone was selfish and didn't help each other... I would have already lost someone really important to me. The consequences of me saving you, good or bad, will be my full responsibility, and no one else."

Ling Chen said this with a calm voice and continued to walk

forwards. As he moved ahead, the black threads, one at a time, quickly dissipated.

When Ling Chen reached the center of the space, the Lunar Scourge's light had enveloped all the lines. After some time, all the threads were illuminated by the Lunar Scourge's glow and were slowly breaking down... Then, after a while they completely disappeared, until all of them were gone without a trace.

Chirp~~~~

A bird sound rang out after for a long time in this quiet underground space. As the black web completely disappeared, the red bird made a sound of excitement as it was freed from captivity. It cheerfully beat its wings, flying up high, until it was above Ling Chen. It flew around his head, accompanied with bursts of flashes and sparks. Its chirps were filled with the excitement of being freed. It also seemed to express gratitude towards Ling Chen.

With the red bird freed, the hot air was gone, and so Ling Chen's discomfort completely disappeared. It must be that the free bird now has regained control to properly manipulate flame and it has withdrawn the fiery glow. Ling Chen looked at it. Its whole body was like a cluster of burning flame. The flames were a magnificent gold. They were stunning and pleasing to watch. Releasing the red bird didn't seem to pose a threat to him and based on its actions and sounds, he could sense a real gratitude.

At least, it isn't an evil beast, which means he did the right thing.

“Well then, you better leave quickly. The scary guy that blocked you in here is not around. But he’ll be back soon. If you don’t leave quickly and he catches you, I won’t be able to save you again... go” Ling Chen said looking at it.

Chirp~~~

The red bird understood Ling Chen’s words and it continued to fly around Ling Chen for a few more laps, before finally spreading its wings and flying away. It flew towards the tunnel before flying into the tunnel, then it went upwards and after that he couldn’t see where it went.

“I got to do something good. It feels pretty nice.” Ling Chen said to himself, looking at his right hand. The Lunar Scourge had changed back to its original form, but Ling Chen couldn’t not care about its performance before. The black threads should have contained a powerful force, but the light from the Lunar Scourge caused it to disappear so easily. Within the lunar scourge, how many secrets are there truly...

The black threads had disappeared. The freed red bird had already left so the whole space was empty. There was nothing else here. Ling Chen went back the original way. It hadn’t been long before he was back to the mountain top by the rope ladder. Next to him was the big rock on the ground. He could still hear the howling cold wind. The vast expanse was still filled with dust and he couldn’t see too far in front.

Since entering the Lonely Spirit Ridge, it’s been 4 hours. Looking at the thick fog, Ling Chen breathed lightly. The surrounding area

was deathly quiet. The red bird he rescued should be far away by now. It staying around was far too dangerous and staying here alone, it would face constant danger... Every second it stopped for, the danger would increase significantly and if that scary bastard comes back, it will become a dire situation.

After searching and finding nothing in 4 hours, did he really want to keep searching?

“Xiao Hui, do you think we should continue searching?” It was a hard decision and so Ling Chen asked his only partner. It tilted its head, shook its tail and thought about it for a while but didn’t come up with an answer. He rushed hundreds of miles from Azure Dragon City to get here and he also had to go through the Ghastly Grounds to get here. Then he took advantage of a golden opportunity, searching till now. It had already been more than 4 hours. If he left now, he wouldn’t have inner peace, because it could be that the Flaming Black Grass is just ahead

But if there really was no Flaming Black Grass in the Lonely Spirit Ridge, continuing the search would just make him more and more desperate... Once Ling Chen dies, his level will go to 0! But if he returns, he will have to bear the punishment task.

“I’ll search for another hour!” Looking ahead, Ling Chen let out a deep breath of air, speaking in a low voice before quickly walking ahead.

The Lonely Spirit Ridge already didn’t have any Flaming Black Grass left. This is a fact that not many people know. Ling Chen could continue searching for 100 years or 1000 years and he still

wouldn’t be able to find it.

Walking from the top of the mountain to the bottom of the other side, he still couldn’t find it. The desire for him to leave this place was growing increasingly strong. After a few minutes, he stood at the foot of the next mountain. Looking ahead, he was just about to take a step when behind him, a sound rang out.

“Big brother… big brother!!”

Ling Chen’s body was suddenly paralyzed and the Soaring Cloud and Zephyr Blade appeared in his hands.

This was the sound of a human… moreover it was a sweet sounding girl.

No one dared to step into this forbidden land. And in this land where anyone who steps in will die, there actually came a girl’s voice. Ling Chen walked towards the way where it came from and did not even see a girl’s shadow. But the sound sounded like it was right behind him. Although this was a girl’s voice, he was still too shocked.

The whole way here had been completely silent. With this fact alone, it is enough to prove that this person was terrible.

Could it be, that the “scary bastard” that Qian Gun Gun was talking about… was finally back!!

Chapter 105 - Xi Ling (5)

Hearing this sweet, almost ethereal shout, Ling Chen's body stiffened and he slowly turned around. His senses and alertness were heightened to the extreme. The moment he turned around, he saw the silhouette of a red shadow running towards him. The instant he was able to see her clearly, Ling Chen was momentarily stunned.

It really was a girl...The girl was even smaller than he had expected. At first glance, this young and tender girl only looked twelve or thirteen years old. The young girl's beautiful face was white as snow. Her large pupils were clear and transparent like glass. Her petite body and slim waist added to her extraordinary cuteness. She wore a princess-style dress and her lustrous, silky hair that cascaded over her shoulders naturally was mesmerisingly beautiful. The girl's appearance was simply too breathtaking. She looked as cute as a doll, yet looked as delicate and tender as a rose. She stood in sharp contrast to the shadowy forest around her; the contrast was like an anime bishoujo being placed in a deathly cemetery.

"Whew... Big brother, I finally caught up to you." The young girl ran in front of Ling Chen and gave a long sigh of relief. She lifted her extremely adorable face. Her eyes flashed over Ling Chen's face, examining him carefully. Wearing a flame-red coloured dress, this young girl gave off a bewitching and flirtatious air that did not match her age. She laughed sweetly, "Big brother, where do you want to go? Why did you come to this place?"

This ridiculously cute girl's appearance stunned Ling Chen to the point that he almost couldn't resist picking her up and hugging

her. Moreover, while moving closer to him, the girl did not give off even the slightest hint of danger; Xiao Hui did not react differently either. Despite this, Ling Chen's heart could not relax, so he asked with a frown, "Who are you?"

"Me?" The young girl pointed at herself, her thin eyebrows arching into a curve, "My name is Xi Ling. Big brother can call me Ling Ling!"

Xi Ling? Was that this girl's name? Ling Chen gazed at the girl. Her sudden appearance in this sort of setting made him unable to fully let down his guard around this girl. He looked into the girl's eyes, but only saw sincerity, clarity, eagerness... and a hint of happiness that he couldn't quite understand. Moreover, he wasn't sure if it was because of the reflection from her flame-red dress, but the girl's eyes seemed to radiate with a faint red glow. Furthermore, he couldn't see any hint of danger from this girl's eyes.

[TLN: Literally means Spirit of the Evening Tide]

This girl was...

"How did you come to this place?" Ling Chen continued to ask.

The young girl was shorter than Ling Chen by quite a bit, and so she needed to look up when talking to Ling Chen. Despite this, her smile was just as sweet and lovable. "This question I need to first ask big brother, because big brother should reply first."

Ling Chen: "... ..."

“Big brother doesn’t want to answer? Alright, alright, I’ll say it first. I got lost at this place, and couldn’t find the way home, then I found big brother! Big brother, it’s so scary here, could you please take me away from here?” After she finished speaking, the girl’s crystal clear eyes unblinkingly stared into his.

Ling Chen narrowed his eyes and slightly lowered his head, “Little kids shouldn’t tell lies.” Outside Lonely Spirit Ridge was a dark forest that swallowed all life, how could a little child safely pass through there? Moreover, he couldn’t forget that when he first heard the girl, he couldn’t even sense her presence draw near… She definitely wasn’t a normal girl.

However, no matter if it was the air she gave off, or the expression in her eyes, the girl simply didn’t give off an air of danger…..

The young girl immediately started to vigorously shake her head, “I didn’t lie! I really got lost… Big brother, please take me away from here. I’m really afraid of this place.”

“Then you tell me, where’s your home?” Ling Chen faintly smiled as he asked.

The girl blinked a few times, thought for a few moments, then laughed with a pure and innocent laughter, “Wherever big brother goes, that’s where my home is.”

“……” The girl’s words greatly amused Ling Chen. He laughed

and was just about to say something, when the girl suddenly spoke again, “Big brother, I’ve already answered, now it’s big brother’s turn to answer my question from before... Why is big brother in this place?”

Ling Chen thought for a moment, then replied, “I came here to find something called ‘Flaming Black Grass’. It’s a type of grass that looks like a black flame. Have you seen this type of grass around here?”

“Flaming Black Grass?” The young girl’s face revealed a shocked expression, “But, Flaming Black Grass has disappeared from this place for a long time, doesn’t big brother know?”

“There’s no more Flaming Black Grass? What do you mean?” Ling Chen’s heart shook... could it be that what he had suspected was true? The real question was, how could this girl know about this!?

“No more Flaming Black Grass means no more Flaming Black Grass. Flaming Black Grass became extinct a long time ago, and does not grow anymore...”

The young girl stopped speaking halfway through the sentence as she noticed the look of hopelessness and disappointment on Ling Chen’s face. She asked, “Is big brother looking for Flaming Black Grass for a very important reason? Did brother’s friend get poisoned heavily and needs Flaming Black Grass to get rid of the poison? Flaming Black Grass can be used to get rid of a lot of poison, you know.”

Ling Chen dumbly nodded his head... If what the girl said was true, then he had endured so many things to reach this place for nothing! Could it be that the Azure Dragon's Mayor's quest... was a troll quest that couldn't be completed?!

"Hehehe... Big brother, I tricked you!" Seeing Ling Chen blankly nodding his head, the young girl's lips curved upwards and smiled, "Flaming Black Grass hasn't become extinct; I saw some just then."

"Really?" Ling Chen hurriedly asked, "Where did you see it?"

"This... It's a secret for now. If big brother promises me something, I'll bring some Flaming Black Grass for big brother. If you don't promise me, big brother will never find the Flaming Black Grass." The girl's eyes sparkled as bright as stars. Her beautiful eyes glittered with eagerness and hope, something that Ling Chen was completely unable to understand.

"What promise is it?"

The girl immediately replied with a sincere tone, "I want to follow big brother. Wherever big brother goes, just take me as well! Ok?"

"Why....." Facing this mysterious girl's incredibly strange request, Ling Chen became utterly confused. In the terrifying environment of the Dark Forest, a beautiful girl had appeared, and had requested to follow him without any reason... These things combined together made him feel like he was in some sort of

dream.

"Because... Because..." The young girl tapped her lips with a thin, delicate finger. After thinking for a while, her eyes shone, and sweet smiled at Ling Chen, "Because I like big brother!"

Ling Chen: "....."

Ling Chen didn't think he was ugly, but... his looks shouldn't be able to mesmerise a girl so much that she would practically cling to him and beg him to let her follow him.

"Then it's settled! Big brother can't break his promise!" Without even giving Ling Chen a chance to reply, the young girl brilliantly smiled while making his promise for him. "In that case, I'm going to go find some Flaming Black Grass for big brother... eh?"

The young girl was just about to run off when she saw Xiao Hui standing next to Ling Chen's feet. This place was covered in a thick grey fog and because Xiao Hui was completely grey and so small, the girl almost didn't see him. She immediately ran to Xiao Hui, squatted down and reached out with her tender hands that were white as snow. She held Xiao Hui's head with her hands while happily exclaiming, "Wow! What a scary little doggy! Little doggy, what's your name?"

"He's called Xiao Hui." Ling Chen had to answer for Xiao Hui in his stead, then explained, "He's not a dog though."

“But he’s so cute like a little doggy…” The young girl gave a slight smile. She patted Xiao Hui’s head, “So you’re called Xiao Hui, your name is as cute as you are. Xiao Hui, let’s play again later. I’m going to get some Flaming Black Grass for big brother. I’ll be right back!”

“Big brother, you need to keep your promises! If I can bring back some Flaming Black Grass, you need to let me follow big brother. Wherever big brother goes, I’m going as well… No take backs!”

She stood up, lifting the hem of her dress and lightly ran off. A short while later, she had disappeared from Ling Chen’s line of vision and her footsteps gradually became fainter.

Ling Chen was speechless.

After being petted by the young girl, Xiao Hui revealed an expression of happiness and enjoyment. Ling Chen knew that Xiao Hui was very sensitive to dangerous situations and beings. The reaction he displayed to the girl proved that the girl truly didn’t have any ill intentions and would not bring to them any danger.

The “scary bastard” that had been guarding something at Lonely Spirit Ridge for 10,000 years had killed countless lives that had wandered close to Lonely Spirit Ridge. He was definitely not a kind person. This meant that the young girl probably wasn’t the “scary bastard” that Qian Gun Gun had mentioned. Moreover, the monster that had been guarding something in this Lonely Spirit Ridge for more than 10,000 years. It definitely wouldn’t be such a young and cute little girl.

However, the circumstances surrounding this girl's appearance was too strange. Her actions, as well as her determination to get Ling Chen to agree to her request were all things that he simply could not comprehend. What was going on with this girl, Xi Ling? And could she really find the Flaming Black Grass?

Ling Chen didn't leave, and waited with Xiao Hui for the girl to bring back the Flaming Black Grass. The whole time, he struggled to ponder the origin of this girl, searching for and guessing at various possibilities.

While he was still deep in thought, Ling Chen suddenly heard a howl that was close to becoming a roar... This some unbelievably came from Xiao Hui.

"Xiao Hui?"

"Awooooooo!!!"

The state Xiao Hui was in gave Ling Chen a fright.... His four legs were firmly planted on the ground, and his body was so tense that it began to distort. His grey fur stood on its ends, looking like strands of steel needles on his body. His opened mouth revealed rows of teeth that were savagely gnashed together. Xiao Hui's eyes released a boundless killing intent directed at the dusky sky.

At the same time, a wave of terrifying aura that felt bone-numbingly cold descended from the sky, making Ling Chen feel as if he had fallen into a bottomless abyss. Within a few seconds, cold

sweat had drenched his clothing.

The sky gradually darkened, the chilling wind stopped blowing. Everything had fallen into a deathly silence that was more terrifying that hell itself.

Chapter 106 - Xi Ling (6)

At another place.

A flame red silhouette flickered, Xi Ling had already reached the bottom of a mountain. In front of her were deathly grey darkness type plants.

“Found it!” Xi Ling joyfully exclaimed. She squatted down, and used her hands to carefully make upright the deathly black grass. She opened her hands, palms facing up...

Woosh.....

A mysterious breeze arose, and within the sound of the breeze, a small cluster of red flames flickered and danced above Xi Ling’s right hand. The flame was very small and was not very bright, but released an incredible amount of heat. The heat that radiated out from this small flame was strong enough to scatter the pebbles around Xi Ling. An absorbing force emanated out from her other hand, and absorbed the surrounding darkness energy. Soon, a ball of darkness gathered above her snow white palm.

“For big brother, I must succeed....” The young girl shouted. She gently pressed her palms containing the bright flame and the ball of darkness together, then separated them after a few moments. The result was a ball of fire and darkness mixed together. Slowly and carefully, Xi Ling moved the ball of fire and darkness closer to the darkness type plants, and placed it on the ground on which the plants were growing. Shortly after, the ball of fire and darkness

completely disappeared into the ground.

"Flaming Black Grass, quickly grow out!"

Xi Ling clenched her two little fists, her sparkling eyes eagerly looking at the darkness type plants. Under her gaze, the darkness type plants began to shudder, and began to chaotically turn and twist. They began to grow, becoming taller and wider...

When the plants had finally settled into their new form, what appeared were black flames. The plants that were originally ordinary darkness type plants had become Flaming Black Grass.

"Success!!" Xi Ling joyfully exclaimed. She reached out with her hands, and carefully put away all the Flaming Black Grass. One, two, three... Seven....

"Even though it's not that much, but it should be enough. I should quickly go back to give this to big brother!"

Clutching the seven Flaming Black Grass to her chest, Xi Ling quickly jogged towards where Ling Chen was.

Ling Chen's body rapidly became colder and colder, to the point that it became freezing. It was as if he had suddenly become an ice sculpture. His teeth chattered; his body was like a strand of weak grass being buffeted by a gale. Rows of cold sweat trickled down from every part of his body, from head to toe, and drenched his

clothing and equipment. This was not just some simple fear, but his body's natural reaction to an incomparably terrifying and overwhelming force bearing down on him.

As the sky became darker and darker, Ling Chen slightly lifted his head. His eyes darkly stared at the dark cloud slowly moving in the sky. Apart from his body naturally shuddering and shaking, he was unable to make any other movements. The oppressive dark force that covered the entire sky and land had completely locked his entire body. It was as if a mountain so high that its peak could not be seen had been heavily placed upon his body... Under this terrifyingly oppressive force, every part of Ling Chen's body lost its ability to move.

What... was this power!?

Could it be... this was... the "scary bastard" that Qian Gun Gun had mentioned?

After entering Mystic Moon, Ling Chen had fought against the insanely strong Celestial BOSS when he was only level 5. Till now, that had been his most difficult and life-threatening battle. There had been a massive disparity between the boss and Ling Chen's strength; the difference was like the difference between the heavens and the earth. At that time, he hadn't run away or given up, but had instead chosen to battle with it.... Because of his skill and spiritual force, he was able to endure that bitter battle for 9 hours, and finally achieved victory at the end.

However, this time, the aura that encompassed and oppressed his body gave him a taste of what total hopelessness felt like. This aura

surpassed anything that he had ever encountered or expected; it was so strong that he could not muster up even a bit of resistance. This aura was dark and evil; Ling Chen did not doubt that the one who was emitting this oppressive aura could wipe out Ling Chen's existence with just a flick from his finger. Throughout his life, Ling Chen had faced countless strong opponents and enemies, and had gone through many sufferings that normal people could not even imagine. However... he had never felt such a terrifyingly oppressive force before.

This... was this the power of the Mysterious God level!?

The owner of the oppressive aura had yet to appear, but just based on the strength of the aura, Ling Chen already had a feeling of total helplessness, making it impossible for him to give even a bit of resistance. Even moving his body was completely impossible. His spiritual force was incredibly powerful, but his power right now was still far too weak. In the face of this type of domineering power, he felt that he was like a grain of sand; it could destroy him with the flick of a finger. Moreover, he didn't even have the strength to put up any struggle at all.

"Who... are... you?!!" Ling Chen gritted his teeth, and managed to choke out three words. He knew that the scary person who had been guarding at Lonely Spirit Ridge had left for a while, was back. Its existence had resulted in the deaths of countless experts from the Forgotten Continent at Lonely Spirit Ridge; not a single person was able to safely escape. Among these experts, there were many super experts whose names resounded across all of the Forgotten Continent. The current Ling Chen's overall strength was only at the Forgotten Continent's lowest power level. In front of this level of power, he didn't have even a sliver of hope. He knew that he

was definitely going to die today, but at least he was luckier than those who had died here before him-he would be revived after he died. Although he would be demoted back to level 0, he was only level 13 at the moment, which wasn't too high, so he was still able to accept it. However, he at least wanted to know who this scary person was before he died.

"Awooo~~" Xiao Hui stood in front of Ling Chen; the normally gentle and happy Xiao Hui was now emanating a ferocious aura. It was evident that Xiao Hui could more sensitively detect how terrifying this aura of danger truly was, as well as how evil and sinful it was.

"Heeeheehehehe....."

An ear-splitting laugh rang out. It seemed to come from the sky above, yet also seemed to come from every direction around Ling Chen. In this deathly silent Lonely Spirit Ridge, the laugh seemed infinitely more horrifying. Hearing this creepy laugh, Ling Chen's heart began to intensely beat, his face became paler and paler until it was almost completely white... He never knew that laughter could be so terrifying... so terrifying to the point that it threatened to split his entire body apart.

Ling Chen, who had wandered the boundaries between life and death many times before, was not afraid of death in the slightest. The fear and terror he felt came from facing an opponent who was immeasurably stronger than him, caused an unconscious trembling in his soul. The current Ling Chen could easily beat Celestial bosses of the same level, but he definitely could not win against a Heaven's End boss of the same level... the owner of this

aura, he was at least Mysterious God level, and was very high level, if not max level!

"Never thought that in the short time that I left, there actually would be a reckless little lamb who would be audacious enough to come here... Heeehehehehe, you humankind are such interesting little animals. In the past 10,000 years I can't even remember how many overconfident little human trash I've killed. I never expected a human to come in here seeking death, and this time it's such a little ant. This is way too funny.... Heeeehehehe, hahahaha...."

Every wave of laughter and eerie speech brutally attacked Ling Chen's body and spirit. The pressure that was currently encompassing him was, without a doubt, the strongest and scariest he had ever felt in his entire life. In the worlds of the games he had played in the past, he had never met such an overwhelmingly powerful enemy, much less so in the real world. The Ling Chen who could normally remain calm in any situation found that his heart could not stop thumping, and the icy terror pierced his body like blades of swords.

He knew that it was impossible for him to make it out of this hopeless situation, but he wished that he could get it over with as quickly as possible. He simply didn't want to continue to endure this mind-crushingly strong pressure.

As the arrogant laughter rang out, a bolt of darkness suddenly shot down from the black cloud in the sky and landed roughly 10m in front of Ling Chen... The bolt was one made of pure darkness, without any impurities at all. It was hard to imagine that such a pure and profound darkness existed in the world. The bolt of

darkness twisted and turned in front of Ling Chen, gradually solidifying and taking shape.... A gigantic 4 or 5 metre shadow suddenly rose up in front of Ling Chen.

Ling Chen: “!!!!”

It had a gigantic body, a body shape and four limbs similar to that of a human’s, but its skin was completely different to that of a human’s. Its body appeared to be covered with a layer of pure black armour; even its face was completely covered by the armour. The only parts that were not covered were two eyes that shone with a red and black glow... The monstrous eyes held a dark gaze that could freeze one’s soul.

What sort of monster was this?? It looked like a human wearing black armour, yet definitely was not a human. A normal human could not possibly have such a huge body, and most certainly could not release such a dark and evil aura. Moreover, he addressed himself as “my royal demonic self”... could it be... this was an ancient demon beast!?

The monstrous gaze disdainfully swept over Ling Chen’s body, as if it had seen an incredibly weak ant. It darkly laughed, the terrifying pressure it released seemed to stop even the movement of air particles out of fear, “This is also nice though. At least I can have some fun now and then. Now, how do you want to die? Should I directly crush you into nothing, or should I cut you up into little bits then throw you back to the Forgotten Continent? Or should I wear down your spirit so that I can enjoy some delightful screams from you? Heeehehehehe... hahahaha.....”

“War… Demon… Beast!!!”

Amidst that ear-splitting laughter that rang out in Ling Chen’s head, Qi Yue’s voice suddenly called out. Qi Yue who had been sleeping the whole time, could not help but be shocked awake under the horrific pressure from the War Demon Beast. The instant she awoke, while in shock, directly yelled out this terrifying creature’s name.

“War… Demon… Beast?” Ling Chen gritted his teeth. He repeated this name in his head, and committed it to memory. He suddenly felt that this was not the first time that he had heard this name. It felt as if he had heard this name not too long ago.

Where did he hear this name from…

Mystic Moon… Azure Dragon City… Novice Village… Novice Village…

Ling Chen suddenly realised, after leaving Novice Village, he had asked the Village Chief about the most powerful beings on Forgotten Continent. In the Village Chief’s explanation, he had mentioned the ten ancient demon beasts… ten terrifying beasts that should never be angered or provoked…

One of them was the War Demon Beast!!

This scary creature had just addressed itself as “my royal demonic self”.

Could it be that this was one of the ten ancient beasts on the Mysterious God level, the War Demon Beast?

Chapter 107 - Xi Ling (7)

“In the ancient times, an incredibly horrifying clan appeared in the Forgotten Continent: the Demon Beast Clan. The demon beasts from the Demon Beast Clan all cultivated darkness energy and had peerless strength. Apart from the Moon God Clan, there were no clans that could put up a fight against the Demon Beast Clan. The Demon King of the Demon Beast Clan’s power even exceeded the power of the Highest Moon God of the time. Due to the demon beasts of the Demon Beast Clan cultivating darkness energy, their personalities were extremely cruel and vicious and they unceasingly committed all kinds of evil. They even began to consume human bodies on a large scale, using human blood to greatly increase their own demonic power, resulting in humans viewing them with fear and hatred. In the end, the Moon God Clan was unable to continue watching the Demon Beast Clan continue do evil and so they decided to ally with the peaceful Faerie Clan against them, along with the Saint Destroyer level Golden Crow that the Demon Beast Clan feared the most. After a long and bloody battle, the Demon Beast Clan was finally destroyed. After a ferocious battle with the Golden Crow, the Demon King’s body and spirit all sustained heavy injuries, and was slain by the Moon Gods.

In the end, the only surviving members of the Demon Beast Clan were the ten ancient beasts that the Demon King used its own blood to raise – Sky Demon Beast, Earth Demon Beast, Tyrant Demon Beast, Shadow Demon Beast, Flame Demon Beast, Rage Demon Beast, Wind Demon Beast, Ice Demon Beast, War Demon Beast and Light Demon Beast. Although the Demon Beast Clan had been exterminated, they had been extremely powerful and even the holy beast Golden Crow had disappeared after that battle and had never reappeared. After sustaining heavy injuries from the Demon King, it probably had died. Even if it hadn’t, despite the

fact that 10,000 years had passed, it still would not have made a full recovery. The Moon God Clan also suffered heavy casualties, as they had to simultaneously defend against the Night Demon Clan. The ten ancient demon beasts were incredibly powerful. If the Moon God Clan wanted to exterminate them as well, they would need to pay a heavy price. After promising to never step into human territory to do evil again, the Moon God Clan spared the ten ancient beasts, who had since gone into hiding."

"From then onwards, the ten ancient demon beasts went into hiding in the Forgotten Continent's unknown regions, and it has since been 10,000 years. In these 10,000 years they have kept their promise, not entering human territory and doing evil, or else the Moon God Clan would not have forgiven them. The demon beast in front of little master should be the War Demon Beast. It exterior appearance looks similar to that of a human's, and is the most bloodthirsty and vicious demon beast of the ten ancient demon beasts. Not only does it have powerful darkness energy, but it can also use lightning energy. The ten ancient demon beasts... or rather, all demon beasts fear the divine beast Golden Crow, because the Golden Crow's fire is a sourceless fire. It can burn and cleanse all evil and impurities; demons with an evil nature being burned by the Golden Crow's flames will suffer from immense pain and suffering. Moreover, one of the War Demon Beast's elemental attributes is lightning, which is weak against fire. Out of the ten ancient demon beasts, the War Demon Beast fears the Golden Crow the most. Its overall strength is within the top 5 of the ten ancient beasts."

Inside Ling Chen's head, Qi Yue rapidly transmitted information to him. His suspicions had been confirmed... The demon beast in front was him truly was one of the ten ancient demon beasts the 49554 Village Chief had told him about, the War Demon Beast!!

“What should I do?” Ling Chen shouted in his mind as his face twisted.

Qi Yue thought for a moment, then released a faint sigh, “I never imagined that this dark and ghastly place would become the place of the War Demon Beast’s residence. 10,000 years ago, the war Demon Beast was already at the Mysterious God level. You definitely won’t be able to escape from it. Little master, you really shouldn’t have come here.”

Qi Yue’s answer was very clear… accept your fate. Apart from that, Ling Chen had no other options. He was only a level 13 player. Facing a max level Mysterious God demon beast, apart from accepting his death, what else could he do?

“No, forget about it. Little human, you’re so weak and so pitiable. You’re so pitiable to the extent that I don’t even want to hear your screams. Wasting time on you would be an embarrassment to myself. I’ll just give you an immediate death by crushing you into nothing.”

While grinning and laughing, the War Demon Beast reached out with its right paw. The five ‘fingers’ were even sharper than a wolf’s claws and teeth. In the centre of its palm, a dark energy ball appeared. As it spun, it slowly became larger, until it reached the size of a ping pong ball. Although it was only a very small ball of energy, all of the surrounding energy seemed to be attracted to and absorbed by it. Even the originally still air began to make whooshing sounds as it was sucked towards the dark energy ball. Ling Chen stared at the energy ball with wide eyes. A heavy scent

of death began to emanate from the energy ball.

The moment this dark energy ball was released, Ling Chen's life would be over.

But how could he just die without putting up any resistance? Ling Chen gritted his teeth, and slowly raised his numb and stiff right hand.

"Don't use Moon Shadow!" Qi Yue realised what Ling Chen was about to do, and immediately shouted to stop him, "the War Demon Beast has seen the Lunar Scourge in the past. If you use Moon Shadow, it'll immediately recognise the Lunar Scourge and will do anything to take it away from you. Even if you die, it'll keep looking for you after you revive, over and over again! You'll never be able to experience peace again. Furthermore, if the Moon God Clan finds out that the Lunar Scourge still exists, the situation will become even worse."

Ling Chen: "……"

Ling Chen's right hand froze in place. His last glimmer of hope, Lunar Scourge, was unusable. It looked like all he could do was wait to die. Ling Chen gave a silent sigh, and helplessly dropped his fists.

"Well then, little human, time to vanish from my sight. Coming here was the most stupid thing you've done in your whole life, but dying under my hands is an honour for you… Die!"

Whoosh.....

In a wave of darkness, the dark energy ball in the War Demon Beast's slowly flew towards Ling Chen... This energy ball flew very slowly, but the energy it contained was incredibly monstrous. As the target of this dark energy ball, Ling Chen found that he could not even move a finger, let alone move his body to dodge. He tried... but could not resist at all. His pupils dilated as the pitch-black energy ball slowly drew nearer, metre by metre.

"Ahhhh!! Big brother!!"

Just as the dark energy ball was a few metres away, the sharp cry of a young girl rang out from the distance. Ling Chen immediately recognised the voice to be from the girl called Xi Ling. At the same time, a streak of red flame suddenly burst out in this dark, shadowy mountain ridge. Simultaneously, amidst waves of heat, a fist-sized fireball flew out from behind Ling Chen, and collided with the dark energy ball released by the War Demon Beast. Immediately, a hissing sound was released, and the dark energy ball was engulfed by the blazing fireball. The dark energy ball became smaller and smaller, until it had completely disappeared.

Ling Chen: "!!!!"

"Wh... What!?" The War Demon Beast stopped laughing. Its eyes suddenly shone with a frightening red glow. Its voice revealed its dismay, "Who... Who is it!?"

When two incredibly strong powers collide, the result should be

an explosion of energy. Though the War Demon Beast's darkness energy was incredibly powerful, when it collided with the fireball, it had been completely devoured. This scene caused the War Demon Beast to stare in shock. According to his knowledge, there was only one type of power that could easily devour darkness energy. However, the owner of that power could not possibly be here...

A small ray of red light appeared in front of Ling Chen. The one who appeared was Xi Ling, who spread her arms out in front of Chen Ling. A pair of glowing red eyes coldly glared at the War Demon Beast.

"Xi Ling....." Seeing the little girl who appeared in front of him, Ling Chen called out in surprise. That fireball just then... was it released by this girl!? The War Demon Beast was at the Mysterious God level, but its attack had been completely nullified by this girl's power...

This was an eleven or twelve year old looking girl!! Yet she had fully defended against the War Demon Beast's power!!!

When they had first met, Ling Chen had already suspected that there was something special about this girl. However, he completely had not expected that she would be special to this degree.

What... What sort of deity was she!!

"This girl..." Qi Yue's voice sounded out his Ling Chen's head.

Evidently, she was also in shock from this girl nullifying the War Demon Beast's attack.

What made Ling Chen even more surprised was that when Xi Ling had appeared, the War Demon Beast's red eyes had almost doubled in size out of shock, to the point that it looked quite ridiculous. It was as if it had seen something that was totally incomprehensible, completely unbelievable. It was almost as if... there was a look of fear in the War Demon Beast's eyes. That's right, Ling Chen could see fear in the War Demon Beast's eyes, and it even began to slightly tremble.

"You.....You..... You..... Impossible....."

Facing Xi Ling, this War Demon Beast, one of the ten ancient beasts at the Mysterious God level began to shake... even its voice began to tremble!! He was actually afraid! The sudden widening and contracting of his pupils showed that the fear was real. This sort of fear came from its heart and its soul... It was almost as if every cell of the War Demon Beast's body was afraid... of this little girl called Xi Ling.

Tap...

While trembling, the War Demon Beast actually took a step back. This overwhelming demon beast that had been so arrogant and condescending was shockingly retreating, as if it had seen some sort of terrifying creature. Its breathing became shallow and ragged.

Ling Chen was completely and utterly dumbfounded. The appearance of this girl had caused the War Demon Beast to act like it was a rat that had suddenly run into a ferocious tiger. This girl... what was she...

The young girl slowly looked up, then coldly said in a low voice, “You imprisoned me for so many years, now you want to hurt him... I... definitely won’t forgive you guys!!”
Crackle....

A bright red flame suddenly ignited, covering the young girl’s entire body. Bathed in fire, the girl’s hair and body began to flutter, yet were not burnt at all. The aura released from the bright red flames elicited a pitiful cry of fear from the War Demon Beast. It was like a frightened dog that was so terrified that it did not even have the ability to flee. The immense fear that it felt rendered it unable to even keep its balance. After fleeing for a few steps, it crashed to the ground.

Chapter 108 - Wrath Of The 9 Suns (1)

“No...No way!! This cant be!! I must be dreaming... How did you escape the Lord Demon King’s suppression magic...? No way!!”

The red flames caused the War Demon Beast to remember something from the depths of his soul, something that could never be forgotten...It was the memory he was the most afraid of in his life. Even after 10,000 years, once he thought of it he would tremble, and have nightmares again and again. His mouth roared, “No way”, but at the sight of the flames, it was clearly the flame that he was afraid of...it was unmistakable and he could never forget it!

Such a flame was something that would make the War Demon Beast so afraid it trembled. It looked so miserable that it even covered its face and cowered away in an undignified manner... It would rather prefer death, than suffer the burning of the flame.

Xi Ling silently stared at the War Demon Beast, but she didn’t advance. She leaned slightly towards Ling Chen, and in the fastest movement, she put 7 strands of Flaming Black Grass in Ling Chen’s hands: “Big brother, this is the Flaming Black Grass that you wanted. I only found 7 strands, take them and leave this place... the further the better... quickly go!”

The girl’s voice was rapid. Her beautiful eyes were anxious and full of worry. Ling Chen held the 7 strands of Flaming Black Grass in his hands. When Xi Ling gave him the Flaming Black Grass, he didn’t feel a burning sensation. It wasn’t a real fire, it was just giving off red light.

After such a big shock, finally getting the Flaming Black Grass and completing the task that Ling Chen came here to complete didn't even faze him. He didn't even bother to check if the Flaming Black Grass was real, he just looked at Xi Ling: "Xi Ling, you..."

"Big brother, don't worry about it. Quickly get out of here. Quick!!" Xi Ling said urgently with pleading eyes.

As she was talking to Ling Chen, Xi Ling had her back turned to the War Demon Beast. When faced with something that a creature feared so much, it was possible to make the creature crazily desperate. A ferocious look flashed in the War Demon Beast's eyes. It got up and suddenly a cloud of black lightning appeared. It then unrelentingly released it towards Xi Ling.

"Go and die!!!!"

"Careful!!!"

Ling Chen had just loudly called out, and his body was pushed aside with both of Xi Ling's hands. With the push from Xi Ling, Ling Chen's body flew really far away. He kept flying for several hundred metres, before hitting the ground hard. However, while Xi Ling was pushing him, she didn't have time to dodge and so was directly hit on the back by the lightning.

Bang!!!

A horrible earth shattering sound rang out across the Lonely Spirit Ridge. The whole of the Lonely Spirit Ridge continuously trembled and a large cloud of dust was raised due to the force, making the already foggy Lonely Spirit Ridge have even lower visibility. Ling Chen sprawled on the ground. He had to hold his breath and close his eyes, using his hand to push the surrounding dust away... After quite some time, the dust began to settle. Ling Chen slowly opened his eyes. The battlefield that he saw made his heart flutter.

Where Xi Ling was standing before was a dozen metre wide valley. The bottom of the valley couldn't be seen, and its spread was so far away, that the ends couldn't be seen. Nearby the valley had passed through a mountain...100 metre tall mountain. It was directly cut in half.

This is... Mysterious God level strength!?

Wait, where's Xi Ling?

Ling Chen quickly looked around, but he couldn't find Xi Ling's figure. His heart sank when a red light appeared before him. The red light moved past him, and Xi Ling appeared once again before him. But at this point, the flame's on Xi Ling were completely extinguished, her hair and dress was messy, and when she appeared, her body was slightly wobbly. She turned around, looking at Ling Chen, flustered: "Big brother, did anything happen to you?"

"Xi Ling, you..."

“Hahahahaha…hahahahah!!!”

Seeing the newly appeared Xi Ling, the War Demon Beast was shocked at first, because even he didn’t think that his attack would yield this result, and he had a sudden realisation. He sprung out from the ground and started to laugh loudly. In his wild laughter, the fear from before completely disappeared from his eyes, just as if he previously saw a tiger, but it turned out to be a sick cat…

“I… I almost forgot about it! You’ve been suppressed by the Lord Demon King and us 10 Ancient Demon Beasts for over 10,000 years!! The Lord Demon King’s strength not only suppresses your body, but also slowly saps your strength! At the time the Lord Demon King said, it only needed 20,000 years, then all your powers would be sapped away. At that time you would have been released, then casually killed…Now, although it’s only been over 10,000 years, it’s still more than enough!! After taking the hit from my previous attack, you’re completely exposed. In your current state, your strength has been used up to the point where its only Heaven End level!! If you used your strength to restrain me, you still wouldn’t have the power to defeat me! In fact… I don’t even need to use more than half my strength, to completely destroy you… hahahahaha…hahahahaha!!”

Without any fear in his soul, the War Demon Beast’s laugh was extremely ferocious. Stretching out his right hand, and pointing at the sky, a large bolt of black lightning came down, making a black and red giant 5-6m spear in its hands. At the same time, there was static gathering in the air. A thin incomparably dark glow appeared on the War Demon Beast’s body, crazily mixing with his dark energy.

“Even though I don’t know how you managed to escape the Lord Demon King’s seal…If you had run away before, I wouldn’t have known that you had fled. But you sent yourself right to my feet… In your current physical condition and strength, your flame can cause me pain, but it won’t hurt my body. But this magic spear in my hands, it can easily cut your body to pieces…hehehehe, hahahaha… Come! Release your flame and burn me!! The moment you do… that will be, the day you disappear from this world!! Hahahaha…”

The dark energy gathered quickly, and there was a glowing dark halo growing bigger on the War Demon Beast’s body. Before, a flick of his wrist cut mountains in half and did severe damaged to Xi Ling. If this power accumulates for such a long time, and it is released, I don’t know how terrible this power will be.

In the face of the War Demon Beast’s laughter, Xi Ling bit her whitening lips and held her 2 pale hands tightly together. The desperation Ling Chen could feel because of the War Demon Beast, she could feel also.

“Xi Ling, what is happening… who exactly are you? What you said before, what did it mean?” Ling Chen shook his head, asking Xi Ling with his brow raised. He could vaguely guess, but he didn’t want to believe his own guess.

“This girl, her body is weak…” A voice rang out in Ling Chen’s head, with a tone that sounded somewhat surprised: “Her weakness seems like an illness. Her strength… like what the War Demon Beast said, is about Heaven End level. A little girl having

this kind of terrifying strength, is hard to believe. But this strength in the face of the War Demon Beast, is no match. Young master, how did you meet this girl?”

Ling Chen: “……”

“Big brother.” The clear voice called Ling Chen back to reality. He saw Xi Ling starting to laugh, her laugh was uniquely beautiful: “Even though, I’ve only known you for a while, but you are a very very good person. You saved me, finally giving me freedom. Even though… it was only a very very small amount of freedom, but I really am happy, and for this short period of freedom, I want to use it all to repay you… so, I’ll protect you big brother. I won’t let anything happen to big brother.”

Her smile was so beautiful that Ling Chen was almost obsessed. In his gaze, Xi Ling slowly turned, facing the War Demon Beast. The beautiful smile suddenly turned into cold indifference. Slowly, she raised her two hands to her chest.

“War Demon Beast… in my current state… I cannot defeat you… but, that doesn’t mean I can’t destroy you!”

“Destroy me? Hahahahaha…” the War Demon Beast sounded like he had heard the funniest joke on earth, and started laughing even more ferociously: “Your flames are indeed strong, stronger than anything on earth. But with your currently Heaven End level strength, you aren’t even the slightest threat to me, hahahaha!”

“Really…?” Xi Ling smiled. It was a cold and mocking smile. In

the depths of her eyes, there was a trace of sorrow. If she was at her peak, it would have been easy to destroy the War Demon Beast. But now, it has to be at the cost of her life... after 10,000 years of suppression, she had finally attained freedom, and after a short period of freedom, she is willing to throw herself into the abyss of death. To save the person that she met by chance and saved her, after being suppressed for 10,000 years, she was willing and would not regret it, because this was the only way to save him.

Red plumes of flame rose from her body. It was hotter and more intense than before. Slowly, she raised her hands and her whole body was engulfed in flames. On different parts of her body, suddenly one after another gold light rings appeared. There were 9 altogether. Then, these light rings were brought into the air and while floating, they gradually grew larger. They grew larger and larger until gradually the grey ground had become more and more concentrated with gold.

When the first golden rays shone down, the War Demon Beast's face changed. The dark glow on his body that was gathering was tossed into chaos by the wind of the circles... or rather, it was struggling, with the kind of struggle when something was facing death.

"Nine... Nine... Nine suns... No... No way!!!"

Chapter 109 - Wrath Of The 9 Suns (2)

The nine rising rings of golden light were like golden knives that pierced through the War Demon Beast's soul. In that instant, his soul began to tremble and an immense feeling of dread encompassed him. The darkness energy that he had been cultivating began to quickly leak out of him. As the golden light and terrifying energy enveloped the surrounding area, the War Demon Beast's body began to shake and became limp. This golden light had caused him to have many nightmares over the years. It was so frightening that even the Demon King was afraid of it.

The nine rings of light hovered in the air. They were so bright that they looked like 9 golden suns in the sky. The golden light that shone from these 9 'suns' illuminated every inch and corner of Lonely Spirit Ridge, and dispelled every bit of darkness. Even the heavy fog had been swallowed by the golden light, reducing it to nothing.

Ling Chen raised his dead, looking at the 9 'suns' in the sky while in a daze. He could feel that each one of them contained a terrifying amount of power-this sort of power surpassed anything that he knew, surpassed anything that he could even imagine. However, the aura from these 9 'suns' was warm and beautiful. All of them came from the heavenly beauty who stood in front of him.

Nine suns... this girl... she... she is..." Looking at the nine 'suns' in the sky, Qi Yue's voice trembled as she spoke. This was the first time Ling Chen had heard so much emotion in Qi Yue's voice – to the point that it would shake and tremble. This mysterious witch who had existed for over 10,000 years was remarkably in awe of this little girl's power.

“Im...Impossible!! Right now you only have Heaven’s End power... How is it possible that you could use those 9 suns... Impossible!! Fake... they must be fake!!”

The dark power had completely vanished from the War Demon Beast’s body. It wasn’t that the War Demon Beast had dispelled the power, but rather that it had been completely devoured by the golden light. However, the War Demon Beast didn’t even notice this, as its heart had been completely drowned in hopelessness and fear. Its vision was filled with rays of golden light-the scariest type of light in the entire world. It desperately tried to escape, but it found that no matter how hard it tried, it was unable to escape the golden light locking it down.

The flames surrounding Xi Ling’s body had become a beautiful and pure golden colour. Enveloped in the golden light, Xi Ling’s eyes were closed. Her cold voice slowly rang out, “Even though my power is only at Heaven’s End right now, if I use my life energy, I can use these 9 suns once... This is my only way to destroy you... Now, under the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, become dust!”

Xi Ling’s delightfully sweet voice sounded like the growling of a devil in the War Demon Beast’s ears. Its face became white as a sheet of paper, and it let out a pitiful cry, “If you do this, you’ll die too... Are you crazy!? Stop!! STOP!!!”

“It’s... too late.” Xi Ling’s lips curved upwards, revealing a gentle smile of release.

The despairing War Demon Beast gave a shout that shook the heavens and the earth. This shout allowed it to momentarily shake off the bindings of light from the 9 suns, and it gasped and howled as it desperately tried to flee. However, after running for about 10 metres, its entire body stiffened, and collapsed on the ground. An overwhelmingly powerful pressure crushed it powerlessly into the ground, once again binding it. The Mysterious God level War Demon Beast was unable to move, as if thousands of heavy mountains had been placed on it. In the face of death, its eyes widened… it was the power-seeking and bloodthirsty War Demon Beast – it didn't fear death at all.

However… even if it died a thousand times, or even ten thousand times, it was scared out of its wits by the Flames of the Nine Suns. The Flames of the Nine Suns could incinerate his body, power and soul… The suffering that it would experience could not even be expressed with words… It was worse than hell itself by many times.

The 9 'suns' in the sky were fully formed, and the entire Lonely Spirit Ridge had been enveloped in a crimson-golden radiance. As the shadow of death drew nearer and nearer to the War Demon Beast, it lay paralysed on the ground in fear. It scrambled to crawl away, its eyes widened to the point they were about to burst out of their sockets, as it started to wildly scream, "No! Stop… Please stop!! Spare me… I genuinely regret my actions… I'll send you… and that human out of here… I'll never kill another human… I'll be your slave for eternity… I am the War Demon Beast… My power can be very useful to you… Let me go… Please stop…. Please…. Let me go…"

Under the enormous pressure, the air stopped moving and it

became almost impossible for Ling Chen to breathe. The situation was so unrealistic that it was like a dream. This incomparably powerful War Demon Beast was surprisingly showing such a humiliating side of itself. Maybe if such a mighty demon beast feared death, that wouldn't be very surprising – but it definitely shouldn't be so cowardly, to the point that it would throw away its pride and beg to preserve its own life. The golden energy from this little girl had actually reduced the mighty War Demon Beast to such a state...

"Go repent in hell!!"

Xi Ling's eyes suddenly flew open and she glared at the War Demon Beast huddled on the ground. She slightly lifted her head, and her body gently floated up into the sky. As she rose, a transformation occurred throughout her body... a pair of flame red wings sprouted out from her back...

Caw~~~~

A majestic and piercing cry rang out across Lonely Spirit Ridge. The figure in front of Ling Chen was no longer Xi Ling, but rather a gigantic golden bird. It was ten metres in length with a phoenix-like head. Instead of feathers, small clusters of red flame covered its wings, which flashed with a golden light.

It looked exactly like the red fire bird that Ling Chen released before, except it was much larger....

This girl called Xi Ling, could she be... the red fire bird that he

had released?

The gigantic fire bird flew higher and higher, until it was high up in the sky. The light from the 9 ‘suns’ in the sky caused its body to shine with a golden colour. Ling Chen’s mouth slightly opened, and his eyes followed the movements of the gigantic bird. It hovered in the air,and Ling Chen saw its crimson-golden eyes look at him. Its wings gently flapped in the air.

Whoosh…

A warm and gentle, yet overwhelming gust of wind blew towards Ling Chen, lifting him and Xiao Hui into the air. While floating in the air, Ling Chen could not move or struggle at all, and could only allow himself to be carried wherever Xi Ling’s wind took him.

He had been blown by the wind to the centre of the Ghastly Grounds. He had been transported by Xi Ling’s wind from the middle of Lonely Spirit Ridge to the middle of the Ghastly Grounds. Here, the multitudes of zombies that he had slain had already revived. Following the scent of a living being, they slowly advanced towards him while swinging their arms.

Ling Chen didn’t have time to pay attention to these zombies; after landing, he immediately looked up towards the east… Although they were very far away, the nine golden suns were still brightly in the sky towards the East. Even though he was quite a distance away from them, they were still so bright that he scarcely dared to look at them. Seconds later, Ling Chen hurriedly squinted his eyes as the 9 ‘suns’ exploded with a boom. Large balls of golden fire rained down from where they were….

A searing wave of heat rolled towards Ling Chen. The zombies that had been slowly walking towards Ling Chen gave a strange cry and all collapsed on the ground. They clasped their heads with their hands, their stiff bodies trembling on the ground. Lonely Spirit Ridge had instantly become a sea of golden flame... That's right, the instant the 9 'suns' had exploded, the entire Lonely Spirit Ridge and the area surrounding it had been completely engulfed in the golden flames. The flames devoured the dark clouds and heavy fog and even dyed the sky into a deep golden colour.

"Arghhhhh!!!!"

The speed of sound is always slower the speed of light. The instant Lonely Spirit Ridge had become a sea of golden flame, a miserable cry that seemed to belong to someone suffering in hell rang out. This was the pitiful cry of the War Demon Beast. Although there was such a distance between them, the pathetic cry still sounded incredibly clear by the time it reached Ling Chen's ears. It was hard to imagine how deafening that roar would have been up close, as well as how much pain the War Demon Beast was going through to let out such a sound.

It was simply impossible for anyone to imagine how much pain the War Demon Beast was suffering from under the Flames of the Nine Suns.

"Arghhhh!!!!"

“Ahhhh…”

“ARGHHHHHHHH!!!”

The cries that came from Lonely Spirit Ridge became louder and louder, to the point that Ling Chen almost could not bear hearing them anymore. For the cries to be transmitted so clearly and loudly over such a long distance, it was very difficult to imagine how painful it was for the maker of the sounds. As waves of heat rolled across the entire area, it seemed like even the air was trembling from how pitiful these cries sounded.

“The Flames of the Nine Suns are the demon beast clan’s worst fear. Whenever demon beasts even think of the words ‘nine suns’, they would subconsciously begin to tremble. Thus, facing the actual Flames of the Nine Suns, even an extraordinarily power and fearless demon beast would cower in fright… to the point that it would seem like it was a powerless little ant. Their fear and terror toward the Flames of the Nine Suns was something that the other clans would never be able to experience or understand.”

A ray of black light flashed, and Qi Yue appeared next to Ling Chen. Her appearance was completely different to her appearance from before. The current Qi Yue did not give off an enchanting or bewitching aura. Instead, she stared off into the distance, and gazed at the blazing Lonely Spirit Ridge together with Ling Chen. She solemnly said, “Little master, by now… you should be able to guess who that little girl called Xi Ling really is, right?”

Ling Chen: “……..”

Chapter 110 - Wrath Of The 9 Suns (3)

“I never thought that her human form would be such a cute little girl. What this also tells us is that right now, she is still a ‘child’, which is why her life force is so weak. Although she has the most destructive power out of all the beasts, she’s still a child. That means as she matures and grows, her power will greatly surpass all the other Saint Destroyer beasts, potentially even the Moon God Clan.” Qi Yue turned and looked at the dumbstruck Ling Chen. While gazing into the distance, she said, “Such a powerful beast, in order to save you, sacrificed so much... in order to repay you for returning her freedom back to her.”

Ling Chen zoned out while staring at the golden flaming sea that covered Lonely Spirit Ridge.

Ten kilometres to the west, Peace Town.

“Look! Look, there are golden flames over there!”

“Lonely Spirit Ridge burst out in flames, what’s going on?”

“I’ve lived for so many years, but I’ve never seen golden flames before... Didn’t the myths say that only that legendary beast would have this type of fire?”

.....

“Could this be a sign from the heavens? Could it be that Lonely

Spirit Ridge has taken the lives of so many people, so the Moon Gods are punishing it?”

Peace Town’s residents all came running out and stood outside their houses while gaping at the scene of Lonely Spirit Ridge burning in the golden flames towards the east. It was as if they had seen a miracle from the heavens.

“Whew… Big brother, I finally caught up to you.”

“My name is Xi Ling, big brother can call me Ling Ling!”

: “Wherever big brother goes, that’s my home!”

: “Let me follow big brother, wherever big brother goes, take me as well! Ok?”

: “Because I like big brother!”

“Big brother, you need to keep your promises! If I can bring back some Flaming Black Grass, you need to let me follow big brother. Wherever big brother goes, I’m going as well… no take backs!”

Flaming Black Grass: A mysterious type of plant that combines darkness and fire energy, and does not grow naturally. Its origin is unknown. The darkness energy that it contains will absorb most poisons; the fire energy that it contains can easily dispel most poisons. Any person who eats this grass or uses it to make medicine can cure almost any poison.

Ling Chen silently looked at the seven Flaming Black Grass in his hand. He only needed one to complete the Azure Dragon Mayor's quest. However, at the moment he couldn't feel any joy in completing the quest at all. He blankly stared at the sea of fire in the east, and numbly asked, "Before, the War Demon Beast said that if she used the power of the 'nine suns', she would die... is this true?"

The golden flames that reached the sky continued to burn, and the War Demon Beast's pathetic cries continued to ring out. However, the cries became weaker and weaker. Amidst the Flames of the Nine Suns, the War Demon Beast was suffering from an incredible amount of pain. Its body, energy and spirit were quickly crumbling into dust.....

Qi Yue looked at Ling Chen and slightly nodded her head, "The Flames of the Nine Suns is a unique flame that only she has. Even when she is at her peak, she would not be able to casually use it. However, right now she only has Heaven's End power, which is far from being enough to light the Flames of the Nine Suns. However... in order to use those flames, she used her own life force. The cost of using her own life force is that after exhausting all of her life force, she will die. If she left after you released her, even if she only has Heaven's End power, she would be able to easily leave. Although she has such immense power and such a noble origin, in order to save you, she is willing to sacrifice her own life."

Ling Chen: "....."

The War Demon Beast finally stopped screaming in pain. Its body, energy and spirit had been completely incinerated by the

Flames of the Nine Suns. Apart from ashes and dust, nothing remained of the War Demon Beast. One of the ten ancient demon beasts had perished in the Forgotten Continent under the hands of the one it feared the most.

The flames in the east finally started to die down as well.

Ling Chen raised his head and slowly exhaled. Xi Ling's voice and face continuously appeared in his head. She was someone who, for the person who had set her free, was willing to selflessly sacrifice her own life. To be precise, she was a divine beast that could transform into a human. Anyone would be moved by someone willing to sacrifice their life for them. Xi Ling's beauty was peerless; her spirit was like a beautifully pure and pristine crystal. Her noble blood and power was unmatched by anyone, and yet she was still willing to lay down her life for a mere human out of gratitude. If beasts can be like this, then why not humans? People shouldn't be too selfish, and should try to be kind to others. Sometimes, a bit of kindness can go a long way. Someone you show a bit of kindness to might even be able to save your life or change it forever.

"Little master, doesn't your heart ache, wishing that you could save that girl?" Qi Yue's eyes gleamed as she looked at Ling Chen's dejected expression. Her mouth curved into a smile.

Ling Chen continued to stare towards the east, where the golden flames continued to die down. The flames were not as tall as before, and the golden hue of the flames began to grow dimmer. He let out a sigh and said, "I would do anything to save her. However, right now I am too weak, and can't help her at all."

“That’s not necessarily true.” Qi Yue replied with a smile. She shifted her body so that her the alluring curves of her towering breasts could be clearly seen. Her black clothes tightly squeezed the two giant mounds together. Anyone looking would worry about the clothes bursting open at any time.

Ling Chen’s eyes boggled as he stared for a second, then looked away. He hurriedly asked, “You said... there’s a way to save her right?”

“There isn’t just a method to save her; right now, you are the only person who can save her.” Qi Yue laughed.

“What method is it?”
“It’s very simple. Xi Ling used her life force to ignite the Flames of the Nine Suns. After the Flames of the Nine Suns have been extinguished, her life force will have been exhausted as well. However, if her life force can be revived before this happens, she naturally will not die.” Qi Yue explained.

“Every living being’s life force is different. Plus, if someone’s life force is exhausted, they will die. How can someone revive their life force?” Ling Chen murmured.

Qi Yue gently nodded her head, “If it was any other being, what you just said would be true, but... little master, have you ever heard the legend of the phoenix? The phoenix can use the power of flames to reincarnate, and rise from its ashes. The power of this girl’s flames is much stronger and purer than those of a phoenix,

so why shouldn't she be able to revive as well? Not only will she be able to revive, but her revival ability should be even stronger than the phoenix's 'Revival from the Ashes'. What a phoenix revives is only its life. If it depletes its life force, it only has a chance to reincarnate, and will not necessarily successfully revive. However, this is not a true revival, because even if it succeeds in reviving, it might lose all of its power. For Xi Ling, her life force itself can be revived, and can grow to become even stronger afterwards. However, this type of revival of her life force can only be used once... and moreover, it must be connected to another living being for guidance and support. If she relies on another living being to revive her life force, her life will be tied to this being. If it lives, she lives; if it dies, she dies. Furthermore, she will not be able to ignore any orders given by this being. In other words, she will forever be a slave to the other being – no matter how powerful she becomes, she will be unable to betray or rebel against the being.

Ling Chen: "....."

Qi Yue looked towards the east, and saw that the golden flames had died down to be half as intense as they were originally, and the sky as no longer dyed with a golden colour. She turned to look at Ling Chen, and spoke softly, "Little master, do you understand what I just said? The Flames of the Nine Suns have begun to die down. All that is left right now are the residual embers. If these residual embers are extinguished as well, then there will be no chance of saving that little sister anymore."
"Let's go!!"

Without the slightest hesitation, Ling Chen called out the Cloud Stepping Mare and sped towards the burning Lonely Spirit Ridge as fast as he could.

“Although this may not be very fair to you… but I definitely can’t let you die.” Ling Chen thought.

As he rode on the galloping Cloud Stepping Mare, Lonely Spirit Ridge grew closer and closer. On the way, he rode past many zombies trembling as they lay on the ground. Ordinarily, zombies were quite afraid of fire, much more so the overwhelming Flames of the Nine Suns. Due to his urgency, time seemed to slow down. Ling Chen’s eyebrows were furrowed together, worrying that he would not be able to make it in time. After what seemed like an eternity, he finally saw the entrance to Lonely Spirit Ridge… at that moment, he received one of the biggest shocks in his entire life. Lonely Spirit Ridge was given its name because it contained many mountain ridges.

The flames that engulfed Lonely Spirit Ridge were no longer golden, but instead a faint red colour, while the various mountain ridges… had all disappeared!!!

What Ling Chen saw was only a burnt flatland… no, a massive crater! The ground at the entrance had sunk down by more than three metres!

Amidst his shock, Ling Chen immediately realised that the golden flames had not only reduced the mountain ridges to rubble, but had also burnt vast amounts of the land into dust.

What a terrifying flame!

“Little master, you’re feeling very surprised aren’t you? The thing is, right now what you’re seeing was caused by Xi Ling using her current Heaven’s End power. If she was at her peak and used the Flames of the Nine Suns, everything here would have been instantly reduced to nothing, instead of what you’re seeing right now. Moreover, long ago I heard that her strongest flame is not the Flames of the Nine Suns, but rather something that greatly surpasses the Flames of the Nine Suns. It is said that that type of flame is comparable to the flames within the core of the sun. When those types of flames appear, she is able to completely destroy anything... even if it was divine beast, it would still be instantly annihilated. However, this is only a rumour that I heard, and might not necessarily be true.”

In front of him, a wave of searing heat rolled towards Ling Chen. While listening to Qi Yue, Ling Chen looked in the direction the heat waves were coming from. He gritted his teeth in determination, and rushed into the scorched Lonely Spirit Ridge. Ling Chen endured the blistering heat, and hastily ran in search of Xi Ling.

Chapter 111 - Crimson Spirit (1)

Ten minutes ago, Lonely Spirit Ridge had been completely turned into a sea of golden flames. Even now, Lonely Spirit Ridge was still burning with residual embers. Ling Chen's whole body, from head to toe, was in burning pain from the embers... Although now, Lonely Spirit Ridge could not be called Lonely Spirt 'Ridge' anymore, as there were no longer any mountain ridges.

The place Ling Chen was rushing to now was where Xi Ling was. He believed that she should still be at that place... as for the War Demon Beast, even if it was at the Mysterious God level, the flames from before were certain to have roasted it to cinders. The searing heat gradually became less intense, but this did not allow Ling Chen to relax at all. Rather, it increased his urgency. Qi Yue had said that if the last embers extinguished, Xi Ling's life force would be completely extinguished as well, and would not be able to be revived.

The colour of the flames changed from gold to a crimson-golden colour, then to a pure crimson colour. Gradually, the crimson flames became a crimson-yellow colour. The changing of the colours of the flame revealed the gradual decline of its power and intensity. Finally, after searching for what seemed like an eternity, Ling Chen reigned in the Cloud Stepping Mare. In front of him, countless little tongues of flame formed a giant circle. In the middle of the circle was the exhausted red fire bird, huddled on the ground.

However, in her current state, her crimson feathers had lost all of their flames, as well as their golden hue. Her wings hung limp on the ground, her head hanging downwards. Hearing a noise, she

slightly raised her head. As she saw Ling Chen, her lifeless eyes flickered with a dim flame.

Ling Chen dismounted the Cloud Stepping Mare and called it back. Stepping over the little tongues of flame, he walked towards the little bird that had almost lost its life for him. In the surrounding area, there was not a trace left of the War Demon Beast. Not even a bit of the dark energy remained.

“caw~~~”

Seeing Ling Chen walk closer, the red fire bird let out a weak little chirp. She didn’t want to die, but facing the War Demon Beast, using this move was her only option. Ling Chen squatted down in front of her, and gently placed his hand on her feathers.

“Xi Ling, I never thought that you would be the beautiful bird that I released. Looks like the heavens determined our fates to be intertwined. I saved you in the past, but that was out of the spur of the moment. I never thought that... in order to save me, you would be willing to sacrifice your life. In your eyes, I am only an incredibly weak human being, but you... are one of the five divine beasts of the Forgotten Continent, renowned and revered by all living creatures. Although I set you free, you using your priceless life in exchange for my safety deeply moved me. This is the first time I’ve felt such emotions since I came to this world. You helped me understand that Saint Destroyer beasts are not necessarily all arrogant and condescending, but rather can be even kinder and purer than humans.”

The red fire bird powerlessly flapped its wings, and gently

chirped, as if it wanted to say something. Ling Chen smiled, and continued to speak, “You don’t need to be surprised, your real identity is actually very easy to guess. The ten ancient demon beasts greatly fear a being that is able to use golden flames. Before, when the War Demon Beast began to tremble while looking at you, I started to have my suspicions. After you released the golden flames, I was able to confirm my suspicions… You’re the divine beast with the greatest attacking power out of the five divine beast, the divine beast that was said to have perished already – Golden Crow! But in truth, you hadn’t perished-you were imprisoned under Lonely Spirit Ridge until now.

Ling Chen stretched out his arm, within his hand were the seven Flaming Black Grass that Xi Ling had given him, “Xi Ling, we can talk about everything else later. To be honest, your true identity doesn’t matter me at all. I only remember the promise that little sister Xi Ling ‘forced’ on me… If she could bring me the Flaming Black Grass, I would have to keep her by my side. Wherever I go, I would have to take her as well. Now, Xi Ling has given me the Flaming Black Grass, so now is the time for me to honour my promise. I’m willing to keep Xi Ling by my side from now on, and wherever I go, Xi Ling will come as well. So if Xi Ling is willing to follow me, come with me wherever I go, alright? Of course, if one day Xi Ling wants to leave, no matter what reason it is, I won’t stop you. I promise I won’t try to control or possess you, ok?”

The temperature that had been falling suddenly rose again. Xi Ling slightly lifted her wings up, and bit by bit raised her head. Ling Chen could see that within her crimson coloured eyes, there were droplets of tears forming. Ling Chen gently stroked the red fire bird’s body with his hands, the looked into her eyes, showing her his sincerity and determination.

“Chirp… Chirp~~~”

The red fire bird’s remaining doubts and internal conflict faded away. The sounds she made became louder and higher in tone. The weakness in her cries had instead been replaced with joy. She didn’t know where the strength came from, but she was suddenly able to fully spread out her wings. At the same time, an orb of fire shot out from her wings towards Ling Chen.

Ling Chen did not try to dodge the fire orb, instead allowing himself to be covered by it.

Being enfolded within the fire orb, Ling Chen did not feel any pain, but rather felt indescribably warm and comfortable.

“Ding… ‘Crimson Spirit’ is willing to accept you as its master, and requests to become your pet. Your life will be the foundation on which it revives its own life force, after which its life and death will be tied to your own life and death. Do you accept?”

“Accept.”

Whoosh…

Flames simultaneously burst forth on both Ling Chen and the red fire bird’s body, causing them to be completely covered in flames. Within the flames, Xi Ling’s remaining life force and spirit were absorbed into Ling Chen’s body, in order for his own life force to assist Xi Ling in her recovery… However, Ling Chen was

thoroughly confused.

The name the system had used was clearly… “Crimson Spirit”!

However… she had caused the War Demon Beast to tremble in fear, and her golden flames had reduced the War Demon Beast to begging for its life. She had been imprisoned by the Demon King and the ten ancient beasts… surely she should be the one with the most attacking power out of the five divine beasts, the Golden Crow!!

Why was it “Crimson Spirit”!?

“Crimson Spirit?” Qi Yue’s confused voice also sounded out in Ling Chen’s head.

“Is Crimson Spirit a different name for Golden Crow?” Ling Chen asked.

“No!” Qi Yue said with conviction, “Crimson Spirit is a name that I’ve never heard before. I doubt that it’s another name for Golden Crow. Also…”

“Also what?”

Qi Yue thought for a while, then replied, “When determining that she was the Golden Crow, I always had a bit of doubt in my mind. It was only when I saw the Flames of the Nine Suns when I cast aside those doubts… even though I have never seen the Golden

Crow, but there have been many rumours about it. These rumours are known by everyone in the Forgotten Continent. It is said that the Golden Crow's body is completely gold, and has three feet. Thus, it is also called the 'Three-footed Crow'. However, the 'Golden Crow' that we saw was predominantly crimson red, with a bit of gold. Moreover, it only has two legs instead of three. Though they are both birds, 'Crimson Spirit' has the head and tail of a phoenix and the body of a Vermillion Bird, which is completely different to a crow."

Ling Chen: "....."

"However, these are all rumours. I've never seen the real Golden Crow before, so I can't confirm if these rumours are true or not. The fact remains though that only the Golden Crow is able to summon the Flames of the Nine Suns. That's why I thought she was the Golden Crow. If the rumours about the appearance of the Golden Crow are true, then 'Crimson Spirit' and 'Golden Crow' should be two completely names and beings...."

"But, why is she able to use the Flames of the Nine Suns... and why was she imprisoned by the Demon Beast Clan? I've never heard of the name 'Crimson Spirit', but she is able to use the Flames of the Nine Suns, so why have I never heard about her before...?" Qi Yue wondered aloud, unable to find an answer.

"Could she be a phoenix or a Vermillion Bird?" Ling Chen quietly asked.

"Absolutely impossible!" Qi Yue firmly answered, "Phoenixes are an extremely ancient race. In the ancient times, the Phoenix Clan

was even comparable to the Dragon Clan in terms of power. However, a terrible catastrophe struck, resulting in the Phoenix Clan becoming extinct. From then onwards, no one has ever seen a phoenix, and phoenixes became an existence that only existed in the legends. Apart from the Golden Crow, the Vermillion Bird is the beast with the strongest flame power, and currently resides in the Southern region of the Forgotten Continent. Although its fire power is very strong, but it's impossible for it to use golden flame. Moreover, the Flames of the Nine Suns are flames unique to the Golden Crow, so even if the Vermillion Bird is able to reach Saint Destroyer level, it still wouldn't be able to use those flames. Plus, I've seen the Vermillion Bird before, so I know they're completely different."

Caw~~~

Within the fire, the piercing cry rang out. Crimson Spirit's head was once again proudly raised. Its previously darkened feathers were once again ignited with crimson clusters of fire. Its eyes shone with a fiery ruby glow.

"Ding... 'Crimson Spirit' has successfully become your pet, and has revived its life force with your life force as the foundation. Its life and death will be tied to yours from now on. Please pick a nice nickname for your 'Crimson Spirit'."

"Xi Ling." Ling Chen didn't even need to think, and immediately chose the name that she had told him.

"Ding... Pet 'Xi Ling' successfully named."

“Ding... Congratulations, your pet ‘Crimson Spirit’ has been listed in the Pet Ranking List in your region as Number 1. System will release a global announcement, do you wish to hide your personal information?”

The revived Xi Ling was ranked even higher on the Pet Ranking List than Xiao Hui!? Could it be that Xi Ling will be a Heaven’s End grade pet?!?

“No need!”

After Ling Chen quickly answered, he immediately opened the Pet Ranking List.

China Region Pet Ranking List:

Number 1: Crimson Spirit: Grade: Heaven’s End, Level: LV0, Owner: Ling Tian.

Number 2: Holy Divine Beast: Grade: Celestial, Level: LV12, Owner: Ling Tian.

Chapter 112 - Crimson Spirit (2)

Another pet had appeared on the Pet Rankings. However, the owner of this pet was the same person as the only other pet on the rankings-Ling Tian

Grade—Heaven's End.

<<Mystic Moon>> hadn't started for long, but Ling Tian's name had been spread throughout all of China, even reaching international players, surprising them and causing uproars all over the world.

If the events caused by Ling Chen before were "tremors", then this time, Ling Chen had brought the first "earthquake" to <<Mystic Moon>>.

This was because he had brought the words "Heaven's End" to the eyes of all the players.

Silver and Gold grade items were without a doubt incredibly rare items; Celestial items were rarer than rare. To be able to have a Celestial item, one would have strength far above the rest. But Heaven's End... it was accepted that its very existence could break the balance of power! If a person had a Heaven's End equip, item or pet, then, no player in the whole world could stand in his way. This early in the game, the appearance of this pet was simply against all logic! Heaven's End items were supposed to appear in small quantities even in the late game, and only those with the highest strength or power will be able to get them. Every Heaven's

End equip would draw the attention of an entire area. Being able to get a Heaven's End item, would be enough to be admired by countless players. It was an incredible honour.

But currently, Mystic Moon had only been around for less than 10 days!! The appearance of Celestial gear and pets was something that players could barely accept, but Heaven's End... how can something of this level appear now!!

"Is that guy called Ling Tian a monster? Or has this game gotten out of control!! How can the words "Heaven's End" appear at this time!!"

"Had Mystic Moon not been opened by the Cosmos Corporation, with dozens of powerful countries and banks supporting it, then I would believe that Ling Tian is the owner of the Cosmos Corporation, or the owner's son... Heaven's End pet, no way!"

"Ling Tian... Almost every day I hear this name; he alone has already stolen so much thunder from everyone else. This time... Heaven's End pet... this can't be true right?"

"Gahh!! Stop fussing! Quickly find this Ling Tian person! He's carrying two Celestial equips, a Celestial pet, and a Heaven's End pet! Either force him to surrender his pets, or kill him and make him drop his equipment!"

"Are you crazy! If he's able two Celestial equips, and two high grade pets do you think he's some normal player? He's probably on the level of the Sword Emperor or the Shinigami, or perhaps, he

might even be a leader of the Yan Huang Alliance, you dare provoke him? Be careful that you don't lose your life in the real world."

"Humph! So what if he's got a Heaven's End pet! With my technique and skills, I can wreck that Ling Tian guy easily!!"

"Ohh! This big brother sounds really strong. Oh yeah, what level are you? Can you carry little brother?"

"I'm level 2."

"I..."

The new changes of the Pet Rankings created waves in the whole world. "Heaven's End", caused the whole world to look upon the name "Ling Tian". The sky above the Forgotten Continent was filled with noise, the focus of their discussion, was all regarding the Heaven's End pet "Crimson Spirit".

Heaven's End pet... many experienced players dare not even imagine it. "Crimson Spirit", this name hung at the top of the rankings; seeing the words "Heaven's End" on the board, countless player's eyes almost burst out of their heads. They were all discussing and at the same time they are also envying and admiring.

Disregarding the other players, even Ling Chen himself who already had a Celestial pet was extremely excited. What is a

Heaven's End pet, Ling Chen already clearly knew... it was a very, very strong creature! But until that point, in the past virtual world there have only been three Heaven's End pets, and they all only appeared in the late game, and all had very strong powers. But when he entered Mystic Moon for less than 10 days, he already got a big surprise which was the Celestial pet, Xiao Hui. Xiao Hui's help for him had been immeasurable. But now, after the trip to the Lonely Spirit Ridge, he obtained a Heaven's End pet!!!

At first he thought Xi Ling's abilities and attributes were all reset when she was reborn... but it turned out, she just directly became Heaven's End level!

When the red light dissipated, Xi Ling spread her wings and flew, the Xi Ling that was previously too weak to even stand before Ling Chen was now above his head happily crying out, its whole body was sparking magnificently. Ling Chen couldn't wait to open the stats page to see what abilities and stats Xi Ling, a Heaven's End pet, had.

Crimson Spirit: Category: pet, level: LV0, Grade: Heaven's End, Master: Ling Tian, Live together, dies together, will never betray its master. Fire spirit beast with unknown origins, has a gorgeous appearance and the strongest fire attack power. It can control the power of the sun for its own use. Currently still an infant, its power still not completely mature.

Attributes: HP: 400...

The origins of the Crimson Spirit were very vague, and there was no mention that it was a Golden Crow. Moreover, it only just said that “its origins are unknown”. The Golden Crow was the Forgotten Continent’s most famous Saint Destroyer Beast. If it was the Golden Crow, its history wouldn’t just have “its origins are unknown”. When looking at its stats, the first stat made Ling Chen stop.

Only… 400HP!?

Xiao Hui who is of a celestial grade at LV0, already had 2000HP!

The Crimson Spirit was Heaven’s End, higher than Xiao Hui by a whole grade! But at LV0 it only had 400HP, which was 5 times less than Xiao Hui!

Ling Chen even rubbed his eyes and stared in astonishment and confusion before realising that he was not mistaken.

It is a Heaven’s End pet! Why would its HP be so little!?

But then seeing its mana, Ling Chen almost had a heart attack.

> Mana: 10,000.

There were 5 zeroes in the mana value! Xi Ling was at level 0, but had a whole 10,000 mana!!

It had excessively low HP, but a scarily high amount of mana... Ling Chen instantly understood, Xi Ling was an extreme Magic Attack pet.

Attributes: HP: 400, Mana: 10,000, Physical Attack:100, Magical Attack: 3000, Physical Defence: 5, Movement Speed: 180.

Compared to its LV0 mana stat that was 10,000, its LV0 Magic Attack made Ling Chen shudder and take in a breath. Her Magic Attack at LV0 was equivalent to the Physical Attack of all of his best equips including the 2 Celestial equips and common equipment multiplied by 4!!

If its level was similar to his, its Magic Attack, would be in excess of 10 times!!Even though Xi Ling was Heaven's End grade, but this scary attack value was not normal at all. But Xi Ling was a very extreme pet; while its attacks while insanely strong, its HP and defensive capabilities were very weak, even lower than common pets.

Passive Abilities:

Can fly up to 30m high, currently cannot carry anyone.

Automatically recovers 1% mana per second.

Can absorb any form of fire damage and freely convert it to Mana or HP, owner's fire resistance increased by 50%

Ling Chen: "..."

His eyes stared at the third passive ability for 3 seconds, Ling Chen then quickly called out his own stats page, looking at his own fire resistance.

Fire resistance: 50%!!

Ling Chen had seen all of the current best equips, and they increased at best 5% of an elements' resistance, but Xi Ling actually added a whole 50% fire resistance to him! What does it even mean to have 50% fire resistance? It means any type... regardless of whether it's from a player, monster or trap's fire damage, its damage to him is reduced by half!

You can imagine, a strong fire Mage who is completely confident in his powerful fire spell, will see that the resulting damage is only a measly, pitiful number. This would be enough to cause anyone to go mad.

50% elemental resistance, Ling Chen believed that reaching a resistance of this magnitude, would appear only on orbs that are Heaven's End or above, but for Xi Ling, it was just a passive ability that added this resistance to his body. This is the power of Heaven's End pets!

Abilities:

[Rootless Fire]: Current level: LV1, Highest level: LV5, increasing to LV2 requires pet to be LV10. Passive ability, manipulated power is created from its soul, and does not require natural flames to create extreme flames. Will ignore any creature's resistance to flame, its power is stronger than regular flames. Effect: Disregard any fire resistance, use of any fire magic doesn't require an incantation. (PS: Does not ignore elemental weaknesses to fire. Which is to say, if the monster weak against fire, the fire will still deal the appropriate extra amount of damage).

[Flame Attack]: Normal attack, cannot be upgraded. Burns all targets within a 5 metre range with rootless flame, deals the same damage as Magic Attack stat, costs 20 mana, no cooldown.

[Wild Flames]: current level: LV5, highest level: LV10, increasing to level 6 requires pet to be LV10. Burns all targets within 30m in front with rootless flame, deals 200% of the Magic Attack stat, 30% chance of dealing an addition 10 second burn, cost 300 mana, 5 second cooldown.

[Red Laser]: Current level: LV5, highest level: LV10, increasing to LV6 requires pet to be LV10. Using the rootless fire to gather the sun's searing rays, creating a terrible high heat laser that attacks a single target from the sky, dealing 500% damage. Once locked on, the target cannot avoid it. Costs 600 mana, 10 second cooldown.

Chapter 113 - Demon Jade Hook

[Burning Fire Array]: Current level: LV3, highest level: LV5, increasing to level 4 requires pet to be LV25. Rootless fire is launched in all 4 directions, creating a large flaming array, burning everything in the array. Area of effect is within 100m of pet, base damage (10000+ Magic Attack x 3), 100% chance to have an additional 10 seconds of burn, 5 second cast time, 3 second duration, costs 9000 mana, 3hr cooldown.

[Nine Sun Rebirth]: Fixed ability, cannot be upgraded. After death, the power of 9 suns can be used to revive pet. After revival, pet will be fully healed, but within the next hour it cannot enter any form of combat. The 9 suns have endless power, and this skill can be triggered an infinite number of times.

[Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns]: Fixed ability, cannot be upgraded. Releases own source of power and condenses flames similar to nine suns into an ultimate flame that can burn anything. When it reaches the peak of its strength, the Flames of the Sun can be directly used. The fire doesn't distinguish friend from foe, its lethality is the same for all Damage is (Magic Attack x 9 x Crimson Spirit's current level). Targets can be freely chosen within the spell range. The maximum range is equivalent to pet's Magic Attack Strength. Mana cost unknown. Pet's current strength is vastly insufficient to cast this spell; spell should not be used. If this spell is forcibly used, after the Flames of the Nine Suns are extinguished, Crimson Spirit will immediately die.

After reading all of Crimson Spirit's skills, Ling Chen's scalp felt numb. If you had to use a word to describe its abilities, then this word would be – terrifying.

It was indeed terrifying.

It already had 3000 Magic Attack at level 0. This could not be achieved by a normal Mage even if he was level 50. With this kind of attack power, if it released a "Red Laser", it could deal 15,000 damage… which means, a level 0 Crimson Spirit could easily kill a level 15 Lord!!

If she rose to Ling Chen's level, even if it was a level 15 Celestial Boss, it wouldn't be able to take many of her hits.

Moreover, her flame attacks ignore all fire resistance, so any kind of high fire resistance to her is nothing more than a cosmetic. Generally speaking, the Red Laser is probably Xi Ling's weakest skill. Once Wild Flames are used, a 30m radius of flames is created. Even if it's a group of level 30-40 mobs, they will all be eradicated. Not to mention Burning Fire Array, where in the flap of a wing, everything within a 100 metre array will be destroyed.

Strong beyond description.

This Heaven's End pet was really worthy of the recognition given by players to be simply game-breaking!

No, usually Heaven's End pets cannot have such terrifying attack ability, they shouldn't even have half of what Xi Ling has. There is a very important reason for Xi Ling's strength, and that is because she originally had Saint Destroyer levels of strength! Back then, a Saint Destroyer level Demon had to combine powers with 10 Mysterious God monsters in order to have enough power to suppress her.

At the same time, in contrast to Xi Ling's extreme attacking power, she had really low HP and weak defence. Any small creature could kill her in a few hits, let alone a boss.

Xiao Hui's abilities were in defence and support, with no attacking abilities, whilst Xi Ling was completely different, they could be said to be polar opposites. She had all attacking abilities, and no supporting or defensive abilities.

"Excellent destructive abilities and a meagre amount of HP, her abilities and what are abilities are going to be seem to be exactly the same as the Golden Crow, but based on her looks, she looks nothing like the Golden Crow. If she isn't the Golden Crow, then where is the Golden Crow? Is it really as per the legends, that it's been destroyed..." Qi Yue wondered.

What happened when the Golden Crow took part in the destruction of the demons, no one really knew.

Ling Chen looked up, turning to see Xi Ling in the air, under his gaze, Xi Ling retracted her wings, and landed, intimately standing on his shoulders. The flames all around had already been extinguished, but Xi Ling was already good as new.

“Can you still become human form?” Ling Chen gently smiled and asked.

Xi Ling leaned forward, making a head shaking movement.

“Other than the Dragon Clan, if an animal wants to change into human form, it needs to be of at least Saint Destroyer level. Before she could become human, which proves that she once was of Saint Destroyer strength, as she was able to use her powers to do so. However, after her rebirth, all of her abilities and power have been reset, so until she reaches Saint Destroyer level again, she cannot go into the human form.” Qi Yue piped up and explained.

Ling Chen disappointedly nodded. Xi Ling was not able to go into human form. This meant that she was unable to speak. Otherwise, he would be able to directly ask Xi Ling many questions.

“Then, I guess you’re coming with me. Everything I said before still counts, if one day you want to leave, then you’re free to do so, I will never stop you from leaving.” Ling Chen said facing Xi Ling. Xi Ling had incomparable strength, if she decided to follow him, she would be an immense help. But he will never forget how this once Saint Destroyer creature turned into his pet.

Xi Ling tilt her head, and made a gentle chirp. What it meant was only known to her.

Who once used to stand as one of the strongest in all of Forgotten Continent-a Saint Destroyer beast who was looked up to by

countless creatures, and one who newly entered into this world-an unspeakably low level player... seeing Xi Ling standing on his shoulders, Ling Chen's brain still refused to accept the reality of the situation. Saint Destroyer beasts were extremely powerful, and yet he had become the master of one. Although now Xi Ling was only of Heaven's End level, Qi Yue did mention before, her strength would be regained slowly, and one day she would return to her former strength. How long that would take, he didn't know. But for now, even just being at "Heaven's End" grade, he was sure that the whole of Mystic Moon was now in turmoil because of its appearance.

"Then, let's go, you've been stuck here for 10,000 years. The Forgotten Continent of now is completely different from what you remember. Let me take you to go see the Azure Dragon City."

Ling Chen summoned the Cloud Stepping Mare. After feeling a bit melancholic, seeing Xi Ling and Xiao Hui by his side, his mood improved. The Lonely Spirit Ridge was known as forbidden by the whole of the Forgotten Continent, here countless masters had never returned. Indeed, there was a Mysterious God level demon here, so any humans entering were as good as dead. Today he came here merely to explore and look around, he didn't think he would be able to finish the task. Moreover, he also didn't expect all the fantastic developments that would result. The War Demon Beast had temporarily left, allowing him safe passage into the Lonely Spirit Ridge. He had found and saved the imprisoned Xi Ling with Xiao Hui's help... and now, the War Demon Beast was dead, he had the Flaming Black Grass, and by his side, he got an additional Heaven's End... game-breaking partner.

Ling Chen couldn't help but look at Xiao Hui... ever since Xiao

Hui joined his side, he always seemed to have fantastic luck. Was this the luck that Xiao Hui brought?

With both hands holding Celestial equips, and Celestial and Heaven's End pets by his side... even Ling Chen began to wonder if Mystic Moon was bugged. Why it would allow such a powerful being to appear so early?

"Let's go!!"

Ling Chen picked up Xiao Hui and put him on the Cloud Stepping Mare's head, then he climbed onto its back. Suddenly, an unusually dark glow flashed in the corner of his eye. He didn't ignore it, and turned his head to look at the source of the glow. After a short pause, he walked over.

The War Demon Beast was completely destroyed. Not only its body, but even all its possessions were all destroyed by the Flames of the Sun. There was nothing left. There was no way the dark glow could shine after all that destruction... unless even under the Flames of the Nine Suns, there was something left behind?
Carefully walking over, Ling Chen squatted down, and reached out to where the glow was, gently wiping, pushing aside the thin blackened layer of dirt. Suddenly, a dark coloured, object that was smooth as a mirror was revealed.

What is this?! It survived the Flames of the Nine Suns!?

In surprise, Ling Chen slowly picked it up, holding it in his hand.

It was a piece of jade, a black coloured jade. It had a very smooth surface and there was no sign of damage. The shape was an irregular “c” shape. It was just large enough for Ling Chen to hold in his hands. On the other side, it was engraved with the word “War”.

[Demon Jade Hook War]: Jade that the War Demon Beast carries. It is said that it was given to him by the then Demon King. Unable to determine what material it is made of and its use.

“Huh?” holding this black piece of jade, Ling Chen raised his eye brow. This was definitely an unusual item, the Flames of the Nine Suns had completely obliterated the War Demon Beast, and there was nothing behind, yet this item showed no signs of damage.

“Qi Yue, do you know what this is?” Ling Chen asked.

“Nope.” Qi Yue replied with a laugh, the laugh had a slight hint of suspicion. “This is probably the War Demon Beast’s proof of identity, but it doesn’t seem to have any aura of the Demon Clan. Just hold on to it. The jade doesn’t have any kind of aura on it, which should mean it’s safe. We might eventually find answers about it in future.”

Ling Chen nodded, putting the demon jade in his bag, and tentatively searched the surrounding area. Not finding anything else, he got onto the Cloud Stepping Mare, and rode off in the opposite direction.

The Lonely Spirit Ridge from this day forth was no longer called the Lonely Spirit Ridge, and it wasn't forbidden anymore. The Ghastly Grounds was still there, with all sorts of undead causing chaos. Passing the "Underworld" entrance made Ling Chen hesitate a little, but he didn't go in, and left. In accordance with Qian Gun Gun's description of the Underworld, even if he had Xi Ling by his side, he didn't have the ability to step into the Underworld.

Peace town had become a mess. When Ling Chen walked out of the Ghastly Grounds, he saw a large number of villagers coming his way, obviously trying to confirm what really happened at the Lonely Spirit Ridge. Ling Chen bypassed all these people. After leaving the Ghastly Grounds, he was finally free. Taking out his teleport scroll, he teleported directly back to the Azure Dragon City.

Chapter 114 - Ling Chen's Request

The current Azure Dragon City and the Azure Dragon City at the time when Ling Chen left were completely different. When Ling Chen left, there were only NPCs and a beautiful and tranquil city. Now, Azure Dragon City was almost overflowing with players. When Ling Chen appeared at the Revival Centre, he was shocked by how many people there were.

There were way too many players in China-it was estimated that there were over a hundred million players. Apparently the past few days had broken the records for number of players advancing from Novice Village to Azure Dragon City. The average level of players was around LV10, and the days of Novice Village become a thing of the past. Players and players filled Ling Chen’s vision, reminding him of a crowded and noisy marketplace. Some were asking where the Class Change Hall was, some were forming parties, some were selling things, some were flirting, some were arguing and bickering, some were naively shouting... Ling Chen felt like his eardrums were about to burst, so he quickly squeezed through the gigantic throng of people and ran towards the Mayor’s residence.

Most players were heading towards the Markets or the Class Change Hall. The direction in which Ling Chen was heading did not have many players, as the Mayor’s residence was a restricted area for most other players. Seeing the grand and magnificent structure of the Mayor’s residence, Ling Chen could not help but exhale in awe. In other virtual reality games that he had played, it usually took him a long time to gain access to this sort of place, so this sort of situation was completely new to him.

“Yun Feng should have changed classes by now. I wonder how

that girl called Meng Xin and her “Heart’s Dream” studio are going.” Ling Chen thought as he wandered through the streets. He definitely would not forget his purpose in joining this game world. Shui Ruo had already gotten better, so he had fulfilled his life’s greatest wish already. In order to repay the kindness Yun Feng and Meng Xin had shown him, he would definitely fulfil his promise to them. Since joining Mystic Moon, he had been giving his greatest efforts. All that he had accomplished until now was all for that girl called Yun Meng Xin.

Within two years, he needed to garner a reputation and fortune that could rival the entire Yun family financial group, the second largest financial group in all of China. Ling Chen wondered what sort of bold girl would make such a ridiculous bet... and would even seriously try to win this kind of bet.

As he walked to the entrance of the Mayor’s residence, the two city guards saw him and immediately walked over. They courteously said, “Greetings, hero Ling Tian, are you here to see the Mayor? The Mayor said that if it is you, you can directly go in and wait for him at the reception room. We will immediately notify the Mayor.”

Ling Chen nodded his head and directly headed in.

Not long after Ling Chen entered the reception room, he heard steady and powerful footsteps walking towards the room. The Azure Dragon’s Mayor walked in, and smiled, “Ling Tian, you came. How much have you prepared for going to Lonely Spirit Ridge to get the Flaming Black Grass? If you have any questions about Lonely Spirit Ridge, or if you need help with anything, feel

free to ask me.”

The Azure Dragon’s Mayor thought that Ling Chen had come here for help. After all, his current strength was still quite weak, whereas Lonely Spirit Ridge was a very dangerous place.

Ling Chen shook his head, walked in front of the Mayor and straightforwardly said, “Mr. Mayor, I have lived up to your expectations and have brought back the Flaming Black Grass.”

“Hm?” The Azure Dragon’s Mayor reaction was abnormally calm. He dug into his ears, his face full of doubts and looked at Ling Chen, “What did you just say? I don’t think I heard you clearly… did you want to ask me about where to find Flaming Black Grass?”

“……..” Ling Chen understood why the Azure Dragon’s Mayor had such a reaction. It wasn’t that he hadn’t heard Ling Chen clearly-it was because he simply couldn’t believe that Ling Chen had already obtained the Flaming Black Grass so quickly, and so he subconsciously convinced himself that he had heard incorrectly. Ling Chen nodded, and instead said, “I wanted to ask, if I can bring back the Flaming Black Grass, what will Mr. Mayor give me as a reward?”

“……”

The Azure Dragon’s Mayor thought for a few moments, then sincerely said, “My son’s life depends on the Flaming Black Grass. If you can really obtain some Flaming Black Grass, I will forever

remember this favour. If you disobey any city laws, to a certain extent, I will not punish you. Moreover, if you need help with anything in future, you can come to me for help and I will help you as much as I can. Furthermore, I will grant you any wish that is within my power... How does this reward sound?"

"....."

None of the rewards the Azure Dragon's Mayor had just listed out were any physical goods, but Ling Chen knew how valuable these rewards were. When he had heard the Mayor listing out those rewards, he could even hear his own heart starting to thump harder and harder. This sort of reward exceeded anything that he had imagined. If the Mayor kept his word about the rewards he had promised... his life at Azure Dragon City would become incomparably easier! It would almost be like using a hack.

Without a doubt, these rewards were almost too valuable. However, when he thought of how ridiculously hard this quest had been, coupled with the fact that if it were not for Xi Ling, it would have been impossible to complete the quest, as well as the severe consequences for failing the quest, he actually felt that the rewards were just reasonable. Without wasting anymore words, Ling Chen took out the seven Flaming Black Grass and showed the Azure Dragon's Mayor. "Mr. Mayor, these are the Flaming Black Grass you asked for. Please don't forget about the rewards you just mentioned."

The seven Flaming Black Grass were held together by Ling Chen in his hand, and looked like a giant black flame in his hand. However, he had no idea where these Flaming Black Grass had

come from. Flaming Black Grass was created from powerful fire energy and darkness energy first colliding together, then gently entering a normal grass under special conditions. Flaming Black Grass first appeared after the battle between the Golden Crow and the demon beasts of the Demon Beast Clan. However, not too long after, they had all died out. From then onwards, Lonely Spirit Ridge never had any Flaming Black Grass. The Flaming Black Grass in Ling Chen's hands were made by Xi Ling herself.

The Azure Dragon's Mayor's expression froze as he saw the Flaming Black Grass in Ling Chen's hand. His expression then transitioned from shock to excitement to ecstasy and disbelief. His eyes were rooted on the Flaming Black Grass... their appearance, subtle heat, as well as the slight fire and darkness aura...

Were exactly the same as the Flaming Black Grass in his memories!

"These... These... are real Flaming Black Grass!!"

Within his excitement, the Azure Dragon's Mayor lost his self-control and began to shout in joy. These Flaming Black Grass that he had dreamed to obtain, and had caused him to lose sleep and appetite had finally appeared before his eyes. He fervently looked at Ling Chen, "Ling Tian!! I can't even describe how shocked I'm feeling right now! You've given me the best surprise of my whole life! I gave you such a difficult task, and did not have much hope in you completing it. However, I never expected that after only a few days, you actually completed it! No wonder you were the first person to leave Novice Village, the successor of the War God's power! You've created an inconceivable miracle!"

Countless expert guards had gone to Lonely Spirit Ridge in search of the Flaming Black Grass, and had never returned. Ling Chen was only a LV10 or so player, yet had brought back the Flaming Black Grass within a few days. Within his heart, the Mayor felt indescribable joy, as well as astonishment.

This young man who came from a different world, his future achievements were unlimited. Just from his ability to receive the War God's power, as well as his completing of a quest that even super experts could not complete, the Mayor was able to see that in future this man would become someone that ordinary people could only revel and marvel at from below. He believed that Ling Tian would be able to even reach the heights of the War God himself.

Knowing that Ling Tian would have such a future, the Mayor knew that he definitely couldn't risk offending him. He would help him as much as possible, so that he could rope in Ling Tian in future.

"These seven are all real Flaming Black Grass which I obtained at Lonely Spirit Ridge. I hope that Mr. Mayor will not ask me how I obtained them, because it's not something that I can disclose, and I don't want to lie to Mr. Mayor. Now, about the reward……"

"As long as you give me these Flaming Black Grass, I will definitely keep all the promises I made just then." The Azure Dragon's Mayor resolutely said.

"Then, can I make any request?" Ling Chen asked.

The Azure Dragon's Mayor nodded his head, then further explained, "But it must be within my power, otherwise even if I wanted to, I would have to disappoint you. It also can't be anything wicked or immoral. Otherwise, even if it costs my son's life, I will have to refuse."

Ling Chen laughed, "Relax, my request is very simple. It definitely wouldn't be anything malicious or immoral. It's something that Mr. Mayor can do very easily; all you have to do is say a few words."

"In that case, tell me what you want." Hearing Ling Chen's words, The Azure Dragon's Mayor let out a sigh of relief. He was worried that Ling Chen had some extravagant request in mind. If that were the case, he would be forced into a very awkward situation.

"It's very simple." Ling Chen moved his hand holding the Flaming Black Grass behind his back, then smiled and said, "In the Hall of Heroic Spirits, there are still ten remaining powers. All of these powers acknowledged me and were willing to accept me. My request is... let me enter the Hall of Heroic Spirits again, and take away five of the powers."

The Hall of Heroic Spirits still had ten pillars. After examining the pillars, Ling Chen found that in every pillar, there was a scroll... Evidently, those were the scrolls carrying the powers of the respective pillars. Only after a pillar acknowledged the challenger would the pillar disappear, allowing the challenger to retrieve the scroll. Afterwards, the scroll could be used to change

one’s class to the respective class inscribed on the scroll. However, the scroll could be saved to be used later. It could even be given to other people to use. As the challenger needed to be acknowledged by the pillar, not the scroll, the scroll could be given to anyone to use.

The remaining ten pillars had all acknowledged Ling Chen, and had even fought over him. Thus, if he received permission from the Mayor, he could take out the scrolls from the pillars, and give them to anyone he chose.

A powerful class was much more valuable than riches or equipment. The reason was because a powerful class could help the player until the end of the game, whereas equipment would become useless as better equipment was obtained.

Chapter 115 - Once Again Entering The Hall Of Heroic Spirits

“What!? Five powers from the Hall of Heroic Spirits?” The Azure Dragon’s Mayor was stupefied, and had almost started jumping up and down in rage. Although he was a well-mannered and well-tempered man, he couldn’t stop himself from bellowing at Ling Chen, “Are you kidding? I absolutely cannot agree to this! The Hall of Heroic Spirits is a sacred place-the most sacred place to all warriors of the Forgotten Continent! The powers there are from the strongest and most renowned heroes of the Forgotten Continent. Every power is waiting for the most suitable genius to claim them. Of course they can’t be casually taken away!! I don’t have the right to allow such a thing, and even if I did, I definitely wouldn’t agree, otherwise I would be betraying the wills of those ancestral heroes! It would be the most disrespectful and blasphemous thing I could do!!”

“Mmm, what Mr. Mayor says is true.” Ling Chen smiled, “Every type of power is waiting for the most suitable genius to claim them, and they decide who they want to belong to. Indeed, Mr. Mayor Is unable to make this decision for them. In that case, if they are willing to leave with me, then I’m sure Mr. Mayor wouldn’t mind, right?”

The Azure Dragon’s Mayor was momentarily shocked. In the past few days, he had already heard from the guardians of the Hall of Heroic Spirits what had happened on that day. He knew that when Ling Chen had appeared, all the pillars released an unprecedented strong light, and that the lights even seemed to fight with each other over him. If Ling Chen once again entered the Hall of Heroic Spirits, those powers would all acknowledge him again. Ling Chen

would be able to pick any pillar then transfer the power inside the pillar to the scroll. This was the easiest and most efficient way of transferring power. Once the power was inside the scroll, Ling Chen would be able to decide who received the power.

"Of course I would mind!" The Azure Dragon's Mayor shook his head, "Ling Tian, you've already been acknowledged, but the rules are the rules. Those who accept the Hall of Heroic Spirit's challenge can enter once, and only once. If someone is fortunate enough to be acknowledged by a power, they must use the scroll immediately, and cannot take it outside. Even if someone is acknowledged by more than one power, they can only choose one! These rules have never been broken in the past, and will never be changed!"

"There are no such things as unchangeable rules." Ling Chen calmly said, "The Hall of Heroic Spirits is within the Azure Dragon City, and you are the Mayor of the Azure Dragon City. I'm sure that you have the power to change this rule... all you need to do is say a few words."

"Absolutely not! That would be blasphemy to the Hall of Heroic Spirits! If I really did this, the Hall of Heroic Spirits would no longer be sacred anymore!" The Azure Dragon's Mayor resolutely refused, his voice not showing even a bit of weakness.

Ling Chen shrugged, his face indifferent, and said, "Alright then... Goodbye, Mr. Mayor."

Without a pause, Ling Chen gathered up the Flaming Black Grass and started to walk away.

Azure Dragon's Mayor stood frozen in his place. He never thought that Ling Chen would simply leave like this. If it was over any other matter, he would be able to remain calm and see who was tougher, him or Ling Chen. After all, if Ling Chen did not give him the Flaming Black Grass, he would not receive any rewards, and would instead have to suffer the consequences of failing the quest. If the Azure Dragon's Mayor adamantly refused, Ling Chen would have to compromise. However, this concerned the life of his son, so he was unable to remain calm at all... If this Ling Chen was really determined not to give him the Flaming Black Grass, his son would die without a doubt!

"Wait!!" The Azure Dragon's Mayor hurried caught up with Ling Chen and blocked the path in front of him. He frowned and said, "Ling Tian, you've already received the power of the War God. All of the remaining powers can't even compare to the War God's power, so what do you want so much power for?"

Ling Chen slowly said, "This doesn't concern Mr. Mayor. After all, I've already said that I have my own plans."

The Azure Dragon's Mayor forced himself to stay calm, and said, "Any other request, I can try to fulfil. I absolutely cannot grant this request."

"Then goodbye!" Ling Chen's body flashed, and he quickly sidestepped the Azure Dragon's Mayor's body and walked towards the exit.

“Wait… I’ll give you one million gold! Listen carefully, one million!”

“No need.”

“…… Then I’ll give you twenty Celestial grade equipment! Celestial grade equipment is priceless; you’ll be able to ride on everyone else’s heads.”

Ling Chen was unable to keep calm when he heard the offer of twenty Celestial grade equipment. At the moment, he only had two Celestial grade equipment. Finding more Celestial grade equipment would be extremely difficult. However, facing this type of temptation, Ling Chen maintained his poker face, and casually waved his hand, “Mr. Mayor, I still have business to attend to, so I really need to leave. Right now, I’m only interested in the power from the Hall of Heroic Spirits. If Mr. Mayor truly believes that his son’s life is worth less than his ‘principles’, then I have nothing to say to you. Goodbye.”

“Wait!!”

The Azure Dragon’s Mayor indeed did not disappoint Ling Chen. He once again blocked Ling Chen’s path and gritted his teeth. He finally spoke, “You need to first tell me what you need the powers for.”

“I want to give them to people who are important to me. I just want to help them as much as I can.”

Hearing his answer, the Azure Dragon's Mayor's face slightly relaxed, then said, "If it's like this... I can allow you to enter the Hall of Heroic Spirits again... but you can only take away one type of power! One!"

Ling Chen laughed in his head. His request of five types of power was simply too ridiculous, and he did not at all believe that the Azure Dragon's Mayor would agree. He simply started off with an outrageous request so that bargaining would become easier later. Being able to take away even one type of power would already be enough for Ling Chen. The powers in the Hall of Heroic Spirits were all left behind by godly experts from the Forgotten Continent. On average, it would take one hundred years for a single person worthy of a power to appear. These powers were priceless. Being able to receive the War God's power, as well as another type of power would be an extremely large gain.

However, although he was satisfied with one type of power, how could he not continue bargaining? He calmly replied, "One? Mr. Mayor, this is a bit too far from my original proposal... Forget it, five types of powers is truly a bit too much to ask for, so what about three types of power? Surely this is reasonable."

"Two! This is my last offer. If this is not enough for you, then even if I can't obtain the Flaming Black Grass, I still won't compromise any further." The Azure Dragon's Mayor gnashed his teeth as his face darkened.

Ling Chen struggled to control himself from laughing out loud.

Ling Chen had already decided that if the Azure Dragon's Mayor

refused, he would just take one type of power. He never thought that the Azure Dragon's Mayor would offer him two instead... it seemed that starting at five was the right decision! If he started off by asking for two or three, maybe he would have been able to take away only one type of power.

Ling Chen controlled himself from allowing his happiness to show on his face, and instead put on a conflicted and hesitant expression. After more than half a minute (deliberately made it longer, not a typo) , he released a sigh and said, "Alright, I won't push Mr. Mayor any further, let's settle with two."

After speaking, he directly placed the Flaming Black Grass into the Azure Dragon's Mayor's hand.

Ling Chen's 'compromise' allowed the Azure Dragon's Mayor to release a breath of relief. With the Flaming Black Grass in his hand, the anger that he had kept bottled up immediately vanished. He carefully held the Flaming Black Grass in his hand, and curiously asked Ling Chen, "You just secured an outrageous deal. Aren't you afraid that, by giving me the Flaming Black Grass now, I might change my mind?"

"I believe that the honourable Mayor of the Azure Dragon City wouldn't be a liar. The things I said before must have angered Mr. Mayor. Trying to secure one's interests is something that people do naturally, so I hope that Mr. Mayor won't hold that against me. To be honest, even if Mr. Mayor was unwilling to grant my request, before exiting, I still would have given Mr. Mayor the Flaming Black Grass." Ling Chen said as he smiled. His words were so charming and beautifully said that whether they were true or false,

only Ling Chen himself knew.

The Azure Dragon's Mayor looked at Ling Chen, then gently smiled and nodded his head, "Not only do you have terrifying talent and unfathomable power, you also know when you should say what. What you have bargained for today rightly belongs to you, I don't have the right to hold that against you. Instead, I only have gratitude towards you for bringing back the Flaming Black Grass. You can go to the Hall of Heroic Spirits to claim your reward. As for the guardians over there, I'll let them know."

"Ding... You have completed the secret quest 'Looking for Flaming Black Grass', EXP +5000, Fame +100, SP +100. In future, minor violations of city laws will not be punished. Every day you are permitted to kill a maximum of five people (limited to players) without being arrested. Unless your Crime Points are lower than -50, you will not be arrested when entering Azure Dragon City. Hidden reward: Azure Dragon's Mayor's favourability towards you has greatly increased. From now on, you may ask him for help when in Azure Dragon City. Bonus reward: you may proceed to the Hall of Heroic Spirits and retrieve two types of power."

This quest was truly worthy of its status as a secret quest. Just those 100 SP was already something that would satisfy most people. Ling Chen immediately bid farewell to the Azure Dragon's Mayor, and directly headed to the Hall of Heroic Spirits.

Since the Hall of Heroic Spirits had been established, apart from the guardians and managers, Ling Chen was the first person to enter twice. After entering the Hall of Heroic Spirits, the first person he saw was the cold black-clothed guardian. The black-

clothed guardian gave him a glance, and said, “Mr. Mayor has already told me about your situation. The powers within these ten pillars, you are allowed to take away two. Take your pick.”

After speaking, he no longer took notice of Ling Chen. He had guarded the Hall of Heroic Spirits for many years, and this was the first time he had seen such a violation of the Hall of Heroic Spirits’ rules. However, these were the Azure Dragon’s Mayor’s orders, so he could do nothing about it.

Ling Chen walked over to the ten pillars. He did not walk over to the first pillar, and look at each of the pillars in order. Instead, he directly walked over to the fifth pillar. On the way here, he had already decided which ones to pick.

Chapter 116 - Yun Meng Xin (1)

The fifth pillar was inscribed with two words-Fairy Priest.

Ling Chen stood in front of this pillar and pressed his hands onto it. Immediately, a faint green light flashed and the pillar shattered. After the pillar vanished, a scroll floating within a circle of green light appeared. Ling Chen reached out and retrieved the scroll.

> [Profession Scroll – Fairy Priest]: Profession class change scroll, Usage conditions: Level over LV10, after use can change class to the beautiful, flying Fairy Priest class. After changing to this profession one will have incredibly strong healing power and party buffs. Fairy Priests use the power of nature to launch attacks against their enemies. If one changes to the Fairy Priest profession, when meeting with the Fairy Clan, the Fairy Clan will treat them with favourability and trust.

The reason Ling Chen immediately chose this profession was not because it was a powerful class in terms of offense. Because the Fairy Priest's description was not very detailed, it was difficult for Ling Chen to see if it was a powerful class or not. Moreover, no matter how strong a Fairy Priest was, they would still be a support, unable to deal much damage by themselves. There was only one reason for Ling Chen choosing the Fairy Priest class... it was because Ling Shui Ruo, who was still in novice village, had chosen the Priest class. Of course, Ling Shui Ruo had chosen the Priest class so she could help him. But honestly, the current powerful Ling Chen didn't need any help at all. Moreover, his strongest skill, Soul Sacrifice, forced his HP to remain in a critical condition.

However, since Shui Ruo had chosen this profession, he would not discourage her, and would use any method to give her an advantage over other Priests.

After taking the Fairy Priest scroll, Ling Chen walked a few steps to his left, and stopped in front of the fourth pillar. He unhesitatingly touched the shining pillar with his hands.

A gentle shattering sound came from the pillar as it broke into pieces. After it disappeared, scroll appeared in front of Ling Chen. He immediately took it into his hands.

> [Profession Scroll – Phantasmal Bladedancer] Profession class change scroll, Usage conditions: Level over LV10, after use can change class to the special class [Phantasmal Bladedancer]. This profession dual-wields two swords. The swords can be either one-handed or two-handed. If two swords that are exactly the same are used, the offense power will be greatly increased, resulting in a deadly blade dance with unparalleled power and might.

Phantasmal Bladedancer and Fairy Priest, these were Ling Chen's choices. Fairy Priest was purely chosen for Shui Ruo, while Ling Chen chose Phantasmal Bladedancer because in his opinion, it was the strongest class out of the ten remaining pillars. It also had an incredibly strong passive ability. Ling Chen's Gemini Orb allowed him to use two two-handed weapons at the same time, so he knew just how overpowered being able to dual-wield two-handed weapons was. Although the Phantasmal Bladedancer class wouldn't allow the user to stack the stats of the weapons, being

able to dual-wield two weapons was equivalent to two people attacking at once. Moreover, being able to use two weapons could deal with a lot of situations that would be incredibly difficult with a single weapon. Thus, Ling Chen chose this class. As for who he would give the scroll to, that was yet to be decided.

"You've already chosen two types of power, please leave."

A cold voice came from behind Ling Chen. Ling Chen repressed his greed and decided not to try to take any other scrolls... He knew that if he tried to do that, the guardian behind him would immediately execute him. He turned around, gave the black-clothed guardian a nod, then exited the Hall of Heroic Spirits.

Now, he was in possession of three Class Change Scrolls. They were: Wind Spirit Marksman, Fairy Priest and Phantasmal Bladedancer.

These three scrolls were undeniably priceless treasures. Based on his experience in other games in the past, out of the hundreds of millions of players, by the late-game period, only about twenty people would have a special profession. However, right now Ling Chen already had three of these special scrolls... adding on his own profession, there were four in his possession!

Ling Chen was confident in his own abilities. Even before he entered the world of Mystic Moon, he believed that he would become a powerful and influential player. However, he did not expect that within ten days, he would gather such powerful equipment, pets and stats. The turning point for him was when he had fallen from Wolf's Cliff.

Ling Chen felt that ever since he had obtained the Lunar Scourge, he had risen above the existence of a simple ‘player’. After leaving the Hall of Heroic Spirits, Ling Chen took a look at the time, then used an Amity Town Return Scroll to teleport to Amity Town.

The sky above Amity Town was still covered by an unnatural darkness. The town was a lot more peaceful than when Ling Chen had first visited. Evidently, most people were still trying to work out what had happened at Lonely Spirit Ridge. Ling Chen did not stop in the town, and instead called out the Cloud Stepping Mare, and quickly rode towards the east. His target destination of course was not Lonely Spirit Ridge, but rather the place where he had first encountered the Lucky Cat.

After arriving at the place in his memories, Ling Chen immediately saw the two giant rocks embedded in the ground. Jumping down from the Cloud Stepping Mare, he made sure that there was no one around. Ling Chen ran to where the two giant rocks met and squatted down.

The Mysterious Red Sun Gold was still buried in the ground without any signs of being touched or moved. Ling Chen gave a small sigh of relief, and brushed away the layer of dirt on top. Immediately, a splendorous golden light shone out in front of Ling Chen. He took out a broken spatula that he had bought from Qian Gun Gun, and dug at the ground containing the Mysterious Red Sun Gold... he had bought these broken spatulas with a lot of gold, so they had better be effective!

The process was far easier than Ling Chen had expected. As soon

as the broken spatula touched the ground surrounding the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, a strange grey gas came out of it. The grey gas surrounded the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, and easily separated the Mysterious Red Sun Gold from the ground around it.

"Ding... After being dug out by you, the Mysterious Red Sun Gold has been separated from its surrounding environment. It can now be picked up."

It was this easy? Ling Chen was completely shocked. He didn't even make a single digging motion, and did not have a single bit of skill in mining. However, this 'top grade mrysl' as described by Qi Yue had been retrieved incredibly easily!

This piece of Mysterious Red Sun Gold was about the size of a soccer ball, and was twenty to thirty kilograms in weight. Ling Chen reached out with his hand and easily picked up the piece of Mysterious Red Sun Gold and put it into his bag. Suddenly, he felt that spending 5000 gold to buy this broken spatula was an incredibly good deal. The value of this piece of Mysterious Red Sun Gold was certainly worth more than 5000 gold by many, many times.

After obtaining the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, all Ling Chen had to do now was find someone who could use this Mysterious Red Sun Gold to make some equipment. However, he knew that finding someone who could use this Mysterious Red Sun Gold to forge equipment would be much harder than finding the Mysterious Red Sun Gold itself.

"I really hope I can meet someone with this type of ability." Ling

Chen thought in his mind. He ran back towards Azure Dragon City, heading towards the largest food plaza in Azure Dragon City.

The Azure Dragon City's Food Plaza sold many different types of delicious delicacies. Most of the types of food didn't even exist in the real world. However, the prices for many of these dishes were extremely high, and it was still the early-game when most players were still quite poor. Thus, there were barely any players who were willing to waste their hard-earned gold on treating their mouths. Most of the players here were "non-combatant" players who wanted to change to a "primary class".

The Head Chef in the Food Plaza was the NPC who was in charge of helping players change to the primary class of Chef. He had a big round head and a large potbelly. From afar, one could almost mistake him for a pig wearing clothes. Ling Chen walked up to him, and politely greeted him, "Hello, Head Chef."

"Oh, hello, young traveller from another world. Do you want to become a great Chef? Ohohoho, you have very good 'taste' [TLN: ?]. The Chef class is a glorious class-an excellent chef can not only create heavenly and delicious dishes, but can also make food that can permanently increase stats! Chefs who have reached the pinnacle will not only have riches that rival those of a country's, but will also have the status and fame that will rival those of a combatant player at the pinnacle. So, do you want to become a great Chef?"

Ling Chen shook his head, "Head Chef, you've misunderstood. I didn't come here to become a Chef."

The fatty's excited expression immediately disappeared. He said, "You don't want to become a chef? Then why the heck did you come here? If you want to buy any food then please line up over there."

"I just had something I wanted to ask you." Ling Chen walked forwards as he took out the "Handsome Pan", "Could you tell me the history of this pan?"

"Hm?" The fatty smiled, and took the Handsome Pan into his hands. He looked at it and felt the weight of it in his hands, and said with a serious tone, "From the weight and texture of this pan, it should have been made with solid steel. Hmm, not bad, not bad. Most novice Chefs only have very ordinary pans. Young man, I'm very surprised that you have such a good pan. It's worth at least 60 gold. Looks like you have a very good affinity with the Chef class. What do you say, young man? Are you sure you don't want to become a Chef?"

Solid steel? 60 gold?

This pan that the Lucky Cat had in its possession was only worth 60 gold? Ling Chen refused to believe this... just based on the pan's name, Ling Chen could not accept that it was worth a measly 60 gold! It seemed that even the Head Chef did not know the history of this pan. Ling Chen hurriedly took the Handsome Pan back, refused the Head Chef's offer, then left the Food Plaza.

"Sigh, what a short-sighted young man. Fighting all those life-and-death battles, how very un-peaceful. It's much better being a Chef, living in safety." Watching Ling Chen leave, the fat Chef

gave a sigh of disappointment. He scratched his chin, then murmured to himself, “Hm, that pan just then was called the Handsome Pan or something like that? It sounds a bit familiar. What was that legendary pan called again…?”

As he left the Food Plaza, it had already become early morning. Ling Chen did not stop anywhere, and logged out.

As soon as he logged on a few hours later, the system intercom sounded out.

“Ling Chen, can you hear me?” It was Yun Feng.

“What is it?”

“Do you have any time today? I should introduce you to my little sister. That’s right, all of Heart’s Dream Studio’s members have all advanced to Azure Dragon City. Heart’s Dream is currently renting a small house in the northern region of Azure Dragon City as its headquarters. Apart from you, all of the other members of ‘Heart’s Dream’ are also over there right now. Do you want to come over?”

Ling Chen thought for a while, then answered, “Where are you right now? Take me to see her.”

Chapter 117 - Yun Meng Xin (2)

At the Azure Dragon City Arena, Ling Chen met with Yun Feng.

The Arena was a place for players to legally PK. It was used for practicing one's skills, as well as settling disputes between individuals or groups. Any deaths caused in the Arena would not be punished.

Yun Feng was dressed in warrior equipment, his chestpiece released a faint silver glow that caused many other players to look at him with admiration and envy. Silver grade equipment, in this current stage of the game, were luxury items among luxury items. Up until now, most people had not even seen Silver grade equipment yet. Standing at the entrance of the Arena, Yun Feng unceasingly looked around until his gaze finally fell on a person wearing an ordinary tiger mask walking towards him. His eyes lit up, and went over to meet him.

Although Yun Feng was unable to see the other person's face, the choking pressure that he gave off definitely wasn't something that could come from an ordinary person.

"Ling Chen?" Yun Feng walked over, and quietly whispered.

Ling Chen slightly nodded his head and looked at Yun Feng. Although they had not seen each other for many days, Yun Feng was the same as always. He seemed to be permanently energetic, his eyes seemed to flash now and then. The equipment he was wearing on his body also proved that he wasn't just some normal

player. “Why did you pick ‘Huan Mie’ for your name?” [TLN: Huan Mie= Disillusion]

Once Ling Chen had spoken, Yun Feng knew that he had recognised the right person. His eyes lit up, and he excited began to speak, “Names aren’t important! I finally met up with you!! Did you know, right now you’ve already become a legendary player. There’s no one in the whole world who doesn’t know your name!! The first person in the world to leave Novice Village, as well as owns two Celestial grade equipment… and Celestial grade and Heaven’s End grade pets! Although it’s only been a few days, but your fame has surpassed even the ‘Sword Emperor’ and ‘Shinigami’! No less than what I expected from someone who was able to fight on even grounds with Eve! If you played like this in other games in the past, players like Sword Emperor and Shinigami would be nothing compared to you!”

Yun Feng immediately let out a stream of flattery. See the light in Yun Feng’s eyes, not a single word that came out of Yun Feng’s mouth was a lie. After Ling Chen had entered the Mystic Moon world, he had again and again shaken the entire game world. Yun Feng originally believed that Ling Chen would be able to put on a shocking performance. However, his deeds to date were much greater than just ‘shocking’, they completely exceeded any expectations and hopes that he had. Even though he knew how overpowered Ling Chen was, he had still been left completely amazed by Ling Chen. This was even more so for the other players.

Yun Feng became more and more convinced that risking his life in the blistering heat that day to pick up his little sister’s gaming equipment was potentially the best decision he had made in his entire life. That day, he had fatefully encountered Ling Chen, and

they had made their ‘deal’. Whenever he had heard system announcements about Ling Chen’s accomplishments, he had been shocked, as well as increasingly happy for his little sister. He believed that with Ling Chen’s help, his little sister would definitely be able to win her incredibly difficult bet… and even if she couldn’t win the bet, making a friend like Ling Chen was still a very good deal.

“Right!! The whole world knows that you have a Heaven’s End pet! Can you let me see it? A Heaven’s End pet!! I’ve never seen one in my whole life. Hm… if it’s not convenient for you, can you at least let me see its stats??”

“… Let’s go see your little sister first. We can talk about other things later.” Ling Chen intentionally avoided his desperate gaze.

As there currently was no method of exchanging Mystic Moon currency for real world money and vice versa, the rich bigwigs were not able to show off their power yet. There was not an official Guild Alliance yet, because there were not any official Guilds yet. There were two things that were currently missing. The first was the lack of funds and resources. The second were the Guild Creation Tokens.

A Guild could only be created if the founder possessed the Guild Creation Token, as well as had more than 1000 fame points. However, Guild Creation Tokens could only be dropped from Lord Bosses that were higher than LV10, and had an extremely low drop rate. Up until now, no one had found a Guild Creation Token yet. The Money Exchange System was sure to be created sooner or later. What the big bosses of Guilds in other games wanted the

most right now were not rare equipment or rare pets, but rather a Guild Creation Token.

Whoever could obtain the first Guild Creation Token could create the first Guild. Even if this Guild had never been heard of before, it would immediately become known across all of China, which would have very positive impacts on its future growth.

“Alright, we’re here. Let’s go in.”

After walking for a long time, they had reached the residential area in the city’s northern region. They had stopped in front of a very ordinary looking house.

Because of the lack of gold to purchase a large office or hall, many players and Guilds temporarily rented residential houses as their headquarters. The soon to be established “Heart’s Dream” was one of these Guilds. The Guild Ling Chen was about to join was a Guild that could be said to have started from nothing, a Guild that could be at best described as ‘bite sized’. Its first headquarters was in a simple rented house. The house was very small and was in a very remote location. As such, it costed about 100 gold per day... however, 100 gold was no small amount of money.

This house had only one room. The design of the house and its location were also very unimpressive. There was only one entrance to the house, and above it hung a wooden sign. On the sign, there were two big words painted on....

Heart’s Dream.

At this moment in time, no would guess that this shabby little house would later become a ‘sacred place’ to both players and even residents of the Forgotten Continent. This is because this was where the “Heart’s Dream” of the legends was founded, the Heart’s Dream that shook the entire Mystic Moon world. It was a place filled with the hopes and wishes of a few naïve girls who would stand at the peak of the Mystic Moon world.

“Hehe, I haven’t told the girls who our new ‘mysterious member’ is. If they knew that the new member I was bringing today was ‘Ling Tian’, they would start screaming their heads off!” Yun Feng grinned widely, and was looking forward to seeing the reactions of the girls inside.

Before they knocked and entered, Ling Chen thought for a moment and asked, “How many members does Heart’s Dream have right now?”

“This…” Yun Feng embarrassedly scratched his head, and replied, “Including you… five. Because of my relationship with my dad, I can’t directly help Heart’s Dream, so I can’t join as a member either.”

Ling Chen: “……..”

“Players have only just begun to enter Azure Dragon City, everything is just starting! Trust me, when the Money Exchange System opens, we’ll have enough money. At that time, we’ll be able to start recruiting people. Although Heart’s Dream hasn’t

officially become a Guild yet, and does not have any fame, once my little sister appears, there will be people lining up to join our Guild. Why? Hehe, once you see my little sister, you'll understand." Yun Feng confidently said.

"....So that means, apart from your little sister and myself, there are three other members in Heart's Guild. Who are these three people?" Ling Chen asked.

"Well," Yun Feng's face revealed a mysterious smile. He pointed towards the tightly closed door, "Go in and you'll know. I'll bet you anything that you'll definitely like those three people... Heh, as long as you're a man, you'll like them. Also, I promise that you definitely won't regret joining 'Heart's Dream'."

Ling Chen suspiciously looked at Yun Feng, then walked towards the little house. "thud, thud" Yun Feng knocked on the door, "Open up, it's me."

In this virtual reality world, the residences of players were very secure. Unless the owner gave permission, it would be completely impossible for an outsider to enter... unless you had a weapon with a 'destruction' status effect that could destroy doors. However, the appearance of these weapons was as rare as a meteor colliding with the earth.

The door quickly opened. In the virtual reality world, whether it was doors or gates, they could be opened with a "permission to enter" command, even if the owner of the residence was not physically in front of the door or gate.

“Big brother Yun Feng!”

As the door opened, the light from outside fell on two girls inside the room, which was accompanied by an extremely delightful and melodious shout that was pleasant to the ears. There were two people in the room, two girls who looked surprisingly young. Ling Chen looked at the two girls, and immediately understood why Yun Feng had said that he would definitely like the other members of Heart’s Dream.

These two girls were exquisitely pretty, even more so than Shui Ruo.

The girl on the right who had just shouted out Yun Feng’s name looked about sixteen or seventeen. She had snow white skin and full, red lips. Beneath her dark eyebrows were eyes that sparkled like diamonds. She had a lively and youthful charm. She wore a light blue Elementalist robe, which fitted tightly around her body and showed off her curves. Although it was a very ordinary Mage robe, it looked very elegant on the girl. Although she was only sixteen or seventeen years old, she had an incredibly developed body. Even without doing anything suggestive, she was still able to arouse the interests of men.

The girl on the left was even smaller, and looked about fifteen or sixteen years old. Ling Chen’s gaze rested on her for a long time before looking away. This girl’s eyes were crystal clear like spring water, and were extremely attractive. Her gentle looking face, coupled with her cherry red lips made her seem extremely mellow and cute. Although she was quite young, her beauty was able to

move nations. No matter who looked at her, they would find themselves unable to look away, deeply attracted to her beauty.

So these two girls would be his future companions...

Chapter 118 - Yun Meng Xin (3)

“Big brother Yun Feng, you came back so quickly.” The beautiful girl wearing the blue Elementalist robe walked over. As she drew nearer, a slight chill could be felt from her... evidently, this girl was a Water Elementalist. She curiously looked at Ling Chen, “Is he the new member of our Heart’s Dream?”

“Mhmm!” Yun Feng nodded his head, then glanced at Ling Chen to look at his reaction towards these two incomparable beauties. Most people looking at these two girls would become entranced and would be unable to look away. However, Ling Chen was wearing a mask, so Yun Feng was unable to see his facial expressions. Ling Chen turned his head, and asked, “Where’s Meng Xin? Why isn’t she here?”

“Big sisters Meng Xin and Bing Yao went out to attend to some business, but they should be back soon. Big brother Yun Feng, you still haven’t introduced our new member... Welcome to Heart’s Dream big brother! Big brother Yun Feng brought you here, so I’m sure you’re very powerful right? My name is Xiao Qi, but you can call me Qi Qi. What’s your name?” The girl’s crystal clear eyes shone. She unhesitatingly introduced herself with her real name. From this, Ling Chen could tell that this girl was bubbly and lively, and was not the type to scheme or backstab. It was also a display of her trust for Yun Feng.

“My name is Su’Er, you can call me Su Su. Wel... welcome to Heart’s Dream.”

The petite and gentle girl stood next to Xiao Qi, her lips slightly

parting as she introduced herself. Her voice was clear and gentle as a breeze, and her head was lowered as she spoke. She was too shy to look at Ling Chen in the eyes. After only saying a few words, she had already started to blush. Her shyness caused her to look extraordinarily cute, and Ling Chen felt his heart begin to beat faster.

Facing these two incredible beauties, Ling Chen gently smiled... being able to meet two beautiful girls like this was something most men could only dream of. He was just about to speak, but Yun Feng had already shouted out, “Hehe! This person who I, Yun Feng, have brought is not some nobody. As for his name... I’ll give you two some time to prepare yourselves, otherwise I might scare the wits out of you.”

Xiao Qi’s eyebrows raised, and her lips curved upwards, “Eh? Big brother Yun Feng’s boasting again! Xiao Qi isn’t a scaredy cat who has never seen a famous or powerful person before! My big brother’s even on the Heaven Rankings! Could he be even stronger than my brother?”

Her brother was an expert on the Heaven Ranking? Ling Chen gazed at her again, and looked at her in-game name (IGN) above her head.

Cute Qi Qi.

The girl called Su’Er’s IGN was even more simple, only two characters... Su Su.

Anyone on the Heaven and Earth Rankings was someone whose name resounded across all of China. If someone from the Heaven Rankings appeared in public, they would instantly swarmed over by the crowds like a celebrity. This was not unexpected, as the players who were able to squeeze into the Top Ten out of hundreds of millions of players were literally one-in-a-million geniuses.

"Hmph!" Yun Feng disdainfully wrinkled his nose, and replied, "The experts on the Heaven Rankings are indeed very strong. Although he isn't on the Heaven Rankings, he's stronger than anyone on there."

Xiao Qi looked at him for a few seconds, then replied, "You're boasting!"

Even the little Su'Er next to her slightly raised her head, her face revealing an expression of disbelief. The only people standing at the peak of the mountain of other players could enter the Heaven Rankings. The people who were listed on the Heaven Rankings were all legendary experts, so it was natural that anyone hearing the words "stronger than anyone on the Heaven Rankings" would be in disbelief.

"Really now?" Yun Feng chuckled, "Then you tell me. Who's the strongest player in China right now?"

"Of course it's [Yan Huang Alliance]'s 'Sword Emperor' or [The Dark Night]'s 'Shinigami'!" Xiao Qi unhesitatingly replied. This was common knowledge in China. One was the battle emperor who had never lost against anyone apart from Eve, one was the Shinigami who easily ended the lives of countless people in the

darkness. These were two people had been acknowledged by everyone in China to be the two strongest players. Moreover, these two players were respectively part of two of the three biggest Guilds in China. The Sword Emperor was [Yan Huang Alliance]'s General, and was only below the Guildmaster. Shinigami was [The Dark Night]'s Guildmaster, a Guild whose name struck fear into the hearts of everyone who heard it.

"Eh... you mean... he's the Sword Emperor? No way, no way! The Sword Emperor definitely wouldn't help big sister Meng Xin. Could he be 'Shinigami'?" Xiao Qi shouted.

"NO, NO!" Yun Feng emphatically said as he wagged his finger. He smiled, "The Sword Emperor and Shinigami are both very strong, and are respectively ranked as Number 1 and Number 2 on the Heaven Rankings. However, that was all in the past. Have a think, in Mystic Moon, who was the first to leave Novice Village, and has single-handedly occupied the Equipment Ranking and Pet Ranking? "

"Of course it's Ling Tian! Who doesn't know this? Right?"

Xiao Qi immediately realised and her adorable eyes widened. She pointed towards Ling Chen, and weakly asked Yun Feng, "Big brother Yun Feng... could he be....."

"My name is Ling Tian." Ling Chen had been waiting for an opportunity to speak for a long time. After he had spoken, his IGN revealed itself above his head.

“Waaah!!”

Seeing the two words “Ling Tian” above his head, Xiao Qi and Su’Er both let out fangirl cries. Xiao Qi’s gaze was completely focused on Ling Chen. Her gaze was filled with curiosity, passion, excitement and disbelief, as if she was looking at an extremely rare animal. Even the quiet Su’Er raised her head and secretly glanced at Ling Chen, her eyes fixed on the words flashing above his head.

“Ling Tian… you’re that Ling Tian! The first person in the whole world to walk out of Novice Village, equipped with two Celestial grade equipment, a Celestial grade pet and a Heaven’s End grade pet! Ohmygod! I actually got to see you in person!”

Xiao Qi’s curiosity, as well as her personality as the fangirling type caused her to become incredibly excited. This person had again and again shaken the gaming world, and was someone who overshadowed even the Sword Emperor and Shinigami… Plus, he was now a member of “Heart’s Dream”, and would be her guildmate in future. She almost could not contain her excitement. She was not very worried about whether he was a good person or a bad person because she believed that the person Yun Feng brought would not be a bad person. Xiao Qi was like a curious baby who was fixated on Ling Chen. The pitch at which she was speaking rose with each word she spoke.

Yun Feng was very pleased as he replied, “That’s right! He’s that Ling Tian! What do you think, I didn’t trick you guys right! He’s far stronger than the Sword Emperor or the Shinigami!”

“That’s not necessarily true.” Xiao Qi was not convinced.

However, her eyes seemed to glow with the light of many small stars, “Although, big brother Ling Tian, you’re really so strong! How did you get these Celestial grade equipment? Did you have to kill a lot of super, super strong Bosses? My big brother is really strong, but he only has two Silver grade equipment! And, and, I heard you have a Celestial grade pet and a Heaven’s End pet, is this true? Ahh of course it’s true! The Pet Ranking Chart wouldn’t be wrong! Can you show us? Pleeeease? I really want to see a Celestial grade and Heaven’s grade pets! And, and, my big brother said that in Novice Village, you beat thirty people by yourself and beat a LV10 Gold rank BOSS. Even he said that you’re a scary person. He’s still trying to find you to meet with you again! So awesome! I actually got to meet the Ling Tian from the legends. If my girlfriends knew about this, they would be jealous to death... And, and, why are you wearing that mask. Quickly take it off so we can see what you look like. We’re going to be guildmates from now on, so you don’t need to wear that mask around us....”

Xiao Qi rapidly fired off a series of questions and exclamations, which caused Ling Chen to feel a bit dizzy... there were only a few sentences that really registered in his mind. Her big brother was in the Heaven Ranking and had seen him destroying thirty players in Novice Villag... there was only one person who he had met in his Novice Village who was in the Heaven Ranking.

The Cold Magistrate, Xiao Qiu Feng.

This girl called Xiao Qi was also surnamed Xiao... she was Xiao Qiu Feng’s little sister!?

That means, she was the ‘Princess’ of the Battle Alliance?

She had such an impressive background, so why did she want to join such an unimpressive, almost futureless “Heart’s Dream”?

“Big brother, you’re here.”

Ling Chen was just about to reply to all of the curious Xiao Qi’s questions, a voice gentle as smoke came from behind him. This voice caused Ling Chen to soul to flutter, and created ripples in his heart... The sound of the girl’s voice was incredibly beautiful-the tone of her voice and the pitch were both extremely beautiful to the point that it could not be described. In that instant, Ling Chen concluded that this voice was the most beautiful voice he had ever heard in his entire life. This incredible voice caused Ling Chen to suddenly have an intense desire to see what the owner of this voce looked like. As if his body was being controlled, Ling Chen immediately turned around, and saw a slim and gentle figure.

The girl was wearing an icy-white silk veil. This sort of veil was provided at the item store to female players for free. The veil covered the girl’s features, but parts of her face still remained uncovered. Her skin was as flawless as white jade, and her figure was simply breathtaking and unforgettable. Under her long, white skirt revealed a pair of slim, long and delicate legs. Even as she casually stood there, her body emitted an other-worldly aura of pride. Her lustrous dark hair cascaded like a waterfall, covering her beautiful white skin.

The instant Ling Chen turned to look at her, she also turned to look at him. Looking out from inside the slightly dark room towards the bright outdoors, it appeared that the girl was bathed

in a warm light. This “aura” around her made her look even more beautiful and dreamlike, to the point that even the goddesses in various legends could not compare. Ling Chen was momentarily frozen by her heavenly beauty. In his mind appeared two words, “beautiful goddess”.

Although she had not revealed her face, just based on her voice, aura and figure, it was already obvious that she was incredibly beautiful.

She… was she Yun Feng’s little sister, Yun Meng Xin?

Chapter 119 - Working Together

“Big sister Meng Xin, you’re finally back!” Xiao Qi dashed towards Meng Xin like a bird, joyously grabbing on to her arm. Xiao Qi’s eyes quickly glanced back at Ling Chen, “Look, look, he is the new member that big brother Yun Feng found… can you guess who he is? Hehe, If I tell you, you will definitely be surprised!”

So this was Yun Meng Xin? Hearing her name from Xiao Qi, Ling Chen’s gaze shook slightly. She was the reason why he entered the game world and found himself a goal to fight towards. Eventually, it was also because of her, that Ling Shui Ruo could escape from the dreadful monster, Isrock Disease. Despite that this was his first time seeing this girl, deep down in Ling Chen’s heart, there was always a touch of gratitude towards her, as well as a slight hint of admiration and recognition for her undying determination. Meeting her for the first time, Ling Chen soon realised why she would be in the place where she was today.

Being a family that even the Yun family financial group, that was second-ranked in China, wanted to get close with, this family must have incredible background, power and connections. As for the heir of the family falling for Yun Meng Xin, that was something completely ordinary and normal. Even though she hadn’t revealed her face yet, her calm temperament, graceful demeanor and ethereal voice showed beyond doubt that she must have the face of a goddess. All of these things made it very easy for men to become infatuated with her. Covering up her face before going out… was probably something that she had long become accustomed to. Otherwise, wherever she went, she would always become the focus of many unwanted gazes, which may even lead to some unnecessary troubles.

Even for Ling Chen, suddenly seeing her caused him to momentarily blank out.

She looked towards Ling Chen and their eyes met. Behind the veil, Ling Chen saw the ripples in her eyes. The corner of her rosy lips softly lifted into a graceful curve... she spoke with a seeming smile, “It’s Ling Tian, right?”

The sound of her dreamy voice was almost unreal. It was as if the melodious sounds of heaven were gliding out of her mouth. Even if she was unbearably hideous, her voice alone would be enough to bewitch countless men to fall for her. But her words made Ling Chen, Yun Feng, Xiao Qi and Su’Er startled.

“Ah?” Xiao Qi’s jaws dropped, her face full of surprise, “Big sister Meng Xin, how did you know? Did Big brother Yun Feng tell you already?”

“No, no, of course I didn’t!” Yun Feng quickly shook his head, he looked even more surprised than Xiao Qi. His eyes popped, with astonishment all over his face, “I haven’t told anyone about this! Meng Xin, h-h-how did you know that he is Ling Tian?”

He then turned around and looked above Ling Tian’s head... earlier his IGN was displaying, but it had quickly disappeared. Yun Meng Xin could not have seen his name... then how come she knew that he was Ling Tian? Was it possible that they’ve met before?

Under the veil, her smile softened, “So it is Ling Tian...”

“You’ve seen me before?” Ling Cheng asked, looking at her with a touch more interest. He was now well known by all players as a legendary character, even the mere mentioning of his name could easily shock a crowd… like just then, after hearing his name, Xiao Qi almost jumped through the roof out of excitement. Even Su’Er, who was usually as quiet as a kitten, couldn’t hide away the surprised look on her face. But standing in front of him, Yun Meng Xin did not scream out his name. There were no emotions on her face except for that faintly curved smile, statue-still as a ripple-less puddle. Besides, he is certain that he had never seen this girl before-her temperament and demeanor were things that he would remember for a lifetime… So, how come she knew that he was Ling Tian?

“No.” Meng Yun Xin gently shook her head and smiled, “Actually, I just guessed it.”

“Ah?” Xiao Qi’s jaws dropped again, swinging Yun Meng Xin’s arm back and forth, “You guessed it? But what made you think that it was him? If it was me, I would never think that he would join Heart’s Dream.”

“You really guessed it… b-but Meng Xin, how did you guess that?” Yun Feng scratched his head, baffled. He hadn’t told her who was the helper that he recruited. He was planning on to surprise her so that she could be truly happy for once. But before he could’ve introduced them, she instantly called out Ling Tian’s name.

Yun Meng Xin smiled softly, gracefully stepped into this tightly

spaced room and closed the door behind. The motions of her body were swift and elegant; each and every step she took was an absolute pleasure to watch. She was like God's favourite child- everything about her absolutely perfect... except that, she could never be in charge of her own fate. "To be honest, it was an easy guess. It was the day when big brother brought back my game bracelet, he told me with excitement that he had found someone who was able to aid me. I hadn't seen him be so exuberant for a long time. I thought that the helper must be someone very powerful and that big brother trusted him or her a lot. Later on, big brother brought up 'this person' to me numerous times, and every time he mentioned him, he would always speak with admiration in his voice. I grew up with big brother, and with him being such a pretentious person, I never thought that one day he would ever be looking up to someone. Even if it was the most powerful 'Sword Emperor, big brother never truly respected him, and was convinced that he will one day surpass him.

"What really aroused my suspicions was that this morning, whilst I was practicing with big brother, we heard that on the Pet Ranking Announcements that Ling Tian got the Heaven's End grade pet. Big brother was so surprised, but at the same time he seemed very excited, as if he was the one who got the Heaven's End pet. So I thought that Ling Tian might be the person big brother was talking about. Being such powerful person, that in just a few days, he took over the limelight and made every player remember his name."

"Also, I know that the person who Qi Qi admires the most is her big brother. However, when Qi Qi looked Ling Tian, she had this eager look in her eyes, even more so than when she sees her own brother. Hence, I thought he must be someone who is even more powerful than Qi Qi's big brother. So, it must be Ling Tian."

Yun Meng Xin finished her sentence with a beautiful smile. Yun Feng and Xiao Qi, on the other hand, stood there, astounded.

Ling Chen's eyebrows twitched ever so slightly. Yun Meng Xin's tranquility and attentiveness to details were beyond his expectations. Her ability to notice some things that others would tend to subconsciously leave out, and make valid connections to something or someone that she had never seen before... the Yun Meng Xin in front of him was totally different to the stubborn and helpless girl that he had imagined. Her goddess-level beauty, extraordinary mentality and intelligent mind... so this was Yun Meng Xin?

"Whoa! Indeed, Big Sister Meng Xin is the best of the best!" Xiao Qi applauded, looking at Meng Xin with sparkles of admiration in her eyes.

"Alright!" Yun Feng sighed, "Well, I actually thought I could give you a surprise this time, but as always I've failed horribly."

Ling Feng fell into deep thought... It seemed that the reason Yun Meng Xin figured out his identity wasn't out of luck; she was a girl of great intellect.

"Not at all big brother, you have already given me a huge surprise and so much hope... thank you, big brother."

Yun Meng Xin's voice was soft and sincere. The sound of her voice alone was enough to melt away any man's heart.

“I am your big brother, therefore, there’s no need to thank me. But… this is all I can do for you, I can’t disobey my father’s damn commands. Besides I still have the Disillusion Alliance to take care of. Even if I help you in the future, I’ll have to do it in secrecy. What’s more is that your success is dependent on your effort. Meng Xin, no matter what happens in the future, I will always be on your side. It’s my honour to have a sister like you. So we have to keep on fighting, take down father! Takedown Long Tian Yun!”

Yun Feng vigorously nodded his head, and gave Yun Meng Xin a thumbs up.

Looking at Yun Feng, Ling Chen’s lips softened into a warm smile. Yun Feng’s words echoed in his head: little sisters with big brothers are really blessed. It seemed that every big brother loved their little sisters from the bottom of their hearts. Just like Yun Feng and Yun Meng Xin, Shui Ruo and himself.

And also…

Disillusion Alliance?

Long Tian Yun?

Nobody noticed that as soon as Yun Feng mentioned ‘Long Tian Yun’, a sudden beam of coldness flashed in Ling Chen’s eyes.

“Un.” Yun Meng Xin answered softly and turned towards Ling

Chen. Through the veil, Ling Chen felt a beautiful and gentle gaze. “Ling Tian, welcome to ‘Heart’s Dream’. You were brought in by big brother, therefore I will trust you wholeheartedly. Also, I need to thank you, Qi Qi, Su Su and all of you for joining Heart’s Dream. You guys have given up a lot to be here today… In two years’ time, no matter what happens, I will always be grateful to you guys, and I will forever remember each and every one of you…”

Yun Meng Xin’s words touched everyone’s heart. Xiao Qi shook her head and said in all seriousness, “Big sister Meng Xin, there is no need to say such things between sisters. Big sister Meng Xin, you have always been my favourite person in the whole world! The prettiest, smartest, kindest, the best goddess ever! You can do so much better than Long Tian Yun. No matter what you do, I will always be on your side, otherwise I won’t deserve the honour to be your little sister.”

“I…I like big sister Meng Xin,” Su Er walked over and stood next to Yun Meng Xin, in her quiet voice, “So… Su’Er… will always fight alongside big sister.”

With two beautiful girls alongside Yun Meng Xin, Ling Feng knew that she more than just beautiful and smart; her lovely charisma could also make anyone instantly fond her. Why else would two girls of great family backgrounds be so willing to join ‘Heart’s Dream’?

“Well then, let’s all work towards our goal together.” Ling Chen smiled, looking at all three girls. He felt that he was almost starting to like this little group. Not only did all three of the girls have incomparably beautiful faces, but he also got carried away in

this warm and welcoming atmosphere. “Believe in what you believe, keep doing what you are doing. In two years’ time, or even sooner, your fate will be in your own hands.”

Yun Meng Xin was startled by his words. For a team of only five people with no money, no connections, no nothing, to match the reputation and wealth that the Yun family financial group possesses in just in two years seemed like an impossible task. But the man in front of her radiated nothing but confidence and determination.

Those words seemed like an overly confident promise... but for some reason, she could not feel any conceit in his words. Deep down in her heart there was an inexplicable feeling towards this man she just met — that as long as he was here, this seemingly impossible goal was not so far from their reach.

Chapter 120 - A Small Compensation

Inside the small house with the “Heart’s Dream” sign hanging over the doors, there were only two plain tables and seven or eight shabby chairs. In a time when gold was so scarce, they could only put up with having their headquarters in such a place. However, renting even this plain little house would be beyond the abilities of these few girls. Ling Chen believed that the only person who would be able to do this would be Yun Feng.

Although there were five people seated around the table, it did not seem crowded at all. This was the first time they had all met together, and it was today that Ling Chen had officially joined the yet-to-be-established “Heart’s Dream” in a not-so-official way. Of course, the only thing that was missing was the other missing member.

“Isn’t there one more member? Why isn’t she here?” Ling Chen asked.

“Big sister Mu had something to attend to. It was like someone was calling her.” Yun Meng Xin replied. While sitting down, her two long, sleek legs naturally crossed leg over leg. Looking at her from the side, her figure was simply breathtaking. Ling Chen had to admit that this goddess-level beauty was simply flawless no matter from which angle she was looked at. She didn’t seem like a mortal girl; rather, her beauty was that which could only be seen in drawings-possible to be imagined, described, but nearly impossible to actually come into existence.

“Do you know who big sister Mu is? Hehe, if you know her full

name, you'll get a shock." Xiao Qi giggled.

"Oh?" Ling Chen's expression became very curious.

Xiao Qi mysteriously smiled, "When you see her, you'll know. Big sister Mu isn't just very strong, she's super pretty as well! She's actually almost as pretty as big sister Meng Xin. But when you see her, don't get any wrong ideas or do anything silly-big sister Mu is very scary when she's angry... And right, how can you still be wearing that mask, quickly take it off! We're guildmates now, but we still haven't seen what you look like."

After speaking, Xiao Qi went to grab the mask Ling Chen was wearing. Su'Er also slightly raised her head, hoping to see Ling Chen take off his mask. Yun Meng Xin also turned her gaze to Ling Chen, and looked at his mask. Evidently, they all wanted to know what this super expert who had shaken China looked like.

"This... This isn't necessary, I look a bit weird-my appearance might scare you guys." Ling Chen helplessly said as he slightly retreated.

"Liar, Liar!" Xiao Qi contradicted as she shook her head, "I don't believe you. Take off that mask now, we all want to see what you look like. It's not fair that you're wearing a mask."

Yun Feng knew the reason why Ling Chen did not want to reveal his face, and he had previously promised Ling Chen that he would not reveal to anyone else his real identity. He hurriedly said, "Qi Qi, he has a special reason why he doesn't want people to know his

real identity, so don't force him to take off his mask. One day, when he wants to, he'll take it off himself..... Eh, Ling Tian, isn't that right."

"No, no! This isn't fair!" The curiosity of a young maiden was very strong, and though Yun Feng had tried to convince her, Xiao Qi was still furiously shaking her head.

"Xiao Qi, since he doesn't want to, let's not force him. Everyone has reasons for their own privacy. Just like me... a lot of the time, I cover my face as well." After Yun Meng Xin spoke, a faint sigh came out from her lips. Xiao Qi was very respectful to Yung Meng Xin. After Yun Meng Xin had spoken, she puffed out her cheeks, but did not continue to pester Ling Chen and obediently sat down. However, her displeasure was written all over her face, and after sitting down, she muttered in a small voice, "Mean man."

After seeing her actions, Ling Chen could not help but smile. He knew that after joining this guild, not allowing his guildmates to see what he looked like wasn't very polite. However, for Shui Ruo's sake, he would not let their peaceful lives be disturbed. He definitely would not let Shui Ruo be put at any risk of harm, so, at least for now, he wasn't willing to let other people know his real identity.

A beautiful young girl sulking was a very cute sight. Although Xiao Qi was young, if she really was Xiao Qiufeng's younger sister, then she would be a true "Mafia Princess". However, Ling Chen did not feel a hint of haughtiness or arrogance from her, but instead could tell that her spirit was incredibly pure and naïve. This sort of girl, even if she did something wrong, no one would be able to get

angry at her.

Maybe it was because she reminded him a bit of Ling Shui Ruo, Ling Chen simply couldn't be too cruel to this young girl. He gently smiled, and said, "Alright, little Qi Qi, it's me being mean, it's me who's in the wrong. It's my fault for making Qi Qi angry..... Although, I'll give Qi Qi some compensation. If Qi Qi is satisfied with my compensation, then don't be angry anymore alright?"

Ling Chen use of "Qi Qi" was somewhat affectionate. Yun Feng, who Ling Chen had always treated coldly, started to feel goosebumps creeping up across his whole body. He stared at Ling Chen... he never thought that the cold Ling Chen would have such a side... or was he only like this to girls?

"Compensation? What compensation?" Xiao Qi didn't show any reaction to Ling Chen calling her "Qi Qi" at all, but her eyes lit up when she had heard the word "compensation". She leaned forwards, pressing her bountiful chest onto the table.

"You're a Water Elementalist, right?" Ling Chen smiled as he asked.

"That's right! How did you know? Ahh, could it be that you want to give me equipment?"

"Correct!" Ling Chen waved his hand, and took out a magic staff that radiated a faint green light from his bag, "This magic staff is most suitable for Wind Elementalists to use, but it's still quite good for other Elementalists to use as well."

Ling Chen put the long magic staff onto the table. Just from its appearance, it was evident that this was not some ordinary magic staff. The five people seated around the table all fixed their gazes onto the magic staff.

[Wind Spirit Staff]: Type: Magic Staff (Long), Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Any Elementalist, Priest or Summoner class profession LV15 or above. A magic staff that harbours dense wind element, after equipping can buff the effects of wind magic. Attributes: Magic Attack+50, Spirit+15, MP+50, All wind class spell damage+10%, all wind magic chanting time-20%.

“Wahh!!” Xiao Qi and Yun Feng let out gasps.

“Ohmygod! LV15 Gold magic staff!! This Magic Attack, these Attributes...” Yun Feng stared, enchanted by the magic staff. He yelled as he wiped away the drool that had been leaking from his mouth. He almost started hating himself for not choosing the Elementalist class. If he was an Elementalist, he would at least have the right to beg Ling Chen for this amazing piece of equipment. In the early stages of the game, Gold equipment were godly things. This was the first time he had ever seen Gold equipment.

“This... is this really for me?” Xiao Qi held the magic staff in her hands, her excited little face became incredibly red. Although this magic staff was evidently most suitable for Wind Elementalists, it

was still a Gold weapon. The stats on a Gold weapon were something that the stats on ordinary weapons could never match up to. As the princess of the Battle Alliance, Xiao Qi knew exactly how precious Gold equipment was at this stage of the game... this was a priceless treasure. Presently, the Gold equipment that had appeared in China were almost as rare as unicorns. Even her big brother only had Silver equipment-and that was already considered to be very impressive. Yet, in her hands, was a Gold weapon.

"Of course, if you want to use it, you'll need to be at least LV15. Make sure you work hard." Ling Chen said as he smiled.

Xiao Qi was so happy that her eyebrows almost started to dance. Her sulking from earlier had completely disappeared. She actually owned a Gold equipment now!! Just thinking about it almost made her want to jump up and down with joy. She looked up, both eyes starting to water up. She felt extremely overwhelmed, and her voice was as soft and gentle as cotton as she spoke, "Big brother Ling Tian, you're the best. Mmmmwah~"

Xiao Qi pressed her white and tender fingers to her soft lips, and blew Ling Chen a kiss. Afterwards, she jumped up and down as she played with the wind Elementalist magic staff in her hands. She gave off the impression that she would not be willing to part with it for even a moment.

"Women... are such admirable creatures." Yun Feng enviously looked at Xiao Qi, then pitifully looked at Ling Chen, hoping that Ling Chen would take out some equipment to give to him... Ling Chen already had two Celestial grade equipment. Yun Feng was

sure that the Gold and Silver equipment that other people could only dream of were akin to trash to Ling Chen.

Ling Chen ignored Yun Feng's pitiful look, and instead looked at Su'Er. As she became aware of Ling Chen looking at her, Su'Er's reaction was like that of a frightened little rabbit, and hurriedly looked downwards. She was naturally very shy, and had never been able to look back at a boy for very long.

"Su'Er, you should be an Archer, right?" Ling Chen asked. Her class was very easy to guess from the equipment that she was wearing.

"Y-Yes..." Having Ling Chen suddenly speak to her, Su'Er panicked, and weakly replied.

This girl, she probably rarely talked to people she didn't know. However, there was something about this girl that made people just want to like her. He smiled, and took out a pure Silver bow from his bag and put it in front of Su'Er, "Here, this is for you."

[Wind Chaser Bow]: Type: Bow, Grade: Silver, Equipment requirements: Any Archer class profession LV15 or above. Attributes: Physical Attack+31, Strength+5, Agility+8, Attack Speed+20. Attacks will deal 10 bonus damage of wind element.

"Silver grade bow!" Xiao Qi gently exclaimed. Although the stats on this bow definitely could not match up to the Gold magic staff,

Silver equipment was also something that ordinary players could only dream of. Su'Er picked up the bow and lovingly looked at it. Her cheeks became slightly pink as she looked at Ling Chen for a moment, then immediately lowered her head again. She softly said, "Thank you big brother Ling Tian, I really like it."

"Here, this is also for you." As he spoke, Ling Chen took out a full body armour that glowed with a faint green light.

[Wind Spirit's Clothes]: Type: Full Body Light Armour, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Any Archer class profession LV15 or above. Mystical clothes that contain wind elemental power. After wearing body becomes light and agile like wind. Attributes: Defense+50, Agility+15, HP+100, Attack Speed+15, Wind Elemental Resistance+10%.

"Wahhh!!!"

This time, even Su'Er could not help but let out a gentle cry of disbelief.

Chapter 121 - Phantasmal Bladedancer

“Heavens!! It’s actually a full body armour... a Gold full body armour!” Xiao Qi’s mouth hung open as she shot to her feet. If this piece of equipment was given to her, she would not let go of it no matter what. Clothing was split into inner and outer clothing. This full body armour was equivalent to two pieces of outer clothing, and even contained some bonus attributes that normal inner clothing or outer clothing could never have. It was probably worth two Gold equipment... if not more! It was even comparable to the LV15 magic staff that Xiao Qi had received.

“Amazing...” Yun Feng’s mouth also hung open, and his eyes grew wider. As he spoke, he forcefully swallowed back the pool of saliva gathering in his mouth.

Little Su’Er’s eyes flashed as she looked at the splendorous sight in front of her. Her eyes stared unblinkingly at the beautiful piece of clothing which glowed with a pure green light. It was obvious to everyone that she really liked this Archer’s full body armour. She reached out with her soft hands, but after some thought, took her hands back. She continued to look at the full body armour, and embarrassedly said, “This... Is this really for me? But... it’s too precious, I...”

Even if the person was a newbie to the VRMMO world, they would still know that a full body armour, and a Gold class one at that, was extremely valuable. If the stats of this [Wind Spirit’s Clothes] were to be released, it would send waves across all of China, arousing the jealousy and admiration of all Archers. It was the first time Su’Er had ever met Ling Chen, and yet he had given her such a precious gift-one that could not be given a price.

Although she extremely liked this piece of equipment, she couldn't bring herself to accept it.

Su'Er was indeed a very pure and kind-hearted girl. If it was anyone else, receiving a gift so valuable for free, they would immediately snatch it up. Ling Chen smiled, "Of course this is for you. Su Su, we're going to be guildmates from now on. It's extremely important for guildmates to help each other out; to trust and rely on each other. Plus, if we find equipment that's suitable for other guildmates, of course we'll give it to them. Su Su, if you find any equipment that's suitable for me in future, you would give it to me as well, right?"

Su'Er slightly raised her head. The worry and internal conflict inside her had vanished, and a very sweet smile began to grow on her face. She nodded, and gave a small "En", then put the [Wind Spirit's Clothes] away. To this Ling Chen who she had just met for the first time, she not only respected him as a strong player, but also started having some positive feelings towards him.
Xiao Qi looked at Ling Chen, then looked at Su'Er. Her mouth curved upwards with a devious smile, "Ha! Big brother Ling Tian, you're being so nice to our Su'Er because you like her right? Heheh, our Su'Er's so cute, so pretty, so pure... when she grows up, she'll definitely become a super beauty like big sister Meng Xin. If I was a man, I'd like her a lot as well. However, our Su'Er already has an arranged marriage, so..."

"Qi Qi, D-Don't be a blabbermouth..." Su'Er hurriedly grabbed Xiao Qi's arm.

"Hm? Arranged marriage?" Ling Chen looked at Su'Er in

surprise.

“Heheh, Su Su, don’t be shy. Your arranged marriage is something that everyone knows about. Otherwise, the line of people lining up to go after you would extend out of China.” Xiao Qi said as she giggled.

Yun Meng Xin gave a faint smile, then said with a gentle voice, “It’s like this. When Su Su was twelve, her parents made the arranged marriage for her. The agreement was that when Su Su became of age to marry, which is her sixteenth birthday, that would be her wedding day… come to think of it, it’s nearly Su Su’s sixteenth birthday.”

“Right, right, when the time comes we need to properly celebrate! Although, I never thought that the first to get married out of us sisters would be the youngest, little Su Su… heh, alright, alright, Su Su’s always been very shy, I’ll stop talking about this. However, big brother Ling Tian, don’t get too interested in Su Su. This arranged marriage is no joke, her fiancé is very strong, even my big brother doesn’t dare look down on him. I’m really not trying to scare you.”

Beside Xiao Qi, Su’Er lowered her head, and did not speak anymore. Seeing her lower her head, Ling Chen noticed that her original delight in receiving the [Wind Spirit’s Clothes] had all but disappeared. She had an almost imperceptible melancholic look on her face.

It seemed that this “arranged marriage” was against her wishes. Ling Chen thought… maybe this was one of the reasons why she

joined Heart's Dream?

Things such as arranged marriages were very rarely seen in the lives of normal people. However, in the world of business and politics, they were common existences in order to secure deals or alliances. The bigger and more powerful a family was, the more common they were. In these sorts of families, children had no say with regards to their marriages; everything was determined by their families. In order for their families to flourish, they would need to make "strong connections", which was achieved through marriages. Such families would never allow their children to marry anyone who would not bring any benefit to the family, or even be a burden to the family.

Yun Meng Xin was a classic example..... Su'Er seemed to be one as well. Although her personality wasn't one to rebel as defiantly as Yun Meng Xin, she was still the type to silently accept it even though she was unwilling. She definitely wouldn't openly rebel against her family.

"Ahem, this, this..... Qi Qi and Su Su all received such big~~~~ presents, what about m-... Ahem, Meng Xin and I? Eh? Eh?" Xiao Qi and Su'Er had both received Gold grade equipment. If Yun Feng had not been doing his absolute best to hold it in, his drool would have been all over the floor already. He finally could not hold back, and started to shamelessly ask Ling Chen for his 'presents'. His actions caused the girls to start laughing.

Facing Yun Feng's watery eyes, Ling Chen remained calm and collected. He turned towards Yun Meng Xin and asked, "Meng Xin, you're a Warrior, right?"

A girl with the figure of a goddess had actually chosen a melee class. Her personality was indeed very strong and independent. However, when she fought with her weapons, the scene would be very beautiful.

“En.” Yun Meng Xin nodded.

Ling Chen stretched out his hands and two long swords appeared in his hands. He put them on the table together. These two swords glowed with an earthy yellow colour, and looked exactly the same as each other.

[Sand Blade]: Type: Two Handed Sword, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Any warrior profession LV10 or above (including apprentices), Colour like yellow sand, a mysterious sword that bears a heavy earth elemental strength. Attributes: Attack+35, Strength+10, Agility+5, 3% chance to add 5 secs of “Petrification”.

“Holy fuck!!”

Yun Feng was so excited that he almost jumped onto the table. He sprang onto one of the Sand Blades like a ravenous wolf, and emotionally clutched it to his chest, as if it was a beautiful woman. “Gold weapon... I finally have a Gold weapon, and it’s one I can immediately use!! Hahahahahaha.....”

Yun Feng was currently LV10, which satisfied the level requirement for the Sand Blade. This meant that he could immediately start using the Sand Blade, unlike Qi Qi and Su'Er who needed to wait until they reached LV15 before they could equip their Gold equipment. This made him incredibly happy. While stroking the Sand Blade, he spoke with a big grin, "This attack power. These stats. This appearance.... Huehuehue, this truly is Gold equipment. Compared to this, the sword I'm using is just a piece of rubbish."

After having his little rant, he raised his head, and gratefully looked at Ling Chen, "Ling Tian, you're so thoughtful. You actually gave us brother and sister a pair of the same Gold weapons. I'm so moved that I'm about to cry."

Ling Chen slightly leaned backwards, his hand stroking his chin. He slowly said, "No worries, you don't need to be moved. These two swords are both for Meng Xin, I currently don't have anything for you."

Yun Feng immediately froze, and remained completely still for three seconds. He pretended not to hear what Ling Chen had just said, and hid the Sand Blade behind his back, and started to ramble, "T-t-t-this..... I..... Ha, haha..... the weather's really great today, such a good day to make a good joke.... Right, what did you just say Ling Tian? I don't think I heard you clearly.... This sword, mmm, not bad, not bad. Seeing as you're adamantly gifting this sword to me, I'll just have to accept it. I'll definitely repay you in future."

Ling Chen: "....."

Xiao Qi let out a ‘pcht’ sound and Yun Meng Xin also gave a small laugh. She picked up the other Sand Blade, “Big brother Ling Tian, don’t tease my brother. His face is still white from the shock you gave him. What you said just then was very true-we’re guildmates now, so we should help each other out. In that case, I’ll gratefully accept this sword. However, I still… need to thank you…”

Ling Chen: “……”

The girls and Yun Feng all thought that Ling Chen giving both of these swords to Meng Xin was a joke. Warriors could only equip one sword; this was common knowledge. Giving two of the exactly same sword to someone would be a waste. Ling Chen raised his eyebrows, and said, “I’m not joking…… Meng Xin, this is for you. If a guild wants to develop, its leader, the centre of the guild, must be strong enough for other people to acknowledge. I hope this will help you with that.”

Ling Chen took out a scroll…… This was the “Phantasmal Bladedancer” class change scroll that he had obtained from the Hall of Heroic Spirits.

The scroll’s appearance was very ordinary, and looked exactly the same as a teleport scroll. The moment Yun Feng and the three girls looked clearly at the attributes… they found themselves unable to believe their eyes.

“Hidden… Hidden Profession Scroll!!” Apart from Yun Meng Xin who was able to remain calm and composed, the other people

started screaming in unison. Even the quiet Su'Er's mouth hung open, her face full of disbelief.

What was a Hidden Profession Scroll? Its value was greater than even a thousand, or even ten thousand Gold equips. It was something that all players were desperate to get their hands on; something that could only be obtained by most players in their dreams. Only nine Hidden Professions had ever appeared in <<Mystic Moon>>'s predecessor, <<Stellar Quest>>, a global game that had been out for ten years. This meant that an average of only one Hidden Profession appeared every year!! It was evident how rare Hidden Professions were.

However, right now, Ling Chen had just casually taken out a Hidden Profession Scroll and placed it in front of them. With this scroll, they would not need to desperately search, or complete ridiculously hard quests, or fight death battles with other players... all they needed to do was gently shatter it in their hands, and they would be able to change to a Hidden Profession.

Looking at this scroll, Yun Feng's heart started to race. Ling Chen already had many things that would drive the entire player base in China crazy. If they knew that he had a Hidden Profession Scroll as well, who knew what would happen. Suddenly, Yun Feng understood why Ling Chen had said that both swords were for Meng Xin. This was because the Phantasmal Bladedancer class allowed one to use two weapons at the same time... in addition, if the two weapons were exactly the same, the power would be increased!

Looking at the calm and smiling Ling Chen, Yun Feng was deeply

shocked, as well as ever so grateful at the same time... high class equips, Hidden Profession Scroll, these were all priceless items that Ling Chen had freely given to Yun Meng Xin and the other two girls. For sure, part of the reason for Ling Chen doing so was because of how likeable the girls were. However, acting like this without any reservation or hesitation also showed how dedicated Ling Chen was towards helping Meng Xin and Heart's Dream.

Indeed..... From the beginning, Yun Feng should have been completely at ease. For a person of Ling Chen's status and power, his promise to help them was something that was extremely precious. This thought appeared in both Yun Feng and Yun Meng Xin's minds.

Chapter 122 - Yan Huang Alliance

No matter how eloquently words are spoken, and no matter how confidently promises are made, those things could never move one's heart like real actions can. When joining Heart's Dream Ling Chen had not said why he was joining, nor did he express his determination in helping the guild in words..... what he did do was take out Gold equipment after Gold equipment, handing them out freely. He even gave Yun Meng Xin a Hidden Profession Scroll at the end. The things he had given out could have all brought him immeasurable benefits, and yet he had gifted them to the foundation-less, moneyless, almost member-less Heart's Dream.....

He was indeed very strong, but in order to obtain a Hidden Profession Scroll, it still would have costed him quite a lot. Holding the "Phantasmal Bladedancer" class change scroll in her hands, Yun Meng Xin's thoughts were unable to settle down. Until now, she still did not know the reason for him joining Heart's Dream to help her. However, since he was brought by Yun Feng, she was willing to trust him. His actions caused her to feel an inexplicable feeling of warmth. The first person to leave Novice Village, the person who monopolised the entire Equipment Ranking and Pet Ranking-this sort of power could almost step on names such as the Sword Emperor. Such an overwhelmingly strong person must have kept a very low profile in the past, or simply refrained from entering the Virtual World, otherwise his name would have become known by the whole world by now... he had now appeared in the Virtual World, and had sent waves after waves across the whole world, all for Heart's Dream.

No matter what his reasons were, Yun Meng Xin would never forget the kindness he had shown to her and Heart's Dream.

“Although this is extremely precious, so precious that I’m almost afraid to take it,” Yun Meng Xin said, her voice as silky and gentle as smoke, “but since you’re giving this to me as a guildmate, I won’t refuse. Otherwise, that would be impolite and ungrateful of me… I believe that in future, you definitely won’t regret the choice you made today.” She paused, then smiled, “Big brother Yun Feng, thank you for giving me this ‘surprise’. I can feel that the ‘light of hope’ is becoming closer and closer.”

Xiao Qi and Su’Er both looked at Ling Chen. Although today was the first time they had ever met, he was already no longer a stranger to them. Because of the mask, there was still a sense of mysteriousness around him. However, despite that, they began to feel a sense of closeness towards him as well. Thinking about all that had happened in one day, the girls felt that perhaps Heart’s Dream’s future would be one that no one could ever imagine……

The originally almost-unattainable goal now had a sliver of hope of being accomplished.

Although Ling Chen had given out a heap of priceless treasures, in return he had gained the trust and approval of all the guild members. Thus, he did not feel that he made a loss. He faintly smiled and said, “No need to be so courteous. I promised Yun Feng that I would help you accomplish your goal, so I will definitely do that. Whether you think I’m trustworthy or just plain arrogant, that doesn’t matter to me. Yun Feng helped me save the most important thing in my life, so the promise I made to him, I will definitely keep it! Helping you is also helping myself, so you don’t have to feel like you owe me anything, let alone thank me.”

Although Ling Chen spoke calmly, his words carried a powerful sense of determination.

Yun Meng Xin gently smiled, “I definitely believe that you’ll succeed.”

“Heh, being able to fight on equal grounds with Ev… Ahem, with that person, even if I don’t believe in anyone I’d still believe in you.” Yun Feng said as he nodded. He winced, his face full of agony, “Then… alright, I’ll give this sword to Meng Xin.”

Yun Meng Xin smiled, and did not say anything as she put away the two Sand Blades. The normally calm Meng Xin suddenly had a sense of urgency and impatience to quickly change classes, then equip both swords. She wanted to see what sort of power she would have. Ling Chen was right-if a guild wanted to develop and grow, its leader must have sufficient power… indeed, battle power was one of the most important types of power. Holding the Phantasmal Bladedancer class change scroll that Ling Chen had given her, she knew that she would not have any excuses for not having enough power.

“So, uh… they all got presents that matched their class, could it be that you don’t have anything that matches my class?” Seeing all the girls holding their Gold equips, as well as his own little sister holding the Hidden Profession Scroll that he longed for, Yun Feng’s heart ached as he desperately asked Ling Chen.

“Of course there is.” Ling Chen immediately replied.

Yun Feng's eyes suddenly glowed with the brightness of three hundred light bulbs, "Quick! Quickly... show me! Ahahaha, even though you're pretty cold at times, I know that deep down you're a warm-hearted fellow. I just knew you wouldn't leave me out."

Subsequently, Ling Chen took out two items... both were Silver weapons-one was a double handed sword, the other was a spear.

"En, take your pick. You can have both if you want." Ling Chen lazily said, showing his generosity.

Yun Feng gleefully started to look at the two weapons. However, after looking at the stats of the double handed sword, his face started to droop. After looking at the stats of the spear, tears were almost coming out from his eyes.

Ling Chen had obtained both of these weapons from the War God's Trial Ground, and both of these were Silver weapons. Any normal player would have been overjoyed to receive them. If the Yun Feng from before had received these gifts, he would have been extremely excited... however, after seeing the three girls and their Gold equipment, Silver seemed like nothing to him anymore. His face full of grief, he said, "Ling Tian! Why did you give them all Gold equipment, and only Silver to me!"

"Isn't that obvious," Xiao Qi's lips parted, revealing a charming smile, "It's because we're all beauties, whereas you're a man. To big brother Ling Tian, we're obviously much more attractive. Right, big brother Ling Tian?"

Yun Feng: ⊙‿⊙b

“Because… I’m a guild member of Heart’s Dream, so of course I have to put my guildmates in Heart’s Dream first. You’re not part of Heart’s Dream, are you?” Ling Chen said half-jokingly.

Yun Feng bitterly wept.

“Alright, alright, I’ll stop being mean to you. It’s just that right now, I don’t have any Gold equips that suit you. If I find any in future, I’ll give some to you alright? Besides, I believe that through your own hard work and efforts, you’ll definitely be able to reap some good rewards. After all… I believe we’re both the same type of man.”

Yun Feng gradually calmed down, and a slight smile appeared on his face, “That’s quite true.”

Of course, receiving something was better than nothing, so Yun Feng decided in the end to keep the two Silver weapons.

“There’s something I want to confirm.” Ling Chen became serious, and asked, “Just then, Qi Qi mentioned someone called ‘Long Tian Yun’. Is that the person who Meng Xin has an arranged marriage with?”

Just one short sentence caused the excited guild members inside the Heart’s Dream building to become silent. Everyone’s expressions became serious and solemn.

“Ai, I haven’t told you about this before. I didn’t want to put you under too much pressure, but you’d find out sooner or later.” Yun Feng said with a sigh.

Yun Feng’s answer dispelled any doubts Ling Chen had. He turned his head and looked out the window, “Indeed… the pressure is quite great. Looks like I thought too simply.”

“Just achieving this goal within two years is extremely difficult… and even if there was hope for that, Long Tian Yun would be doing his best to hinder us as well. Long Tian Yun… Yan Huang Alliance. Sigh.” Yun Feng once again sighed. Whenever he thought of the words “Yan Huang Alliance”, he simply could not relax.

For the past few years, Ling Chen had dedicated himself to taking care of Shui Ruo. He had not gone anywhere near the virtual world, and naturally did not know the name “Yan Huang Alliance”, much less what the surname “Long” represented

“Tell me what’s going on with the Yan Huang Alliance.” Ling Chen said.

Yun Feng nodded. He was already prepared to tell Ling Chen these things. He knew that although these things were common knowledge to most players, Ling Chen had not stepped into the virtual world for a long time, and so he would not have knowledge of these things.

“In China, there are currently three great powers-Yan Huang

Alliance, Skyfall Dynasty and The Dark Night. Out of those three, Yan Huang Alliance is the strongest. Not only is it the most powerful in China, but also in the whole world. This is acknowledged by everyone. Yan Huang Alliance is simply too powerful and has too much influence. No one truly knows just how powerful it really is. It is said that when Yan Huang Alliance was at its peak, it had tens of millions of players... of course, this is probably an exaggeration, though the true figure was probably not far from that. What is undeniable is that it is simply unsurpassable.

Yan Huang Alliance-in China, there was not a single player that did not know this name. Although it was a gaming guild, it wasn't just some ordinary guild. This was because the family group supporting it was the family with the most political power-Long family. The position of the head of the Alliance was naturally the one who had the most political power in all of China-Long Zheng Yang. However, because Long Zheng Yang had many national matters to attend to, the one in charge of managing the Yan Huang Alliance was his sole heir……

Long Tian Yun-Yan Huang Alliance's real leader and guildmaster.

Long Tian Yun was currently only 25 years old. As the sole heir of the Long family, he would one day inherit the power that his father possessed. Saying that his background, status, and conditions were the best in China would not be an exaggeration at all. Many people dreamt of having connections with the Long family. After Long Tian Yun had met Yun Meng Xin, he had vowed that he was determined to marry her. As such, Yun Meng Xin's family was overjoyed... because this was something that many families desired, yet could never have. When Long Tian Yun

became the chief political leader in China, the Yun family would naturally also receive many benefits and become the envy of other families.

With such a family background, the sincere Long Tian Yun had been rejected by Yun Meng Xin..... leading to the creation of “Heart’s Dream”.

Chapter 123 - Skyfall Dynasty And The Dark Night

After the “Hundred Year Armistice Convention” was signed, the virtual world was no longer just a simple gaming world. It signified something much greater than that. As such, Yan Huang Alliance, which was backed by the highest political authority in China, was no ordinary guild either. The words “Yan Huang” in its name signified that it represented China’s power and reputation in the virtual world. When international conflicts arose, those conflicts would be settled in the virtual world. Thus, the one to step up for China was naturally the Yan Huang Alliance. Thus, the Yan Huang Alliance that represented China’s wealth, status and dignity held great attractiveness to all players. Players fought to join this guild. Moreover, no one dared to oppose anything that was tied to the welfare of China, one of which was the Yan Huang Alliance.

[TLN: Chinese people commonly refer to themselves as 炎黄子孙, or “Yan Huang’s Descendants”, after two great Emperors, Yan Di (Yan Emperor) and Huang Di (Huang Emperor)]

Moreover, its fame, size and riches were something that normal guilds could never compare to. The Yan Huang Alliance contained countless family groups in China, both large and small. As such, it was tied not only to the welfare of China and the Long family, but countless other family groups as well. The Yan Huang Alliance was simply an existence that would exist eternally, and would not be allowed to be destroyed... of course, there wasn’t anyone who had the power to destroy it.

Furthermore, Yan Huang Alliance’s power did not just come from the “Yan Huang Alliance” itself. It had countless branches and subsidiary guilds..... Ling Chen had previously encountered

the “Battle Alliance” led by Xiao Qiu Feng before, which was one of the subsidiary guilds of the Yan Huang Alliance. If the Yan Huang Alliance was threatened in any way, all of these subsidiary guilds would assist the Yan Huang Alliance. Thus, without a doubt, Yan Huang Alliance was a giant in China.

There were hundreds of millions of players in China, but only ten in the Heaven Rankings. Of these ten spaces, three of them were taken by the Yan Huang Alliance, including the number 1 position, which was taken by the supposedly unbeatable “Sword Emperor”. If all the subsidiary guilds were included as well, half, or even more than half, of the Heaven Rankings would belong to the Yan Huang Alliance.

“..... Five years ago, the head of the Long family put Long Tian Yun in charge of all of the Yan Huang Alliance, who met everyone’s expectations. You’ve got to hand it to the Long family-there’s not a single member of that family who’s an ordinary person. That year, Long Tian Yun was only twenty years old. Within five years, under his leadership, the Yan Huang Alliance has become stronger and stronger, growing at an unprecedented rate. His personal battle power is very strong; his leadership is second to none; his schemes and plots are also incredible. And his eyes... oh, how do I describe it... being looked at by him, it feels like I’m not wearing clothes at all-he can see everything, including my thoughts, clear as day. All in all, he’s a very powerful and very scary person. Even though he’s young, no one dares to look down on or underestimate him. Plus, his looks are extremely good as well.....” Yun Feng scratched his face as he muttered, “Although I’ve always thought that my looks are pretty good, when compared to him, even I have to admit that I can’t compare... Ai, Long family genes.....”

Ling Chen: “……..”

“No matter if it’s power, wealth, looks or future prospects, he has them all. I believe that many girls would not even dare to dream of marrying him. Meng Xin, why did you reject someone like that?” Ling Chen slowly asked, his voice completely calm and emotionless. Beneath his mask, no one was able to see the glint of coldness in his eyes.

Yun Meng Xin shook her head, “If comparing how flawless his external attributes are, no one can match up to him. That year when my father and the Long family made the arranged marriage, I did my best to get to know him… On the surface level, he’s very approachable and friendly, humble and kind. However, he has a side that the vast majority of people do not know about. Deep down, in order to achieve his goals, he resorts to any method, no matter how vicious or cruel it is. Although he is yet to reach the age of thirty, he has lost all his humanity and sees people only as tools and stepping stones… things like emotions or morality probably mean nothing to him at all.

Ling Chen’s tone did not change at all as he casually asked, “If he didn’t resort to some cruel and vicious methods, how else would he be able to control and develop a guild as large as the Yan Huang Alliance? How would someone who relies on his emotions and morality support and manage the largest guild in the whole world; a guild that is tied to the welfare and reputation of China itself?”

Cruel and vicious? Who could compare to Ling Chen when it came to this…… Ling Chen looked at his own hands. Before he met Shui Ruo, his hands had been completely stained in blood. They

had taken away countless lives, and could never be washed clean. If he hadn't met Shui Ruo, perhaps he... would have already become a heartless demon with no hope of redemption.

Yun Meng Xin was silent for a short while, and then gently sighed, "Indeed, what you said is true. Being able to accomplish what he has accomplished by the age of 25 is not something that anyone is able to do. He will definitely become a figure who is admired by countless people... but he definitely is not suited to being a spouse to live with for a lifetime. What I want is someone who I love, who loves me back. Someone who will protect me and care for me for a lifetime. Although Long Tian Yun's background and status are things that no one can even compare to, but he's definitely not the type of person I want to marry. His personality is one that would casually use and sacrifice the people closest to him in order to benefit himself. Marrying him would be the same as marrying a deceptive viper. I would never be happy. The life he lives is not the life I desire.

Ling Chen: "....."

Yun Feng gave a sigh and said, "Meng Xin, don't worry. No matter what, I will stand on your side. Father and the rest of them have been looking down on us, humph."

"We definitely will stand on the side of big sister Meng Xin. Big sister Meng Xin is a goddess who came down to earth. Even if it's Long Tian Yun, he is not worthy of big sister Meng Xin! Plus... the thing I most most most most most hate is using us girls' futures as ways to secure benefits, I hate it! This sort of thing, I definitely won't allow to happen to big sister Meng Xin." Xiao Qi said as she

grabbed Su'Er's little hands. Su'Er also vigorously nodded her head. They had seen this sort of thing too many times. They definitely did not want to see Yun Meng Xin become a sacrificial offering as well-even if it was to the Long family.

Yun Meng Xin warmly smiled, her every word filled with gratitude, "Thank you, all of you."

Yun Feng continued to speak, "Let's return to the main topic. Ling Tian, although you haven't been in the virtual world much, you've surely heard of the Yan Huang Alliance right? I believe that if there's anyone who can help Meng Xin complete her goal in two years, it's you... however, if there's one thing we have to remember, it's to avoid the Yan Huang Alliance at all costs. Long Tian Yun is determined to have Meng Xin and... ai, at least until now, he's always been able to get what he wants. Like Meng Xin said just then, his schemes and plots are something to be feared, and he would do anything to accomplish his goals. I'm sure that he knows about the bet my father and Meng Xin made. If, in two years, Meng Xin really could garner a reputation and fortune that could rival the Yun family financial group's, I'm sure that Long Tian Yun would try to suppress you guys as much as possible..... not only does Meng Xin need to face an almost impossible goal, but will face many obstacles as well. Yan Huang Alliance is pretty much invincible, and there's no one with the power to fight with it. Its power and people cover every corner of the virtual world. Facing the Yan Huang Alliance as our enemies, all we can do is quietly expand and grow. Never directly face Long Tian Yun... otherwise, everything will have been for nought."

After Yun Feng finished speaking, he silently waited for Ling Chen's response. The three girls all remained silent. Even the

energetic and boisterous Xiao Qi didn't say anything along the lines of "We don't need to be afraid of the Yan Huang Alliance" to improve the mood.... The Yan Huang Alliance was simply too big and powerful, every person knew this.

Ling Chen was quiet for a while, then spoke, "Let's talk about the other two big powers."

Yun Feng nodded his head and said, "The second ranked power out of the three great powers is the Skyfall Dynasty. The Skyfall Dynasty appeared earlier than the Yan Huang Alliance. The Yan Huang Alliance was only created after the "Hundred Year Armistice Convention"; the Skyfall Dynasty was created before the Armistice. To date, it has been around for more than sixty years. It has become one of the legends of the gaming world. It has an extremely solid foundation, and even the Yan Huang Alliance doesn't dare to do anything to it. The Skyfall Dynasty is the only guild that dares to openly oppose the Yan Huang Alliance. The Yan Huang Alliance's forces are gathered in the North, around China's capital. The families that are part of the Skyfall Dynasty are gathered in South. One of the families is the Li family financial group, as well as China's strongest "three great families".

With the financial resources of the Li family and the skill of the experts of the "three great families", the Skyfall Dynasty's power has been ever-increasing. Although it cannot compare to the Yan Huang Alliance, it's definitely not an ordinary guild either. The Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty have always been having small conflicts, but have been wisely avoiding large-scale conflicts. Both sides know that if these two great powers started a war, no one would benefit. If, one day, Yan Huang Alliance was able to destroy the Skyfall Dynasty, it would be pyrrhic victory, as they

would suffer severe casualties as well. Moreover, attacking the Li family financial group would affect the economy of all of China, and even the Long family would not dare to easily anger the “three great families”. The Skyfall Dynasty also has many experts-the “Three Heavenly Kings” of Skyfall Dynasty are all ranked on the Heaven and Earth Rankings. The most powerful is ranked number 3 on the Heaven Rankings, and the other two are ranked number 8 on the Heaven Rankings and number 2 on the Earth Rankings. Just the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty occupy almost half of the Heaven and Earth Rankings.”

“The third ranked power-The Dark Night.” After saying the name “The Dark Night”, Yun Feng’s voice paused, and his whole body shivered.

“You probably haven’t heard of the name The Dark Night before. It’s a power that only recently emerged, and has only been around for a few years. The Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty all have millions of players, with the Yan Huang Alliance approaching ten million players... can you guess how many members the third ranked The Dark Night has? Whew... when I say it, you definitely won’t believe me. The Dark Night’s players only number around two thousand, some people say there aren’t even one thousand... not even 1/1000 of the number of players the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty have. However, they still able to stand with the other two as one of the “three great powers”.”

Ling Chen did not speak, and waited for Yun Feng to continue.

Chapter 124 - Top 3 Of The Heaven Rankings

Yun Feng continued to speak, “Without a doubt, the Yan Huang Alliance is the largest, most powerful force in China! However, the most intimidating and terrifying power is The Dark Night-this is something that no one dares to dispute! Normally, if a guild wants to become large and powerful, it must have players from all of the major classes, especially Priests and Shield Guards. However, in The Dark Night, all of the players have the same class.”

“Assassins... and moreover, they all belong to the ‘killer’ branch of the Assassin class.

“The Dark Night doesn’t use various business methods to gather financial resources. They only have one method... assassinations! As long as you pay them enough money, they will assassinate anyone for you... Since The Dark Night emerged, they have never failed at an assassination mission before. Three years ago, what caused all players to firmly remember the name “The Dark Night” was something that happened in the game <<Heaven Slaughter>>. A player used large amounts of money to hire The Dark Night to kill a super expert, the sixth ranked player in the Heaven Rankings, “The Judge”, who belonged to the Yan Huang Alliance. Three days later, the number 6 player on the Heaven Rankings had been assassinated by The Dark Night. However, that wasn’t the end of the story. The Dark Night had been hired to either kill the player until he was LV0, or until he never appeared in <<Heaven Slaughter>> again. From that day onwards, every time “The Judge” appeared, he would always be mercilessly assassinated. Within a month, he had been killed twelve times, and never appeared in the game again. Because of this, the Yan Huang Alliance tried to retaliate against The Dark Night. However, to this date, even though the Yan Huang Alliance used various methods,

they were never even able to catch a shadow of The Dark Night. Although they tried to trap The Dark Night many times, they failed on every occasion. Not only does The Dark Night possess incredible assassination power, but their skills in detection, investigation and anti-investigation are also top-notch."

"From then onwards, The Dark Night became an existence feared by all players. To be honest, if it was a direct battle, they might not even be able to beat a small guild. However, they never battle in plain sight. With their few thousand players, they have been called the 'Demons in the Darkness'. The guildmaster... the one called Shinigami, is ranked second on the Heaven Rankings, and is more powerful than the strongest Heavenly King of the Skyfall Dynasty. He's not even very inferior to the Sword Emperor. Even if the Sword Emperor can beat the Shinigami in a direct battle, if the Shinigami wanted to assassinate the Sword Emperor, no one would be able to predict the outcome."

After remembering all the information that Yun Feng had spewed out, Ling Chen asked, "Tell me about the top 3 players on the Heaven Rankings."

Ling Chen's interest in the top three players in the Heaven Rankings, as opposed to the entire Heaven Rankings, let alone the entire Earth Rankings, meant that he only took the top three seriously. Yun Feng cracked a smile, and start speaking, "Heh heh, the top 3 players on the Heaven Rankings are all monsters that every player knows about. Hmm... the top ranked "Sword Emperor" is called Feng Xie Yu, which is also his IGN. There has never been anyone who has dared to take this IGN. Since he was little, the Sword Emperor grew up in the Long family. Perhaps the only people who know about his background are the Long family.

The Sword Emperor's might came from sword skills which can be brought into the virtual world. Since the emergence of the Sword Emperor, he has never lost to anyone in China. The Sword Emperor was the General of the Yan Huang Alliance, and his primary duty was to protect Long Tian Yun.

"The second ranked on the Heaven Rankings- Gui Ya, also called the "Shinigami". The name Gui Ya's meaning is probably that 'the minions of a demon can easily take any life in the darkness'. The Sword Emperor's impression is one of power and indomitability, while the Shinigami's is one of terror... if it were up to me, I would rather meet the Sword Emperor."

[TLN: Gui (鬼) is a shortened form of '魔鬼' which means 'demon'. Ya(牙) is a shortened form of '爪牙', which literally means 'claws and teeth/fangs', but the meaning here is 'minion']

"The third ranked player on the Heaven Rankings is Skyfall, also called the "Apocalypse Judge". He is the heir of the Nangong family, China's strongest 'special ability family', and has always chosen the class Summoner. Being the descendant of a 'special ability family', he possesses extraordinary spiritual force. Thus, he has an overwhelming advantage in the virtual world. As a Summoner, he can summon countless more Summoned Beasts than other Summoners at the same level. The power and grade of the Summoned Beasts are much higher as well. He is extremely powerful, especially in the late game. Out of all of the players in the Heaven Rankings, he is the strongest in group battles. If he is given enough time, he can summon enough Summoned Beasts to wipe out a large army."

After rambling for a while, Yun Feng became slightly thirsty. What he had just said was all common knowledge, only someone

like Ling Chen who had not even gone near the virtual world in the past few years would not know these things. After taking a deep breath, Yun Feng continued, “Ling Tian, I’ve never doubted your strength, but when you’re going against these three people, you must be careful. This especially goes for the Sword Emperor and Shinigami. Also… even if a single player is extremely strong, in the end they are still unable to face a large army by themselves. Thus, Heart’s Dream needs to keep low-key, otherwise if you arouse the attention of Long Tian Yun, there will be no hope left.”

Yun Feng’s fear of Long Tian Yun was evidently revealed through his mental state and speech when talking about him. Even though he was not a cowardly or overly cautious person, Long Tian Yun was simply too monstrous. As for what Yun Feng had just said, Ling Chen did not comment, and sat there for a while in deep contemplation.

“Alright, alright! Let’s not talk about these boring things anymore! We just got a bunch of powerful equips and big sister Meng Xin just got a new class. We should go out and bully some monsters to level up! We need to rush to LV15 so Su Su and I can use our Gold equips and become even stronger!!” After listening to Yun Feng ramble for a while, Xiao Qi became incredibly bored and could not take it anymore.

She pulled Su’Er up, and energetically yelled, “Let’s go, let’s go! If there’s anything else to discuss, we’ll talk about it on the way. We can even talk about it while wrecking some monsters. It’s so boring here! Heh… big brother Ling Tian is so strong. If you help us level up, I’m sure it’ll be very fast!”

“Alright.” Ling Chen quickly agreed, and stood up with Xiao Qi.

“Yay! Let’s go! So this will be our first guild outing… off we go!”

Going along with Xiao Qi’s demands, the first guild outing was decided. Xiao Qi pulled Su’Er and left first, impatiently wanting to quickly reach LV15 in order to equip the Gold weapons Ling Chen had given them. Yun Feng scratched his head, and embarrassedly said, “Err, if there’s nothing else, I’ll be going now, There’s some things for me to take care of, and if my father saw me with Meng Xin, then… ai.”

“Big brother, you go first. You don’t need to worry about us here.” Yun Meng Xin said in a gentle voice.

“En.” Yun Feng nodded, “Then I’ll be going now. Ling Tian, please take care of my little sister. I leave her and the bet to you. No matter what the outcome is, to have been able to meet you, I’m already satisfied.”

Afterwards, Yun Feng quickly left. Ling Chen and Yun Meng Xin walked together, following Xiao Qi and Su’Er.

“Your big brother is the guildmaster of the ‘Disillusion Alliance’ right?” Ling Chen asked as he walked.

Yun Meng Xin did not try to hide anything from Ling Chen, and slightly nodded her head, “The Disillusion Alliance was founded by the Yun family, and is a subsidiary branch of the Yan Huang

Alliance. Currently my big brother is the guildmaster. It's not exactly a large guild, but it's not small either."

Also a subsidiary branch of the Yan Huang Alliance... The Yan Huang Alliance's sphere of influence was simply unbelievable. With this sort of power, it pretty much controlled the virtual world in China.

Ling Chen turned his head, and looked at Yun Meng Xin. In his line of sight appeared a pair of beautiful eyes, but they were partially obscured by the veil. Ling Chen could not refrain himself from saying, "Beauty is a woman's wealth; the thing she desires most... but too much beauty can instead lead to tragedy."

Yun Meng Xin suddenly stopped walking. Her beautiful eyes held a hint of melancholy as she looked at the two girls in front of her holding hands, one bubbly and energetic, the other quiet and shy. Her lips quivered, and said with a calm yet complicated tone, "Ling Tian, since I was young, I've never easily trusted anyone... however, from the first time I met you, I felt that you were a completely trustworthy person. Maybe it's the charm and charisma that you have... so can you tell me, what should I do to avoid this 'tragedy'?"

"The answer is cruel one, do you still want to hear it?" Ling Chen calmly said, continuing to look forwards.

Yun Meng Xin: "....."

"You and Yun Feng both said that whatever Long Tian Yun

wanted, it would be his sooner or later, as well as that he would do anything to achieve his goals. In that case, let's say you really won the bet with your father. Even if he honoured his promise and did not force you to marry him, would Long Tian Yun just accept that?" Ling Chen said emotionlessly.

Yun Meng Xin's head slightly drooped and said with a low voice, "This answer is indeed quite cruel."

"Meng Xin, you're a very smart girl. I'm sure you've already thought of these things, but you've always just subconsciously rejected it. However, despite knowing what the situation is like, you still choose to struggle……"

"Smart?" Yun Meng Xin shook her head, "Smart women usually can't find happiness… because the smarter a woman is, the harder it is for her to find a man who she truly admires and respects. From the age of fifteen, I had always wished that I was just an ordinary girl…"

Ling Chen stopped walking, and looked at Yun Meng Xin. From the first time he had met her, she had displayed the temperament of a goddess. However, the Yun Meng Xin in front of him right now revealed a deeply hidden sense of helplessness.

"You're very lucky, because you met me. In this world, perhaps the only person who can grant you your wish is me." Standing still, Ling Chen started to muse to himself.

"Growing and expanding quietly without attracting the attention

of the Yan Huang Alliance? Ah.....” Ling Chen slightly smiled, his smile full of a confident arrogance, “Before, I was the nightmare of many people. In this world, there isn’t anyone with the power to make me feel fear.”

Chapter 125 - Frozen Hearted Man-Eater (1)

The outskirts of Azure Dragon City were already filled with players who were trying to level up. As most players were still LV10, levelling up in the outskirts of the Azure Dragon City was the best method for them. After leaving the city, Xiao Qi and Su'Er put on their masks. Although they normally did not wear masks, they would always wear it when going out. Xiao Qi's mask was a smiling fox, whereas Su'Er's was a cute and pretty butterfly. With their appearances, they had already become accustomed to this. If they did not cover their appearances, they would only bring trouble upon themselves.

Walking along with three goddess-level beauties, Ling Chen could not help but feel quite pleasant. The LV13 monster area had already been packed full of people. Wherever they went, there were always more players than monsters. Xiao Qi led Su'Er around by the hand, looking for a good place to farm. Out of curiosity, she would ask Ling Chen many questions. However, the pure and naïve Xiao Qi was unable to get many truthful answers out of the old fox Ling Chen.

"The markets in the virtual reality world are enormous now, this is something that everyone acknowledges. Every game that has been internationally developed and supported always has people rushing to claim market share in the various markets. Although the Money Exchange System has yet to be opened, many guilds, both large and small, as well as family groups and financial groups have all started making preparations. As soon the Money Exchange System is opened, it seems that the quiet and peaceful times in this game will be over. Meng Xin, although you were partially forced to make your bet in the virtual reality world, this was the best choice for you. However, after Heart's Dream develops, regardless of how

well it goes, would you like to focus on developing in regards to finances or power?”

With Xiao Qi and Su’Er leading the way, Ling Chen and Meng Xin walked behind them, following them where they went. On the way, they had never stopped chatting and discussing. Ling Chen felt that it was necessary to understand this girl called Yun Meng Xin, as well as what she was thinking.

“I don’t know yet.” Yun Meng Xin shook her head as she replied. However, this was within Ling Chen’s expectations. Finances and power were things that were meant to be interrelated. However, right now she had no foundation, and thus would not be able to develop both at the same time. If she chose not to focus on finances, without a substantially large amount of savings, she would not have enough money to expand the guild. However, if she chose not to focus on power, she would not have sufficient ability to back up her finances and financial developments.

Ling Chen did not falter, and continued to ask, “Then, when the Money Exchange System opens, where will the money to expand the guild come from?”

Yun Meng Xin paused for a short while, then replied, “Right now I have 200,000 Yuan saved up... Xiao Qi and Su’Er maybe have some savings from their pocket money... which might amount to about 50,000-60,000 Yuan. This is all we have. After going against my family, I have not had any financial support. With regards to money, big brother Yun Feng definitely will not be able to help me, otherwise I will automatically lose the bet. Qi Qi is not yet 17, and Su’Er has not even come of age yet, so they do not have too much

money. What the future will bring, we can only find out for ourselves."

With less than 300,000 Yuan, that would be barely enough to raise a small guild with a hundred people. However, that was vastly insufficient to reach the goal in two years.

Four girls, with less than 300,000 Yuan... Heart's Dream's starting point was even worse off than what Ling Chen had expected.

"Do you want to hear my suggestion?" Ling Chen asked.

Yun Meng Xin turned and looked at this mysterious man who she could not see through. She nodded her head, "Go ahead."

"How about you let me become the founder of Heart's Dream?" Ling Chen said while smiling, "There are two reasons for this. First, Yun Feng said that you need to develop quietly, in order to avoid the attention of Long Tian Yun. If you become the founder of Heart's Dream, that would be the same as declaring that Heart's Dream belongs to you. No matter how Heart's Dream develops, Long Yun Tian will quickly find out. If I become the founder, it'll help disguise the fact that it's actually your guild. Secondly, my name is already well known by many people, and there are many people who are curious about me. It's possible that if my name is used, within a short period of time, there will be many players who want to join. However, if I found the guild, all of the control and power for Heart's Dream will be given over to me. That means that there will be less security for you. So... whether you accept or reject this proposal is entirely up to you."

Listening to Ling Chen's words, Yun Meng Xin was very startled. She did not feel shocked or confused, but rather smiled. However, Ling Chen was not able to see her beautiful smile under the veil. "Why would I reject this? Heart's Dream having you as the founder is the best choice."

The man standing next to her had, in just a short period of time, made his name resound throughout the whole world. His talent and strength were acknowledged by everyone, and his fame surpassed even the Sword Emperor and Shinigami. He had two Celestial weapons and two extremely strong pets. With this amount of fortune on him, even the Yan Huang Alliance would be envious to the point of drooling. This sort of genius would be welcomed with open arms by guilds such as the Yan Huang Alliance or the Skyfall Dynasty. They would eagerly offer him the best conditions, and would directly accept him as a core guild member, allowing him to enjoy treatment that other people could only dream of. At the same time, he would still be able to develop and train as he liked. However, joining the "Heart's Dream" whose future was so uncertain, what could he gain? Not only did he not gain anything, but on the very first day, he had given up so many valuable items. At the same time, he would also have to suffer from the Yan Huang Alliance's oppression and revenge in future.

For this sort of person, she simply could not find a reason to distrust and doubt him. He had voluntarily proposed to be the founder of Heart's Dream. Even if Yun Meng Xin was an idiot, she would not think that he had some hidden agenda to take control of a yet-to-be-developed guild with little to no foundation... instead, she knew that this was so he could carry the guild with his two arms.

“In that case, it’s settled. You definitely won’t regret giving me your trust.” Ling Chen smiled, and continued to walk forwards.

Looking at Ling Chen from the back, Yun Meng Xin’s eyes started to mist up… Big brother, this person you’ve introduced to me is the first person I’ve ever wanted to get to know entirely…

Outside Azure Dragon City, LV11 Red Tailed Fox Territory

[Red Tailed Fox]: Type: Beast, Level: LV11, HP: 450. A normal fox with a flame red tail. They are naturally very cowardly, and will not take initiative to attack other beings around them. If enraged, they can become very scary.

Passive ability: Fire resistance: 10%, Chaos resistance: 10%

Attack skills: [Leaping Bite]: Leaps and bites the enemy. If knocked to the ground, the situation will become very dangerous.

“There are barely any people around here! So lucky! Let’s farm here then!”

The Red Tailed Fox Territory was quite vast, and was large enough for over ten thousand players to farm at the same time. Despite this, most places were completely crowded with players.

However, to the east of the Red Tailed Fox Territory, there was a large area where there were only foxes and no players. Xiao Qi, who had been looking for a good farming area for a long time became as excited as winning the lottery. She excitedly jumped, and took out her weapon-a LV10 Copper short staff, “Then we’ll start here! Big brother Ling Tian, you’re already LV13, so it should be really easy to bully these little foxes... quickly show us how strong you are! And big sister Meng Xin, you still haven’t used that Hidden Profession class change scroll yet. Quickly use it and show us the power of a Hidden Profession class!”

Su’Er also took out her weapon, a Copper bow... the two girls having Copper equipment was already enough for most players to become extremely jealous. Ling Chen looked around him... There was already a terrifying number of players in China. During the early game, especially when there was not much difference between the levels of players, the limited number of training grounds were not enough for anyone. Thus, this vast area with no players was very unusual. However, even if there was something wrong with this place, Ling Chen was not someone to be afraid, “Alright, let’s train here then. This is our first farming session as a guild, so we need to do our best to work efficiently together. Meng Xin, that Hidden Profession class change scroll doesn’t have any special requirements, all you need to do is shatter it in your hands.”

Yun Meng Xin nodded her head, and took out the Phantasmal Bladedancer class change scroll. She had been resisting the urge to use the scroll as soon as she had received it. Even for a dignified woman like herself, the allure of the Hidden Profession scroll was almost too much.

Gently squeezing with her hand, Yun Meng Xin shattered the class change scroll. The shattered scroll turned into small flecks of light, and entered Yun Meng Xin's body through her hand. As the system sound rang out, Yun Meng Xin's original class disappeared, replaced by the new class.

"Did it succeed? Did it succeed?" Seeing the light from inside Yun Meng Xin's body disappear, Xiao Qi began to excitedly and curiously exclaim.

"It succeeded, and it's a very powerful class... it's stronger than a normal Warrior by a lot." Yun Meng Xin slightly nodded her head. She opened her class stats page, and looked at it in awe with Xiao Qi and the others.

Phantasmal Bladedancer: Created 600 years ago by the Forgotten Continent's sword expert, "Phantasmal Ultimate Blade". The class dual-wields two swords. The swords can be either one-handed or two-handed. If two swords that are exactly the same are used, the offense power will be greatly increased, resulting in a deadly blade dance with unparalleled power and might.

Class Bonus Stats: Strength+10, Constitution+5, Agility+10, HP+200, Hit+10, SP+50.

Class Passive Ability: User can simultaneously equip two swords of any type. The usage of the two swords will not interfere with each other. The attack power of each hand is determined by the weapon used by the respective hand. When

both swords are exactly the same, attack power will be increased by 15%. Some special skills can only be used when both swords are exactly the same.

Basic Attribute Effects: 1 Strength = Physical Attack+2, 1 Constitution = HP+10, Defense+1, 1 Agility = Hit+1, Evasion+1, 1 Spirit = Magic Attack +2, Mana+10. Every time player levels up, HP+10, Mana+10, Agility+1, and will receive 5 AP.

Class Skills: [Sword Proficiency], [Agility Strengthening], [Mirage Blade], [Peerless Jade Dance]

Ultimate Skill: [Paragon]

Chapter 126 - Frozen Hearted Man-eater (2)

“Wah!! So powerful!!”

Seeing the stats of Yun Meng Xin’s new class, the other two girls gave cries of surprise. The Phantasmal Bladedancer was the class that Ling Chen had chosen out of the remaining ten classes, so even among Hidden Professions, it was quite powerful. Normally, only a super genius that appeared maybe every hundred years would have the right to change to such a class.

“So this is a Hidden Profession! It’s simply too monstrous. It’s probably stronger than a normal Warrior by many, many times..... Aww, I want a Hidden Profession too.” Xiao Qi said in shock and admiration.

“I want one as well.” Su’Er softly said. She suddenly realised what she had said, her cheeks turning pink. She hurriedly lowered her head, as if she had committed some sort of offence.

Ling Chen looked over the stats and skills of the class, and gave a somewhat satisfied nod. Of course, the Phantasmal Bladedancer class was far inferior to the “Ling Tian Battle Soul” he had almost died trying to get. However, it was still far, far superior to normal classes, “This is just the beginning. There aren’t many skills yet, but there’ll be more in future and the class will become stronger and stronger.”

Yun Meng Xin nodded her head. She knew that from this moment onwards, she held a significant advantage over other

players, and felt that she had taken a step closer to her goal. Moreover, she clearly understood that this powerful class was much stronger than normal Hidden Professions. Despite this, Ling Tian had casually given her this immensely powerful class change scroll voluntarily.

-181, -180,

-178, -183,

-179, -182,

“Big sister Meng Xin, quickly show us how strong your new class is! Quickly, quickly!” Xiao Qi impatiently shouted.

Yun Meng Xin stretched out her hands, and two two-handed swords illuminated by a golden-yellow glow appeared in her hands. Being able to use two swords at the same time was already an overpowered ability, because this meant that one person could display the power of two people. With a gentle smile, Yun Meng Xin walked forwards, her body turning. With the two swords, she began a beautiful spinning dance...

-181, -180,

-178, -183,

-179, -182,

The “Peerless Jade Dance” skill hit three Red Tailed Foxes. On top of the three foxes’ heads appeared two damage numbers... the Phantasmal Bladedancer class not only focused on damage, but also on Agility. The 10 Agility points gained when changing to the class had granted her 10 Hit. Thus, there not a single “MISS” when Yun Meng Xin attacked, something that was inconceivable for the Warrior class.

“Wah!! So strong!!”

-152, -150 !

One skill had directly reduced the three Red Tailed Foxes’ HP to a critical condition. Xiao Qi sighed in admiration. Receiving heavy injuries, the Red Tailed Foxes’ showed their cowardly nature, and they chose not to retaliate, instead choosing to run away.

Xiao Qi immediately launched a spear of ice and yelled, “My turn!”

The spear of ice impaled one of the foxes, freezing it and wiping out its remaining HP.

Beside Ling Chen, Su’Er also notched an arrow onto her bow and fired it. She had used a basic Archer skill, “Exploding Arrow”. As it hit the furthest Red Tailed Fox, its HP was also reduced to 0, and simultaneously exploded, killing the remaining Red Tailed Fox as well. Two numbers floated above the two foxes.

-152, -150!

“Ha! Perfect! Wrecking these little foxes is so easy!” Xiao Qi gleefully said as she made a victory “V” sign with her fingers. “Our first guild farming session has officially commenced… Ah! That’s right, big brother Ling Tian, you haven’t show us your strength yet! Quickly show us how strong you are!”

After Xiao Qi said this, Su’Er and Yun Meng Xin both curiously looked at Ling Chen… this was the first person in the entire world to leave Novice Village, and has two Celestial grade weapons. Just how strong was he?

“Alright!” Under the gaze of the three girls, Ling Chen suddenly felt that if they could farm and level up together, it would be much more interesting than farming alone. Being able to train with such beauties, no man would be dumb enough to reject it right?

-921, -1850, -927, -919, -1862……

As his two hands flashed with different coloured lights, Soaring Cloud and the Zephyr Blade appeared in his hands. He glanced at where the Red Tailed Foxes were gathered, and in a few steps, swiftly arrived at the area where there were many of them clustered together. His left hand swung towards the left, and his right hand swung towards the right, making two large arcs… two “Ling Tian Bursts” flew outwards.

Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang……

-921, -1850, -927, -919, -1862……

The AOE of the Peerless Jade Dance that Yun Meng Xin had just used was not comparable to the AOE of the Ling Tian Burst that Ling Tian had just used, let alone two Ling Tian Bursts. Nine Red Tailed Foxes had been hit by the two massive arcs of energy, and a wave of damage numbers appeared above their heads. After these numbers had disappeared, the nine Red Tailed Foxes that had been happily bouncing around all became corpses… what's more, out of the nine hits, three of them were critical hits!

Ling Chen stopped walking and lowered his arms. Behind him, the girls were completely silent. Xiao Qi's eyes and mouth widened, Su'Er covered her mouth with her hands-needless to say, her lips were probably parted as well. It was hard to see Yun Meng Xin's expression under her veil, but her eyes had a hint of shock in them as well.

Incredibly high damage figures, and a ridiculously large AOE… with one skill, he had annihilated nine Red Tailed Foxes! Every one of the damage figures were at least five times greater than Yun Meng Xin's! What was even more frightening was the speed at which he attacked. His lightning fast attack was so fast that they had only caught a glimpse of two rays of light, and suddenly a wave of damage figures had floated upwards.

"Heavens…!" Xiao Qi finally exclaimed, her two big eyes became incredibly excited. Su'Er's hands remained over her lips, her eyes shining as she gently said, "So strong…"

They knew that Ling Chen was very strong, but once Ling Chen had actually attacked, they had become completely mindblown. No matter if it was the strength of the attack or the speed, it shouldn't be possible to achieve-even if it was the Sword Emperor or Shinigami, it would still be impossible.

And yet, he had executed the skill so flawlessly, his motions as smooth as the flowing water of a stream...

If they knew that at his peak strength, he could even hit over 10,000 points of damage, they would go absolutely crazy.

"Too strong! Wayyy too strong! Impossibly strong! Stronger than... Stronger than my big brother by a lot!!"

Xiao Qi ran in front of Ling Chen, and looked at him with an expression full of admiration. The person she admired and looked up to originally was her big brother Xiao Qiu Feng, and this was the first time she had ever said the words "stronger than my big brother". It was clear to see that Ling Chen's attack had deeply impressed her. Ling Chen laughed and said, "Haha, if your big brother heard this, he'd be quite sad."

"No way, no way! My big brother isn't such a shallow person... you... so... you're so powerful! That attack just then could kill my big brother in one hit, and that AOE, and that speed... Heavens! If it was in close range, no one would be able to dodge it. Are these two the two weapons on the Equipment Rankings? I'm sure they are, even their external appearance looks way different to normal weapons. Just one is super strong, and yet you're using both at once, that's just incredible... oh, oh! The pets! Quickly show us

those two super strong pets, we all really want to see them."

"En! I want to see them as well!" Su'Er gently exclaimed as well.

Ling Chen was about to answer when he heard the sounds of a group of people approaching from behind him. He shifted his gaze, his smiling face instantly became serious, "I'll show you my buddies later. Right now, let's first take care of these people who shouldn't be here."

From the west, thirty or so players were aggressively marching towards them. Some held shields, some held bows, some held magic staffs... there were players of all of the different classes, walking towards Ling Chen and his group.

"These people seem to be coming towards us. Big brother Ling Chen, do you know them?" Xiao Qi asked.

"I don't know them, but I guess we're about to get to know each other." Ling Chen calmly said. Ling Chen had already guessed the purpose for which these people were coming here.

"You over there! Do you want to die or are you trying to die? You dare to come here to train, don't you know that this is the territory of the Black White Guild!!" There were four people facing Ling Chen. The leader's face was full of arrogance as he came up and started cursing at Ling Chen and his group, "And you're all covering your faces, it's obvious that you're all shady trash! We just left for a little while, and yet there are people who are arrogant enough to come to the territory of the Black White Guild... actually

you know what, your Daddy here just solved some problems together with the guildmaster, so I'm in a good mood. This time I'll let you guys go. Hurry up and get the hell out of here, otherwise your Daddy will kill all of you."

The three girls were all either wearing masks or veils, so no one could see their true appearances. Otherwise, what had just happened would have turned out completely differently. Yun Meng Xin slightly frowned and Su'Er became frightened, taking a step back. Xiao Qi's face twisted, evidently very angry. She was the Battle Alliance's princess. Normally, everyone would defer to her and treat her respectfully, and yet these people had dared to curse at her and her friends, "Oi! Who are you people, what right do you have to call this your territory? Does this place have your name written on it, or your daddy's name? A group of hooligans wants us to leave? If you want us to leave, you need to have enough power!"

With Ling Tian beside her, Xiao Qi threw caution to the wind and shouted back at them. Seeing Ling Chen massacre the nine Red Tail Foxes with just one strike, she was confident that with the same technique, he could easily destroy a group of thirty people as well.

"The Black White Guild are direct subsidiary braches of the Yan Huang Alliance. It is one of the '32 strongest guilds' under the Yan Huang Alliance, and the two guildmasters are ranked equal eighth on the Earth Rankings, the 'Black White Double Demons'! No wonder there was no one around here. Looks like this really is their territory, and they had just left for a short while." Yun Meng Xin quietly said to Ling Chen next to her.

Chapter 127 - Frozen Hearted Man-eater (3)

Yan Huang Alliance, Black White Guild? Ling Chen's eyes narrowed... the Yan Huang Alliance was really too vast. Simply walking around, they had bumped into one of the subsidiary guilds.

Although Xiao Qi had just ranted at them, her voice was simply too beautiful and pleasant. No matter how scathing her words were, no one would be able to get angry... especially men. Sure enough, the leader of the group was not angry at all. He flippantly smiled, "Oho! Such a feisty little sister! Heheh, with such a nice voice, I'll bet that you look quite nice as well. Well, if you want to train here, that's fine too. Our Black White Guild likes to protect little sisters. Now, call me big brother, and not only will I not chase you away, but I'll help you train. How does that sound? Hehehehehehe..."

The thirty players in the Black White Guild all revealed perverted smiles. Xiao Qi frowned, becoming truly angry. She was about to start shouting at those people, and then call over the nearby guild members from the Battle Alliance to beat them up. However, before she did so, a shadow stepped out in front of her. Ling Chen raised his arm up in front of her, and said, "This is the first time we've had a farming session together as Heart's Dream. Let's not waste our time by doing unnecessary things. Leave everything to me."

After hearing Ling Chen say this, although Xiao Qi was still quite angry, her face revealed an obedient smile. She said in a small voice, "Alright, alright... even if they're part of the Yan Huang Alliance, don't show them any mercy. Saying such things to me,

I'm so angry! Big brother Ling Tian, kick their butts for me!"

Ling Chen slightly nodded his head, then looked at the crowd in front of him. He emotionlessly said, "Is the so-called Yan Huang Alliance filled with trash like you?"

"Hm? What did you say?" The words Ling Chen had spoken caused the smiling leader's face to instantly darken. He squinted at Ling Chen, then started roaring in laughter, "Ha! This boy wants to look frickin' cool in front of the girls, he's simply gone crazy. Not only badmouthing our Black White Guild, but the Yan Huang Alliance itself. Hahahaha... boy, you're very brave and arrogant. Trying to look cool huh?" After saying this, he paused, then yelled, "But next time make sure you try to look cool in front of a suitable opponent! Go, cripple him! Teach him a lesson he'll remember!!"

The thirty players all started shouting and cheering as they charged. Their joyful faces made it seem like they were not going to fight, but rather were going to have some fun. There were thirty of them against four people, and three of them were lovely girls. They simply didn't take them seriously.

The three girls lifted up their weapons, seemingly very calm.

If Ling Chen had not just displayed his power, they would have panicked and become afraid. Four people against thirty was usually simply impossible. However, although they were a bit nervous, but they also felt excited at the same time... excited to see Ling Chen show his power like just then... because if he did, then maybe even half of those people would fall from just one strike.

“What’s going on?!”

“Yeah! What’s going on?!”

Just as the Black White Guild players started moving, a cold shout, closely followed by another shout, sounded out. These two voices caused the entire Black White Guild to immediately freeze, as if they were paralysed. They all became very subdued, and looked towards where the voices came from with looks of disbelief.

Behind them, two men slowly walked over, both dressed as Warriors. One was wearing white, one was wearing black… the most surprising thing was that they looked exactly the same. Seeing these two people, the leader of the group quickly ran over and greeted them in a humble manner that was extremely well practised, “G-Greetings guild masters! Why do the guild masters have time to come here today… we… we were all working hard to level up, and definitely did not slack off at all. It’s just that there were a few people who came to steal our territory, so… so we were taking care of it. Please do not worry, we will quickly take care of them and not lose face for the Black White Guild.

The two men who looked exactly the same looked close to thirty years old, and were tall and well built. Their looks were quite mediocre, and were the type that could be easily lost in a crowd if one was searching by their face. Their appearance caused Yun Meng Xin’s eyebrows to slightly frown, she walked up next to Ling Chen and quietly said, “They’re the guild masters of the Black White Guild, the Black White Double Demons!! The elder brother is the Black Demon, and the younger brother is the White Demon.

They're ranked equal eighth on the Earth Rankings, and are very strong. They are twins, and have a special mental connection. When they fight together, they're even comparable to a Heaven Rankings expert... why would they come here?"

"Humph, we've already levelled up to LV11, and were preparing to go to a better place to train, and just passed by here. Hm? Stealing territory? There are actually people who dare to steal the Black White Guild's territory? Do they want to die?" The Black Demon stared at Ling Chen.

"Yeah! There are actually people who want to steal our territory? They're looking to die!" The White Demon mimicked the Black Demon's gestures, staring straight at Ling Chen.

"As expected from the guild masters! You've already reached LV11!" The group leader's face was full of admiration. If he went any further he would be on his knees prostrating himself before the two guild masters, "Looks like after the Level Rankings are released, the two guild masters will definitely be one of the top players on there! Hmph, that supposedly high-levelled Ling Tian, soon the guild masters will catch up to him. Wasting the two guild masters' precious time is an incredibly onerous sin, we will immediately take care of this. What are you lot waiting around for... destroy all of them."

"Ah? Wait up." The Black Demon expressionlessly said as he stretched out his hand

"Yeah, wait up!" The White Demon also hurriedly said.

“Wait, wait, everyone stop for a moment.” The group leader quickly stopped the rest of the players, then respectfully asked, “What are the guild masters orders?”

The Black Demon said with a carefree tone, “Our Yan Huang Alliance represents the entire country. The Young Master said that we should never bully others.”

White Demon: “Yeah! We should never bully others.”

“Ah, yes, yes. We have never forgotten the guild masters’ orders, and have never bullied anyone.” The group leader hurriedly replied.

The Black Demon nodded as he said, “You can’t blame someone for stealing territory. Originally, this area did not belong to anyone. It belongs to anyone who has the power to take it.”

White Demon: “Yeah! Territory belongs to anyone who has the power to take it!”

Black Demon: “So, same rules. Want to steal territory? That’s fine, but you have to beat us first. Otherwise, get the hell out of here and remember whose territory you don’t have the right to steal!”

White Demon: “Big bro’s right! Beat us first, otherwise, get the hell out of here, and remember whose territory you don’t have the

right to steal!”

The group leader finally understood. After levelling up, the two guild masters didn’t have much to do, so they came here to have some fun. He straightened up, and yelled at Ling Chen and his group, “Oi, did you hear what our guild masters said? You want to steal our territory right? Fine, our guild masters are right here. If you can beat them, we’ll immediately leave and go somewhere else. However, if you can’t, heheh, then these girls... we’ll have some fun with them. You four can all fight together, but we won’t interfere. Hahahaha.”

The Black White Guild members all started to laugh wildly. Their guild masters were the Black White Double Demons on the Earth Rankings, and were the guild masters of the Yan Huang Alliance’s Black White Guild. Wherever they went, people would be scared witless. Facing those four people would be an extremely easy task for them.

Ling Chen stood where he was, unmoving. This comical display in front of him almost made him laugh out loud. He waited until they had stopped laughing, then calmly looked at the Black White Double Demons, and said in a low voice, “Idiots!”

Ling Chen’s words had the effect similar to kicking a hornet’s nest. The group leader started jumping up and down, as if a needle had been stuck into his posterior, “What!! You dare to insult our guild masters!! Goddamn, you don’t want to live, do you!! Brothers, attack!!”

The group of players let out a roar and charged towards Ling

Chen and his group. With the guild masters watching, it was a great opportunity to make themselves known, and gain a bit of reputation. This time, the Black White Double Demons did not stop them, and looked at Ling Chen as if he was a dead man. Heaven knows how long it had been since someone had dared to insult them and call them idiots.

With a cold laugh, Ling Chen raised his weapons, and was about to rush over. However, he had a sudden premonition, and stopped himself.

Whoosh...

A gust of fragrance blew over like the wind, and in front of Ling Chen appeared a white silhouette. Her sudden appearance caused the charging Black White Guild players to stop and stare at her... they all seemed to fall into a state of stupor, staring at the girl as if their souls had been stolen. All of the players had forgotten what they had been originally doing.

The girl who had appeared was wearing a long white dress that covered both her delicate and jade-like legs. Her gleaming and lustrous black hair tumbled down to her shoulders, covering half of her snowy white neck. Her slender figure and slim waist were simply enchanting. Although Ling Chen could only see her from behind, but he was still momentarily stunned. What was remarkable was that her figure and height were comparable to Yun Meng Xin's.

"B-beautiful girl!!"

“What beautiful girl!! This is a goddess… she’s so beautiful… I’ve never seen such a beautiful person before!”

All eyes were now on this girl. Without noticing it, more than half of all the players started drooling.

There were only two people who did not fall under the spell of the girl’s alluring looks. The two people said together, “Frozen Hearted Man-eater!”

The girl silently stood in front of all the players, her stare as cold as ice. Her demeanour made her seem like an icy and elegant snow lotus. Her lips parted, and coldly said, “You want to fight for territory right?”

Chapter 128 - Mu Bing Yao

“Big sister Mu!”

Seeing the girl, Xiao Qi and Su’Er shouted out in joy, and Yun Meng Xin’s expression calmed down. She said to Ling Chen while smiling, “All the members of Heart’s Dream have come together. She is the other member… Mu Bing Yao.”

Ling Chen: “……”

“Mmmhmm! She’s our super, super strong big sister Mu! She’s very powerful! Even those who are not part of the virtual world have definitely heard of her name.” Xiao Qi added, with a big smile on her face.

“Oh~~~” Ling Chen said, then silently looked at the girl from behind, marvelling at her soft and lustrous dark hair that casually tumbled down to her shoulders. Just looking at her from behind, Ling Chen was sure that she was also an incredibly beautiful girl. Ling Chen did not walk any closer to her, and a smile began to appear on his mouth. Over on the other side, the Black White Guild players were able to see the girl’s face. Her facial features were beautifully and exquisitely carved. Her dark and thin eyebrows hung over her beautiful eyes that radiated a sense of lordliness. However, her face was as cold as frost, and emitted a cold aura that could force people away from her for a thousand kilometre radius. However, not only did this icy arrogance not repel men, but instead aroused their subconscious desire to conquer her. There were many beautiful girls, but not many girls who were so perfect that they would be difficult to even dream of.

Although this girl rarely appeared in public places, she was still incredibly famous, and had been publicised by various media, as well as the China Battle Forums.

“S-s-she… she’s the Frozen Hearted Man-eater! The Frozen Hearted Man-eater ranked fifth on the Heaven Rankings!!”

Among the group of Black White Guild players, some began to shout. Every player on the Heaven Rankings was a legendary player in the eyes of everyone else. Where they stood could only be admired by the other players from far, far below. They did not even have the right to approach these supreme experts. Every player on the Heaven Rankings was well-known by everyone, and every player on the Heaven Rankings was someone that should not be angered at all costs. When the words “Frozen Hearted Man-eater” were shouted out, the players of the Black White Guild were all shocked out of their pleasant daydreams. Facing her icy stare, none of those players dared to reveal any perverted expressions, instead showing expressions of fear and dismay.

Heaven Rankings-Frozen Hearted Man-eater- Mu Bing Yao!

Hearing the name “Frozen Hearted Man-eater” had an effect on the group leader similar to a gigantic mountain falling onto his heart. Her beautiful eyes were mesmerising, yet the coldness that radiated from them tore apart his courage to even look at her. The Black White Double Demon’s sudden change in attitude confirmed that this person in front of him was indeed the Frozen Hearted Man-eater. Otherwise, the usually perverted and wild Black White Double Demons would not show such restraint when facing such a

beautiful goddess. The group leader took a few steps back, and asked with a tiny and trembling voice, “Guild masters... this person... this... what do we do?”

Saying that all Heaven Rankings experts were people who could defeat 100 people by themselves was not an exaggeration at all. In the past, when the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty engaged in a battle, the Sword Emperor had charged into the Skyfall Dynasty’s ten-thousand-man army three times, and had come charging out three times. For the grand finale, he had rushed through the back of the Skyfall Dynasty army, slaughtering his way to the Skyfall Dynasty’s Chief Commander, killing him and causing the entire Skyfall Dynasty’s army to fall into chaos. The Sword Emperor’s deeds were all incredible and almost unbelievable like stories of myths and legends. The third ranked player on the Heaven Rankings of the Skyfall Dynasty was also incredibly powerful. As a Summoner, he had once summoned hundreds of Emissaries of Hell, singlehandedly stopping an army of 1000 people.

The Black White Guild had thirty people on their side, but to a Heaven Rankings expert, that number was only enough to get warmed up.

The Black White Double Demons looked at each other, then walked up to Mu Bing Yao. The Black Demon had a big smile on his face as he said, “Today we are incredibly lucky and honoured to be able to meet the famous Frozen Hearted Man-eater...”

The White Demon chimed, “Yes, yes, so lucky to meet the famous Frozen Hearted Man-eater...”

The Black Demon continued, “The Alliance Master told us that if we had the chance to meet the Frozen Hearted Man-eater, we were to humbly request that you join our Alliance. If we had the honour of having you join us, we’ll guarantee that you will be a core member of the Yan Huang Alliance, and will be the leader of all Assassins...”

They actually had the audacity to try to steal Heart’s Dream’s guild member in front of the whole guild! The initial offer of being a core member was already incredibly tempting... and in addition, the leader of the Yan Huang Alliance’s Assassins! Given the size of the Yan Huang Alliance, there would be at least millions of Assassins. Being in charge of one million assassins, that position was one of immense power and glory.

In stark comparison, Heart’s Dream was simply too small and pitiful. Before Ling Chen had joined, these girls’ pride and joy, as well as source of hope, was Mu Bing Yao! Because she was a super expert ranked fifth on the Heaven Rankings, as soon as the news that Mu Bing Yao had joined a guild called “Heart’s Dream”, people would flock to join. They simply couldn’t bear someone like this being stolen away from them. After listening for a short while, Xiao Qi simply couldn’t endure anymore, and was about to step up and curse at the Black White Double Demons for being so shameless. However, before she had the opportunity to do so, Mu Bing Yao rudely cut them off, coldly saying, “No need to waste your breath! Weren’t we fighting for territory? 1v1 or group battle, your choice!”

“No, no!” The Black Demon hurriedly waved his hands, “There is no enmity between us, and the Alliance Master already told us that

if we were to meet the Frozen Hearted Man-eater, we must act with courtesy... just then, our dispute was with the people behind you. We have absolutely no intention of going against you."

"Yeah! Our dispute was with the people behind you, we have absolutely no intention of going against you."

Even if the Black White Double Demons were not afraid of Mu Bing Yao's personal power, they still would not dare to attack her. What they had said about the guild master Long Yun Tian of the Yan Huang Alliance telling them to treat her with courtesy was absolutely true. No matter what Long Yun Tian's true intentions were, he was at least perfectly protecting the Yan Huang Alliance's reputation and fame. Not allowing players of the Alliance to use power to bully people, not allowing players to do things that would bring shame to the Alliance, and especially not allowing them to anger experts... especially those on the Heaven and Earth Rankings. As such, the Yan Huang Alliance's reputation has always been quite good. Otherwise, if they provoked the entire player base, they would have to endure very harsh consequences. Moreover, it was because of its extremely good reputation that the Yan Huang Alliance could develop so quickly, growing by leaps and bounds every year.

The Black Demon amicably said, "Since it's like this, then we'll give the Frozen Hearted Man-eater some face. However..." A troubled look appeared on the Black Demon's face, "to be fair, it was your friends who wanted to steal our territory first. All we were doing was following the standard custom. If we gave away territory just like that, I'm afraid it would damage the reputation of the Black White Guild and Yan Huang Alliance. However, facing against the Frozen Hearted Man-eater is something that we would

never dare to do, so we're a bit stuck here..."

The Black Demon looked towards Ling Chen, and his eyes quickly flashed with a hint of viciousness, "Let's each send one player out to 1v1. Whichever player wins, the territory will belong to their side. How does that sound?"

From the moment the Black Demon had looked towards him, Ling Chen knew what he was up to. Before Mu Bing Yao had the chance to reply, Ling Chen answered, "Not bad, not bad, this suggestion is very good. Then, who will you choose to send?"

"Very easy. Both sides can choose who they want to send, but us two brothers won't fight... but you, the guy over there, do you really dare to just cower behind the girls?" Talking to Ling Chen, his tone was devoid of the respect and courtesy he had shown Mu Bing Yao. He turned his head, and said to the group leader, "Savage Wolf, you go!"

The Black Demon's aim was very obvious. As the other side only had one male, if Ling Chen did not step up, he would be ridiculed as a coward. The player called Savage Wolf immediately stood up, and revealed his weapon... a gleaming dagger, and made taunting gesture towards Ling Chen. Although they were not willing to offend Mu Bing Yao, but they did not hold themselves back if it was anyone else.

-201 !

Mu Bing Yao turned around and looked at Ling Chen. When she

saw Savage Wolf making the taunting gesture, her eyes flashed with killing intent.

“You don’t even have the right for him to attack!!”

Emanating killing intent, Mu Bing Yao caused the nearby Black White Guild members to break into cold sweat. Mu Bing Yao dashed forwards, and turned into a white blur as she flew towards the Assassin called Savage Wolf. Before he even had the chance to react, a bright line appeared on his neck.

Pshhhh~~~

-201!

Savage Wolf never expected that Mu Bing Yao would attack a small fry like himself. Under the might of a Heaven Ranking expert, he did not even dare think about retaliating. He subconsciously retreated as fast as he could. However, apart from seeing a white blur, he was not able to see what had just happened. The light that had just swept across his body swept back in the opposite direction, accurately cutting across the exact same area.

Having the exact same starting ground as everyone else, as well not enough time to become too much stronger than other players, Mu Bing Yao’s attack power was only slightly higher than most other Assassins. However, the two explosive and incredibly fast attacks that she had just pulled off were definitely not things that normal players could achieve. Assassins were not very tanky classes. After taking two hits from Mu Bing Yao, Savage Wolf’s HP

had been reduced to 0, and fell to the ground. After his body disappeared, a few potions and the Iron dagger remained on the ground.

"Wahh!! Big sister Mu is so strong!!" Xiao Qi excitedly clapped her hands together. Su'Er's face also revealed a look of respect and admiration. However, Yun Meng Xin slightly frowned... the Mu Bing Yao she knew would not deign to attack such a small fry... but what she had just seen was a sudden flare of anger, accompanied by the phrase "You don't even have the right for him to attack"...

Could it be that she knew Ling Tian?

Chapter 129 - Wrath of the Man-Eater

Everything took place within a few seconds. By the time the Black White Double Demons had realised what was happening, Savage Wolf had already become a corpse on the ground. The Black White Double Demon's eyes widened. Mu Bing Yao was publicly acknowledged as the number two Assassin in all of China, only slightly inferior to the 'Shinigami'. It only took her a moment to take a life, and the two lightning fast attacks she had just launched caused them to be fearful and apprehensive.

"Your side has lost, now piss off." Standing in front of Savage Wolf's corpse, Mu Bing Yao's was as cold as a thousand layers of ice. Although she was incredibly beautiful, just looking into her eyes caused one to feel their heart becoming frozen.

The Black White Double Demon originally intended for Ling Chen, the only male on the other side, to participate in the '1v1'. They never anticipated that Mu Bing Yao would be the one to surprisingly attack... She was the revered Frozen Hearted Man-eater, ranked fifth on the Heaven Rankings, and yet she had stooped to kill of a small fry like Savage Wolf. The Black Demon's face tensed, then relaxed after a while. He did not dare to go against the Alliance Master's orders. Instead, he smiled, "As expected from the Frozen Hearted Man-eater, ranked fifth on the Heaven Rankings. Strong! We lost, and we definitely don't dare to be sore losers..." He looked at the Black White Guild players, and released his rage on them, "You useless trash! You dared to fight for territory with the Frozen Hearted Man-eater's friends. Hurry up and piss off! If you see them in future, make sure you treat them with respect, got it?!"

White Demon: “Yeah! Hurry up and piss off! If you see them in future, make sure you treat them with respect, got it?!”

“Yes, yes!” Seeing the guild masters so angry, the guild members could only agree and lower their heads. They bitterly regretted their actions from before-if they hadn’t left for a short while, those people would not have come here to fight for the territory, and so they would not have had such rotten luck to meet the Frozen Hearted Man-eater. However, given the fame and power of the Frozen Hearted Man-eater, they did not feel too ashamed.

“Let’s go!”

Wherever the Black White Double Demons went, they would be viewed with respect and awe. The Black Demon held in his anger, and walked towards Ling Chen and his group with the White Demon trailing behind him. Evidently, having reached LV11, they were preparing to go deeper into the wilderness to train. Walking past Ling Chen, the Black Demon smiled mockingly at Ling Chen and raised the middle finger of his right hand towards him, saying in a low voice, “Trash that hides behind women.”

“Yeah, trash that hides behind women!” The White Demon copied the Black Demon’s gesture, and raised his middle finger towards Ling Chen.

The moment they spoke, they suddenly felt an incomparable chill of coldness. Behind them came a wave of killing intent.

“Looking to die!!!”

The Mu Bing Yao who had just calmed down reacted as if they had committed some grave offense, her eyes radiating dark and cold killing intent.

Killing intent was something that could not be smelt, tasted or physically touched. It was something that normal people only read about in novels, and assumed only existed in fiction. However, the killing intent that was felt by the Black White Double Demons felt like a steel knife on their necks, and a wave of terror spread along their bodies. They turned around, and saw a white blur with a cold light coming rapidly towards them. By the time they had registered what was happening, the figure was only centimetres away from them.

Mu Bing Yao only had one weapon, but the Black White Double Demons both felt themselves targeted by her. To rank as the number two Assassin in all of China, the Frozen Hearted Man-eater's attack power was incredibly frightening. In all of China, not many people could directly evade or resist this strike, let alone the Black White Double Demons who were not prepared at all. Despite their shock, they still reacted quickly, jumping to the left and right respectively. They simultaneously took out their weapons, which were both exactly the same-Copper grade swords.

However, it was not so easy to dodge the Frozen Hearted Man-eater's attacks.

When attacking, the Frozen Hearted Man-eater had already predicted that they would each dodge towards different directions. When the Black White Double Demons had moved, her attacking

right hand slightly shifted, slicing towards the White Demon's neck.

182!

The Black White Double Demons used all of their points to raise their attack power, and thus had low defence and HP. This one attack had reduced the White Demon's HP by almost half. The White Demon's body tilted, almost losing his balance. The Black White Double Demons rapidly retreated, trying to get as far as possible away from Mu Bing Yao. This was the first time they had been attacked by the Frozen Hearted Man-eater, and felt indescribable shock and terror. How terrifying the Frozen Hearted Man-eater was, was only known by those 'fortunate' enough to die by her hands. The Heaven Rankings and Earth Rankings were not two rankings that could be compared-instead, they were on two completely different levels. Those who were able to get into the Heaven Rankings were true monsters. Being attacked by the inhumanly strong fifth-ranked player on the Heaven Rankings, these two Earth Rankings experts vividly felt the god of death standing right behind them.

"Frozen Hearted Man-eater!! What is the meaning of this! We've already given you so much face, so what do you want!!" The Black Demon roared as he continued to retreat.

"I want you to die!!"

Mu Bing Yao's reply was only a short sentence, and her body once again turned into a white blur, charging towards the White Demon.

“What’s going on with big sister Mu? Why is she so angry… does she have some sort of grudge with the Black White Double Demons?” Xiao Qi asked while covering her mouth, in a excited and bewildered tone.

Yun Meng Xin looked at Ling Chen, and thought back to the gestures and words the Black White Demons had made and said to him.

Ling Chen glanced at Mu Bing Yao, then said in a quiet voice, “We’re all guildmates, so we shouldn’t let her fight by herself. Su Su, shoot an exploding arrow a bit further than where the guy wearing white is… Qi Qi, use your ice blast… you don’t have to be too accurate, as long as it’s close to them.

“Eh? Got it!”

Being able to enter the Earth Rankings, the Black White Double Demons definitely were not ordinary people. Although right now they were frantically retreating, it was mainly because of Mu Bing Yao’s sudden attack. If they were allowed to recover and counterattack, Mu Bing Yao would have to expend quite a bit of effort in order to kill them. Yun Meng Xin had also mentioned before, being twins, they had a special mental connection. If they worked together, it was even possible for the to defeat Heaven Rankings experts.

Su’Er immediately drew her bow. She quickly took aim, and her little hands released an exploding arrow which flew towards the

White Demon. Mu Bing Yao immediately sensed an arrow approaching from behind, and quickly determined that it would not hit her. As such, she took no notice of it, and rushed ahead, targeting the White Demon. After frantically retreating, the White Demon ignored the attacking Mu Bing Yao, and raised the sword n his hand. He prepared to use the Warrior class beginner attack skill “Heroic Strike”, but before he even began to execute the skill, Mu Bing Yao had already disappeared.

The White Demon’s mind reeled, and his actions also momentarily stopped. In the next moment, Mu Bing Yao reappeared, the dagger in her hand already incredibly close to his chest... having just changed class to Assassin, her Assassin class stealth technique was still at the lowest rank, and was not usable for very long. Although she could only use it for half a second, and could not even change her attacking position in that extremely short period of time, she had successfully caused the White Demon to momentarily pause... one moment was enough time for an expert like the Frozen Hearted Man-eater to plunge her dagger into the White Demon’s chest.

-179 !

-158, -160 !

-179!

After being hit for the first time, the White Demon had hurriedly used a HP potion, raising his HP back to full HP. This second strike caused him to lose almost half of his HP again. As HP potions had a cooldown of 5 seconds, he could only pray that he had enough time

to use another one. However, two rays of light streaked towards him from his side.

Under normal conditions, the White Demon would have been able to easily dodge them, but facing Mu Bing Yao, he did not dare to take his focus off her. Only until he heard the whistle of the two projectiles did he sense the danger, by which time it was already too late. He was simultaneously pierced by an arrow and a spear of ice.

-158, -160!

The White Demon's HP was immediately reduced to 0, and his corpse fell to the ground. The powerful White Demon of the Black White Double Demons had been executed without even striking back once.

"Little brother!!"

"Second guild master!!"

The Black Demon and the rest of the Black White Guild members roared in shock... White Demon being killed in the wilderness was something that had not happened in many, many years!! Just this was enough to send the Black White Guild into chaos.

"Wah!! Wah!! I actually... I actually killed one of the Black White Double Demons!!" Seeing the White Demon fall from her ice spear, Xiao Qi's eyes widened, her excitement showing in her bright and

starry eyes... she had actually defeated an expert on the Earth Rankings!! This was something worth bragging to big brother Xiao Qiu Feng about!

The Black Demon who was left was not even worth looking at. The moment he had let out that shout, Mu Bing Yao's body had moved as fast as lightning to his side, and slashed at his throat... in the real world, slashing one's throat meant instant death, but in Mystic Moon, there were no such things as weak 'areas' on the body, on 'critical hits'. As such, whether the area of the body hit was the neck or a finger, the damage would be the same. However, Mu Bing Yao's attacks had always targeted the neck, as if she was killing them in real life... perhaps this was something she had long become accustomed to.

Mu Bing Yao's body became like a phantom, fiercely and rapidly attacking the Black Demon. Every time she attacked, she was guaranteed to hit him. After three lightning fast attacks, the Black Demon also fell to the ground... Mu Bing Yao's dress was not very tight around her, and it fluttered in the breeze as she attacked. However, from the beginning, not even a corner of her dress touched the Black White Double Demons.

"Woah!! Big sister Mu is so strong!! Too strong!! I worship you to death!! Wahwahwahwah!!" Xiao Qi yelled as she clapped her hands. Su'Er's eyes glittered, and were also filled with admiration towards the Mu Bing Yao who had killed the Black Demon within seconds.

In the blink of an eye, before the rest of the Black White Guild had even reacted to what was going on, the Black White Double

Demons had already been eliminated by Mu Bing Yao. Seeing this girl who was extremely beautiful, yet filled with killing intent and had eyes that were incredibly cold, the Black White Guild members began to tremble, their teeth chattering... normally, the phrase they always yelled was, “Our guild masters are invincible”, and had boasted that their guild masters were on the Earth Rankings. However, right in front of their eyes, the two guild masters had been easily and efficiently dispatched, almost without any resistance at all.

Earth Rankings experts, in front of Heaven Rankings experts, were almost nothing... no! It wasn’t that their guild masters were too weak, but that the Frozen Hearted Man-eater, China’s second ranked Assassin, was simply frighteningly powerful!

Chapter 130 - Might Of Xi Ling (1)

Currently, a maximum of 100 levels exist in Mystic Moon, which makes levelling up quite difficult. Death penalties are harsh – dying will immediately reduce your level by 1, regardless of your level prior to death. However, the power and wide availability of potions make death a rare occurrence: potions sold in stores instantly recover lost health and are available to players of all levels.

But even if one carried an infinite amount of healing potions that restored 10,000 HP, they would be completely useless if faced against a player of such skill, such as the Frozen Hearted Man-Eater.

The deaths of the Black White Double Demons were somewhat unjust. They were, after all, experts on the Earth Rankings. If they had directly faced off against Mu Bing Yao, even if they couldn't beat her, they wouldn't have died so quickly and pitifully. An Assassin's power in direct battle is inferior to their offensive power when launching a surprise attack on an unprepared target. But when Mu Bing Yao suddenly attacked, they were caught completely off-guard, and never had a chance to recover. Factoring in Xiao Qi and Su'Er's ice spears and arrows being shot from the side, they didn't even have a chance to retaliate before they became corpses on the ground.

Two guild masters had died in the hands of Mu Bing Yao. The remaining players of the Black White Guild froze on the spot; their hearts trembling in fear, with absolutely no clue of what to do next. Still unable to gather up his courage to charge in, the group leader gritted his teeth again. His only option was to bite the bullet

and yell:

"You... How dare you kill our guild masters... This isn't over yet! You, have offended the Yan Huang Alliance, even... even if you have an expert on the Heaven Rankings, we will still... Retreat! We will come back and return and this favour!!"

Even after shouting so fiercely, his stand-up ended with an order to retreat. And in a single moment the place was cleared, spotless, and not a single person left standing in sight.... What a joke. Two guild masters, both 8th in the Earth Rankings, instantly killed. Even if their guild had sent over 30 people against them, charging in would not have been any different from suicide.

" Ha! Ha! Ha! Hurry up and run with your tails between with your legs! Better be careful and run faster or else our big sister Mu will catch up to you!" Xiao Qi mocked, sticking out her tongue towards them.

Without having said another word, the bodies of the Black White Double Demons disappeared in place...As experts in the Earth Rankings, it would have been a devastating blow to their image and reputation if news of their shameful deaths were to start spreading.

A fight that was supposed to be epic – legendary, even – was immediately turned on its head to become something completely different after the appearance of Mu Bing Yao, who used an unprecedented method to end the fight at a moment's notice. After the Black White Guild left, the three girls immediately gathered beside Mu Bing Yao.

“Luckily you came this time big sister Mu,” Yun Meng said happily.

“As expected of big sister Mu – to be so strong… it’s no wonder that even big brother is so … by you.” Xiao Qi said smiling. She had to look up at Mu Bing Yao while she talked, as Mu Bing Yao was quite tall.

“Hello big sister Mu.” Su’Er greeted. However, her voice was too soft and delicate that it was overthrown by Xia Qi’s voice.

“Oh yeah, big sister Mu, I haven’t introduced you yet! This is the person we talked of before, the last member of Heart’s Dream…” Filled with both excitement and mystery, Xiao Qi dragged Ling Chen before Mu Bing Yao. “Wanna guess who he is? You guys might just get a fright if I tell you who he is.”

Yun Meng’s eyes looked across the faces of Ling Chen and Mu Bing Yao, and said with a smile, “Big sister Mu, you guys know each other right?”

“What?” Xiao Qi and Su’Er exclaimed as they quickly fell into a frozen silence.

Ling Chen’s eyes were focused on Mu Bing Yao, admiring. She bore a tall stature that most women would not normally have, and it seemed difficult to grasp her exact age – probably at least 25 or 26 years old but at the same time it didn’t seem like she was even at the age of 20. Having her and Yun Meng Xin standing next to each

other was like basking in a dazzling, beautiful scenery; one as elegant as a celestial and the other like a cold lotus. With a view like that, one can't help but praise the miraculous powers of the creator, yet at the same time lament his favouritism.

In contrast, Mu Bing Yao, with her usual cool disposition and frozen heart, would not normally display any kind of reaction, even with Ling Chen's intense gazing. But this time, things were different: her face faintly revealed something unnatural, her eyes appeared erratic as if she wanted to come into Ling Chen's line of sight, but was hesitant and scared to do so.

This time, Su'Er and Xia Qi could pick up the hints, and with a weird look on her face, Xiao Qi said, "Big sister Mu, you don't really know him do you? Then again, when you suddenly got angry before, it seemed like it was because the Black White Double Demons insulted him."

"Yes, we do know each other, in fact we have known each other for a long time. Isn't that right Bing Yao?" Ling Chen replied for Mu Bing Yao. A plain and simple answer.

Mu Bing Yao also faintly nodded in confirmation, returning to her usual calm personality.

" Ah? So you really do know each other? Ling Tian Brother, did you join our Heart's Dream because of big sister Mu?"

"One of the reasons, yes." Ling Chen answered slowly. What Xiao Qi said was indeed very close to the truth, except it was the other

way around.

“Ah!! Yes yes……” Xia Qi’s eyes suddenly lit up. A bold and stimulating idea made her almost jump in excitement, “Big brother Ling Tian, could it be, could it be…”

Ling Chen: “What?”

“Could it be that you are big sister Mu’s boyfriend!?”

Yun Meng Xin : “……”

Su’Er : “……”

Mu Bing Yao : “……”

Ling Chen : “ ~!@#￥%……”

Both Ling Chen and Mu Bing Yao stood there in shock. There was no denial. Xiao Qi, extremely pleased with her accurate deduction, exclaimed, “Ha! I knew it! I guessed right! Wow! I, Qi Qi, am so smart.”

“ Wh…Why do you think I am her boyfriend?” Ling Chen stuttered as he wiped the sweat off his forehead.

Xiao Qi’s mouth arched into an even bigger smile as she

confidently said: “Well isn’t it simple? The big sister Mu who wouldn’t even give a guy another look actually became so angry when those two, the Black White Double Demons, insulted you. Of course, it could only be her favourite person for her to have become so angry. And there’s more, there’s more! When you were staring at Mu Sister just then, she seemed a bit off! Ha! This is obviously because she becomes very shy when the person she likes stares at her so intensely! Also, anyone worthy of the beautiful and strong Mu Sister must be even stronger himself! Big brother Ling Tian, you are quite the powerful one yourself – you shouldn’t have any trouble winning against big sister Mu. With all these reasons here, not even you could muster enough shame to deny it.”

Mu Bing Yao : “.....”

Ling Chen knocked on his forehead and with a face full of innocence, and looked at Mu Bing Yao, “Ah, what Qi Qi has said is just too true... Bing Yao, even I’m starting to wonder if I am in actual fact your boyfriend.....oh, how about the two of us just become...”

Mu Bing Yao’s eyes flickered rapidly a couple of times and before Ling Chen could finish his sentence she quickly said two very cold words, “We’re not!”

“No? but, but.....” Xiao Qi, however unconvinced, believed in Mu Bing Yao’s words, “Then... then what kind of relationship does big sister Mu and big brother Ling Tian have? Just good friends?”

Mu Bing Yao: “.....no”.

“Not even a friend? Then what kind of relationship is it? I won’t believe that you guys are just people who don’t really know each other – big sister Mu clearly just had a terrible temper because of Ling Tian Brother…….”

“Okay, that’s enough. There’s no need to be in such a rush to know everything, you’ll slowly learn of these things in the future.” Seeing as Mu Bing Yao didn’t seem to want to talk about her relationship between herself and Ling Tian, Yun Meng Xin promptly defused Xiao Qi’s curiosity and said anxiously, “Somehow, we’ve managed to kill the Black White Double Demons… But in accordance to how the Yan Huang Alliance works, if they have been wronged, they will seek out the perpetrators and enact revenge several times over. If we continue to stay here, it won’t be long until the Black White Guild gathers enough man-power to enact that revenge. So let’s get out of here first.”

Despite having killed the Black White Double Demons and scaring off the 30 or so players of their guild, to Heart’s Dream, this was definitely not a good thing, especially for a guild that had yet to be established and developed. And to have already made such a formidable enemy …if this conflict were to escalate and accidentally reach the ears of Long Tian Yun, they would definitely be in big trouble.

With Yun Meng Xin’s slight reminder, Su’Er and Xiao Qi immediately understood the immense severity of the situation. They currently relied on Mu Bing Yao’s powers to kill the Black White Double Demons. It was revealed that the Black White Double Demons carried the trait of a vindictive character, meaning

that they would definitely remember this. Heart's Dream were able to triumph against the Black White Guild this time, but with over thousands of players belonging to the guild, the troubles facing Heart's Dream grew larger than they could currently manage.

"But this is the best place to farm and level, and we were finally able to get it. It'll be a shame if we leave now" Xiao Qi said anxiously, but then her eyes suddenly lit up, "How about I get my older brother over here! With him here we would have nothing to be afraid of, even if the entire Black White Guild were to come back!"

"Your brother's Battle Alliance is also a part of the Yan Huang Alliance. If you bring him into this mess, you'll only complicate matters further," Yun Meng Xin said as she shook her head.

"Meng Xin is right, we shouldn't stay here any longer. Let's go, I'll take you guys to somewhere safe." Ling Chen said as he mysteriously smiled.

" What? What kind of place it? Is it suitable for party levelling? Su Su and I are nearly LV15. We're so close to being able to use our Gold equipment!"

"You'll see when you get there."

Ling Chen led the four girls eastwards, walking towards the deeper parts of the plains filled with higher level monsters. Those who entered Dragon City were usually players at around LV10, and were only able to handle the monsters in the plain regions close by.

However, Ling Chen led the girls to a part of the plains where no players could be seen at all.

Level 15 Red Eyed Lizard Territory.

Seeing the ground crawling with the many large lizards, the Ling Chen who had killed countless of their kind felt somewhat guilty.

“ Yep, this is the place.” Said Ling Chen.

“ Here? But the monsters here are LV15...Su Su, Meng Xin and I probably won’t be able to kill them.” Xiao Qi said weakly. Su’Er immediately nodded in agreement.

Chapter 131 - Might Of Xi Ling (2)

Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su'Er, as well as Mu Bing Yao were all only LV10 right now. Because of the level difference, the damage they dealt to the Red Eyed Lizards was greatly decreased. Even if they could barely survive, training on such monsters was extremely dangerous and costly; the efficiency of training was also decreased.

Ling Chen scanned the area, making sure no other players were around and said calmly, "Don't worry, the monsters here are not scary at all. See, the thing about training is that sometimes you don't need to do it yourself, and the efficiency will be greater."

'Umm... what do you mean? Oh, I know! Big brother Ling Tian, are you going to kill these monsters by yourself and just allow us four girls to follow you?

Ling Chen '.....'

Ling Chen had nothing to say towards Xiao Qi's comment. He moved his hands and said lightly, "Xi Ling, Xiao Hui, I'll leave this up to you guys."

Upon his call, Xiao Hui and Xi Ling were summoned at the same time. This was also the first time he had summoned his two pets in front of others.

He knew that Xiao Hui and Xi Ling were both strong, and if other players found out about their stats, it would cause a great

commotion. However, with four girls by his side, and having only met three of them for the first time, he summoned them nonetheless. It was not because he was overly careless, but because he was confident in his judgement.

Caw~~~

Xi Ling's cry pierced the sky as she spread out her red wings. Xi Ling's body, gorgeous beyond description, appeared in a flaming wave. It circled around Ling Chen a few times then flew towards the Red Eyed Lizard pack. As it flew, its body shimmered in a combination of red and gold.

As expected, Xi Ling's appearance made the four girls stare in disbelief and amazement. They kept their eyes on Xi Ling, not even blinking.

"So beautiful...."

"Wow! Such a beautiful bird! Its feathers are like fire and it's beautiful beyond belief."

"Is that.... Big brother Ling Tian's pet?"

Because of Crimson Spirit's magnificent appearance, the four girls completely ignored Xiao Hui who was beside Ling Chen's side. Ling Chen looked at the girls, yawned, walked a few steps and found a suitable spot to lie down on the soft grass patch. He closed his eyes and prepared himself for a comfortable nap, saying

‘Alright babes, I’m going to sleep for a bit, you girls wake me up after an hour.”

The four girls snapped back to reality and looked in disbelief at Ling Tian who dared to sleep in the monster’s territory. Xiao Qi hurried in front of him and said, “Oi oi oi, big brother Ling Tian, this is the territory of LV15 monsters, why are you sleeping….”

Xiao Qi looked behind her… the next second, her mouth formed an ‘O’ shape.

Flying to the sky above Red Eyed Lizards, Xi Ling’s wings flapped and waves of red flame appeared from its two wings. The flame scattered down in a fifteen meter radius. The ground and the twenty something Red Eyed Lizards were all covered in flames.

-6000, -6000, -6000, -6000, -6000, -6000…..

The attack caused big numbers that the girls had never seen before to fill up the ground of flames. They all looked in disbelief and could not process what their eyes were seeing

“Ding…. Your pet ‘Crimson Spirit’ has levelled up, now LV1, HP+40, MP+1000, Physical Attack Power+10, Magic Attack Power+300”.

Red Eyed Lizards had fire resistance, but under Xi Ling’s rootless fire, their resistances were little to nothing. Under Wild Flames’ powerful attack, 20 or so Red Eyed Lizards became dead lizards,

coincidentally allowing Xi Ling to level up. Ling Chen opened his eyes slightly and looked at the flames that had yet to disappear. When he saw Xi Ling's overall stats from before, he knew that although he had the "Heaven's Jealousy" debuff, even if he didn't train at all, he would still be able to level up faster than any other players. Because of Xi Ling's scary attacks and area of affect skills, it made levelling up seem like child's play. When it flapped its wings, and flames came scattering down, no monsters would be able to survive. Even though Xi Ling was only LV1, her powers were strong enough to even take down level 30 monsters with no problem. The experience gain would be higher, making the levelling speed faster. However, the reason why he did not do this, only he himself knew.

Xi Ling was too overpowered; this was something that crossed his mind when Ling Chen first obtained Xi Ling. If its HP was equivalent of Xiao Hui's, it would no longer be a problem of being overpowered anymore; it would just be a big bug.

Xi Ling's attack left the four girls speechless. Seeing so many corpses, Xiao Hui ran up like lightning and began swallowing. He spat out a few elementary strength crystals and brought them, as well as other items, quickly to Ling Chen's backpack.

The 30 metre radius was completely decimated by Xi Ling. She flew towards another area where Red Eyed Lizards were grouped closely together and unleashed another wave of Wild Flames. In the flaming fire, another pack of Red Eyed Lizards was destroyed without a chance of retaliation. Red Eyed Lizards were unable to fly and could not attack vertically, so they couldn't touch Xi Ling no matter how hard they tried. Xi Ling was able to completely wipe them out without any potential danger or threat.

Wild Fire had a cooldown of 5 seconds. In these 5 seconds Xi Ling was still busy, flying down and using normal fire attacks to burn small groups of Red Eyed Lizards to death. Its normal fire attacks all had an area of effect, and were able to deal up to 3000 damage, making the lizards not stand a chance.

Waves of dying lizards, LV15 monsters, were so powerless under Xi Ling's attacks that they were no different to ants. Even the occasional elite lizards didn't stand a chance. The four girls' EXP bars quickly filled up. The EXP shared between the five people and one pet still caused their EXP bars to grow at an extremely fast pace.

Xi Ling flew in the sky while Xiao Hui ran around on the ground, working tirelessly, and unceasingly running. The money, potions, crystals and other miscellaneous items were all picked up with the same efficiency, keeping up with Xi Ling.

"So these two... are his pets, one is Celestial Grade and the other is Heaven's End Grade."

"That bird is so beautiful, it's so obscenely strong!! This is Heaven's End Grade, how can it be... my goodness"

"In...cre..di....ble'

6000 damage, and it even had a massive area of affect. If this sort of attack was unleashed by a high level boss it would be understandable. But a player's pet with this attack... At the current

average levels of players, this was completely beyond their belief. They had heard about Heaven's End Grade, in a forgotten virtual game. This type of Heaven's End Grade pet had appeared before, but never as powerful as this one.

Even the usually calm Yun Meng Xin was completely in shock. She looked at Ling Chen who was still sleeping peacefully and came to realization. The level of the pet cannot surpass the master's level, this was basic game knowledge. In other words, Xi Ling's level could not be higher level 13 but already possessed so much power. If this was seen by the other players and word got around, then the people who were capable would do everything in their power to get their hands on this Heaven's End Grade pet. With the power of this pet, anyone, even an idiot could become one of the strongest in this world. Such a high damage area of affect skill, even if the top elite players worked together, they would still be burned into ashes.

Ling Tian... where did he get such a broken pet... Why would Mystic Moon allow such an overpowered pet to appear in the early stages of the game?

In a short amount of time, the territory that was filled with Red Eyed Lizards was now completely empty. The group had also gained a considerable amount of experience. Yun Meng Xin calmed herself down and says calmly "Big sister Mu, Qi Qi, Su Su..."

"Ah?" the three other girls turned to her, still mesmerized.

Yun Meng Xin suddenly became serious and said slowly, "What you just saw, do not mention it to anyone.... Even the people you

trust the most, no matter what, understand?”

Not needing any explanation, Mu Bing Yao, Xiao Qi, Su Er, all nodded in agreement. The reason was too obvious-such a strong pet could cause anyone to have a strong desire to obtain it. If what happened today was spread, it would bring endless problems to not only Ling Chen but also to the whole of Heart’s Dream.

Ling Chen was still completely relaxed. This is the first time he enjoyed the comfort of the fresh winds on the field. He closed his eyes and went back to sleep.

Beside him were the sounds of the girls’ gentle, delicate and refreshing voices.

Chapter 132 - A Future That Isn't Bleak

Xi ling's flame attacks are extremely powerful, however, this is balanced by relatively high mana costs. Using wild flames once costs 300 mana, but she also has the ability to regenerate 1% of her mana per second. Having more than 10,000 mana at level 0, she should be able to recover it quickly after using it.

In the morning, Xi ling and Xiao Hui wreaked havoc in the red eye lizard's territory, turning the area into an absolute nightmare for them. These low-level flame creatures would have never expected to be burnt to ashes at the hands of the strongest flame beast.

Xi Ling would always fly near to Ling Chen, maintaining her distance so as to not scare away any newly spawned lizards. Being newly spawned, they were inexperienced in battle and were easily killed, so Ling Chen and the four girl's exp quickly grew.

Just like that, the morning passed, and it wasn't until noon that Ling Chen finally opened his eyes. He yawned, and took at a look at his exp... after one morning, his level 13 exp bar had increased to nearly 20%. The efficiency was impressive, considering that he had gained this amount while asleep. If he wasn't sharing exp with Yun Meng Xin, he would be close to level 14. Other players would need to hunt the same monster for half a day, but Xi Ling was able to wipe out large areas with a simple flap of her wings. It was almost frightening how quickly they were able to train.

Looking at Xiao Hui and Xi Ling's grades, he came to a depressing realisation; Xiao Hui had already reached level 13, and was now on

par with him, and Xi Ling was already level 7, with 5100 magic attack and able to deal over 10,000 damage using wild fire .

This strength... it couldn't be normal....

"Ay babes, how are the returns?" Ling Chen stood up, stretching. The pillowy grass fresh air induced in him the urge to lie down and fall asleep.

Originally, Ming Xin had told him jokingly to "take a nap", but he didn't think that he actually would. After calling for him, but to no response, they were amused but stayed silent about it. Eventually they stopped bothering him and sat on the grass, talking excitedly amongst themselves as the morning passed quickly.

"Hey! Finally awake! Just talking about sleep made you sleep, and you even slept for so long. Aren't you afraid of being bitten to death?" Seeing him awake, Xiao Qi made a face, then gently stood up from the grass, skipping towards Ling Chen: "Ling Tian, you haven't introduced us to your pet! What's that beautiful bird called? It's so powerful, it's almost scary."

"Its called Xi Ling." Ling chen responded.

"Xi Ling, that's a nice sounding name, where did you find it? It's far too strong."

"That's... a secret."

“It’s called Xiao Hui…but it’s not a dog” Ling Chen said. He said this because when he first saw Xiao Hui, he had thought it was a dog too.

“It’s obviously a dog! Xiao Hui, this name is pretty nice too! Look at the way it runs, it’s so cuuuute… but it runs so fast. There are so many times where I wanted to run up and hug it, but it ran far away from me”

“That’s not it! Xiao Hui’s movement speed is as high as 300; if you were able to catch it that would be truly strange…” Ling chen muttered under his breath.

“We’ve all reached level 11, each of us also got 20 SP.“ Yun Meng Xin walked over, speaking to Ling Chen. Without actually doing anything, they quickly reached level 11, and even gaining 20 SP in the process, which was an important asset.

Ling Chen’s SP had also increased by 24; these definitely came from Xi Ling killing elite red lizards.

Ling Chen nodded his head, then raised his head, and called out: “Xi Ling, Xiao Hui, come back.”

Yet another vast area of red eyed lizards had been incinerated by Xi Ling, in a single morning. Its mana was almost always full, after all, wild fire cost the least mana next to its basic fire attack. Answering to Ling Chen’s call, it and Xiao Hui quickly returned, and were transported back to the pet dimension.

“It’s already noon, everyone rest for a while then we’ll go have lunch. Especially Meng Xin, don’t push yourself too hard, life is wonderful, there are lots of things to enjoy… Moreover, Heart’s Dream isn’t only made up of you, there’s also Qi Qi, Su Su, and I. Even though it’s only the beginning, we don’t even have a single real member, but you have to believe in yourself and us.”

Yun Meng Xin had been pushing herself really hard; this is what Yun Feng had told him and he could see it in her level. Perhaps under the influence of Shui Ruo, he could see the heavy burdens of these girls.

Yun Meng Xin was startled, her eyes darting around. She lightly nodded: “o, alright. I…”

“Then, we’ll continue in the afternoon. At 1pm, we’ll come back here…”

Ling Chen finished speaking, and waving at the girls, he logged off, not giving them a chance to speak.

“Hey, Ling Tian… uh, he left in such a hurry, there were still things I wanted to ask him.” Xiao Qi subconsciously reached out to catch him, but only grabbed onto air, stamping her foot in frustration. Just in one morning, Ling Chen had brought out so much of her curiosity. Other than his strong sense of knowledge, name, background and history, she knew nothing about him, not even his appearance.

“I’m going as well, see you in the afternoon.” Mu Bing Yao nodded at him, and logged off. No matter who she was facing, her face was that of complete indifference; it was hard to find any sense of a human being beneath her eyes.

A new red eyed lizard appeared, and Yun Meng Xin had to immediately move to the edge of the safety zone.

“You guys tell me, what on earth was Ling Tian talking about?” Xiao Qi looked around at the red eyed lizards that were crawling around. Some of them responded in a daze. “He’s so strong, but I’ve never heard his name before, has he never played a virtual game before? Was he stronger than the ‘emperor’? Someone so strong, why would he join our Heart’s Dream? This is even stranger than when big sister Mu decided to join us.”

Initially, when Yun Meng Xin had decided to set up “Heart’s Dream”, those who were willing to join were only her 2 closest younger sisters – Xiao Qi and Su’Er. So, when Mu Bing Yao joined they were pleasantly surprised… but their surprise was greater than their joy. Today, she understood somewhat why Mu Bing Yao joined; perhaps it was because of Ling Tian?

Yun Feng didn’t tell her how she had ‘invited’ Ling Tian, but reassured her many times that it was a deal between them and his requirements had already been met. He was bound to help her achieve her goals within his capabilities, and was a perfectly trustworthy person.

In Yun Feng’s eyes, someone who didn’t leave his sister after watching her go through so many years of suffering could never

hypocritical or of malicious intent, but rather a man of principle and integrity. Such a person would treat this commitment as important as life itself, and would never repay kindness with evil.

In less than 10 days of the game starting, what Ling Tian was carrying was enough to shake the whole player base of the virtual world. Then, after a long time had passed, half a year, a year, 2 years... his standing...how high it would be.

“I originally set up ‘Heart’s Dream’, to help with my own ‘unwillingness’ and ‘struggles’. Before today, even I, never thought that I would have succeeded.” Yun Meng Xin whispered in absence of mind. She had always been calm on the surface, but Ling Chen in her prior performance, had caused something to stir deep within her. “But now, I have this inexplicable feeling, that after 2 years, Heart’s Dream will prosper. I don’t know how, but in terms of fame, it is perhaps because of one person that it will become legendary.”

Who this was, Xiao Qi and Su’Er both clearly knew.

To Yun Meng Xin, it sounded unbelievable, but there was a part of her that really wanted to believe it.

Initially, Heart’s Dream, was made up of Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi, Su’Er. They did not have any experience in setting up or managing a guild, only enthusiasm and a good will for the future. How Heart’s Dream was to grow, none of them really knew, and even after Mu Yao Bing had joined them, they still hadn’t found direction. It was only after Ling Tian joined that their mood had changed completely.

The core of Heart's Dream was no longer Yun Meng Xin, but Ling Tian.

Although it had only been one morning, they were already on the same page. With him present, Heart's Dream's future no longer looked bleak!

"RuoRuo, time to have lunch."

After preparing food, Ling Chen changed his clothes, shaking Ling Shui Ruo's snow jade on her hand as she was still in the video game world. Very quickly, Shui Ruo's eyes widened, and yelled out with joy: "Big brother, I'm nearly level 4!"

"So quick?"

"Uh huh! Because the two older sisters brought me to destroy high level monsters, my levelling became a lot faster. They also protected me very well, not letting even a small monster bump into me. Also, the two big sisters are already level 10, but they still didn't leave the Novice village; they said they were going to wait till I got to level 10 and leave with me... I didn't want them to do that, and tried to persuade them otherwise, but they insisted on leaving with me.... These two older sisters really are great, I really don't know how to thank them"

Ling Chen gently smiled, then helped her up from her bed, putting on her socks for her, he said: "That's because my Ruo Ruo is too likable, making them not want to leave you behind. I'll wait till Ruo Ruo and them get to Azure Dragon City, then we'll thank

them together… but for now, let’s go eat!”

“Oh, it smells delicious, hehe…”

Chapter 133 - Xuanyuan Xue Yi

“Big brother, you don’t have to carry me… I’ll walk myself.”

Shui Ruo, who was being carried by Ling Chen, struggled with determination. He put her down as she had insisted, but kept both his hands at her waist in case she fell. After she had taken the 13223 drug, Shui Ruo’s body had recovered relatively quickly. However, she was still weak and needed more time to fully regain her strength, despite there no longer being any trace of the disease in her body,

“You sure you can do this?” Ling Chen hoped that Shui Ruo would surprise him, but still asked, as he was worried.

“Older brother, look at me carefully, don’t blink.” Ling Shui Ruo smiled sweetly at Ling Chen, then, placing both feet on the ground she carefully stood up from the bed.

Her body was still trembling a little, but now she was completely relying on her own strength to stay standing. Letting go of Ling Chen’s body, she began to walk forward, with a face full of confidence and a soft, yet wilful smile. Although she didn’t walk very fast, every step she took was now very stable and straight, unlike previously when she was barely able to move.

Before he knew it, Shui Ruo had moved out of his hands. Now, he was no longer holding onto her at all, as she walked ahead. Inching her way out of the bedroom, she briefly smiled back towards Ling Chen, then took another step as she moved towards the dinner

table, before sitting in the chair that she always sat in. Although it took a while, there was not once where he doubted that she would fail.

With every step she took, Ling Chen could feel his heart melting on the inside. He stared at her as she sat at the table, and when he finally looked up, it was impossible for him not to cry.

Shui Ruo, in this life, only you, can bring me so much happiness.

Money, fame, strength, power... these things pale at the very sight of your smile. So long as you are by my side, I would be the happiest man on earth, no matter what happens. For you, I would give up anything.

Shui Ruo, being able to meet you in this life is a gift of God, the best thing that's ever happened to me.

Yun Feng, your kindness, I do my best to repay it.

It was almost 1pm when Ling Chen appeared in the territory of the Red Eyed Lizards, right where he had logged off before.

Looking at his surroundings, it appeared that he was the only there, apart from the other Red Eyed Lizards that were crawling around. Yun Meng Xin's group either hadn't arrived yet, or had gone elsewhere, as the area was too dangerous for them.

He was just about to summon Xi Ling and Xiao Hui, when an

enchanting figure appeared in a shadowy glow that swept by his side.

Like a goddess, shrouded in her black robes, she walked with an air of grace, her raven hair flowing down to her sides where it danced across her slender waist.

Every time he saw Qi Yue, he would lose control of his mind. She had tight eyebrows, starry eyes, pursed lips, a beautiful nose, and porcelain skin; it would be hard for anyone to control themselves.

Ling Chen stared at her body, before ripping his eyes away and coldly saying: “Didn’t I say that you weren’t allowed to come out unless I said so?”

Qi Yue bit her lip; her lightly arched eyebrows twisted a little, and a trace of sadness flashed across her beautiful face: “Young master, do you really not want to see me that badly? The whole morning, young master was surrounded by beauties, so beautiful that I wanted to keep them as pets when I saw them. Young master must have had his soul taken away by them, who knows, maybe young master doesn’t even remember his own name.”

Ling Chen: “…”

But in fact, based on features alone, Ling Chen had never seen anyone that could compare to Qi Yue. After all, she was a character in a virtual world and could be created to perfection. Such was her beauty that no feature of hers lacked devilish temptation, especially her full chest which was covered only by a thin layer of

black threaded clothing. Moreover, her clothes were tightly worn, highlighting her curves even further. While she was talking, her breasts bounced up and down, almost overflowing from her garments, which Ling Chen found especially attractive.

This was a woman that would make any man's life short-lived... staying by her side would be far too dangerous. The best Ling Chen could do was try to avoid her, as he knew that every time she appeared he would feel the uncontrollable urge to rip off her clothes and take her down.

"Qi Yue, can I ask you a question?"

"Oh?" Qi Yue went to Ling Chen's side, glancing around as she pursed her red moist lips.

Ling Chen closed his eyes, and said: "If one day I find both the Saint Orbs and God Orbs will I have the strength to fight the whole Yan Huang Alliance?"

If Ling Tian's words fell on the ears of a normal person, they would think he was crazy... but as he said spoke, his face was that of complete seriousness.

Qi Yue laughed; what the Yan Huang Alliance was she knew from the conversations between Ling Tian and Yun Meng Xin: "If you can return the Lunar Scourge to its complete state, you will be able to trample on anything, even the Gods. All humans will be humbled in the face of your power, even the Yan Huang Alliance; if you want to destroy tens, hundreds, thousands, the power will be

at your fingertips.

The words of Qi Yue made Ling Chen's heart skip a beat; there was a moment of silence as he pondered over whether what Qi Yue was saying was true. Could an item that strong really exist in a video game world?

Of course not!

"However, the search for the God Orbs and Saint Orbs would be very difficult. Young master was already incredibly fortunate to find the Sagittarius Orb... for another one to appear would be nigh impossible. If you want to find the God Orbs and Saint Orbs, then the best approach is to scour every inch of the land of the Forgotten Continent and the waters around... but young master needn't worry, he'll be able to find it within 1000 years."

Within a 1000 years... what a joke! After a few hundred years I won't exist in the world anymore, let alone 1000 years! Ling Chen secretly cried.

A heart-fluttering fragrance blew by as Qi Yue gently breathed into his ear, her whole body now pressed up against him: "Young Master, are you thinking about the Lunar Scourge? When you're back, accompany me; I still haven't finished talking to you...oh that's right, do you like any of the little sisters that were with you this morning? If you do just tell me and I'll immediately help you with her... if you like them all that's fine too. I can make them all your personal pets, how about that?"

His heart began to beat faster upon feeling the warmth of her body and hearing her soft breathing in his ear. Qi Yue stopped; her beautiful eyes turned to look at him. With a wave of her tender hand and charming smile, she disappeared, and the fragrance in the air slowly wafted away in the breeze.

At the same time, not far from Ling Chen, a white figure appeared, heralded by the frigid aura that enshrouded her.

Mu Bing Yao.

Seeing Ling Chen, Mu Bing Yao's eyes darted around, and convinced that no one else was around, she quickly stepped towards him. Now standing in front of Ling Chen with her right hand across her chest, she bent down on one knee before him, her forehead hanging downwards.

"Master." The word escaped from Mu Bing Yao's mouth, voice as cold as ice without any emotion.

Qi Yue's departure allowed Ling Chen to let out a breath of air. He looked over Mu Bing Yao and gave her an indifferent smile: "Get up. How many times have I said it, you don't have to kneel before me."

"Bing Yao dares not be equal to master."

Under the orders of Ling Chen, Mu Bing Yao rose, but her forehead was still drooping, so as to lower her body as much as

possible.

Ling Chen was too lazy to continue to deal with this problem; it was almost 1pm and Yun Meng Xin and her group would be arriving soon. After thinking, Ling Chen asked: “Tell me what their real identities are.”

Mu Bing Yao expressionlessly nodded: “Yung Meng Xin, the Yun financial group chief’s only daughter, aged 19 and currently living alone in the North of Beijing. Her residence is called ‘Heart’s Dream workshop.’ Xiao Qi and Su’Er currently also spend most of their time there. I am also living there too.”

Mu Bing Yao treated her words like gold, saying as little as possible. Everything that Ling Chen already knew about Yun Meng Xin, she didn’t spend much time repeating.

“Xiao Qi, the Northern Chinese Mafia Godfather Xiao Zhan’s daughter, aged 17 and known as ‘princess’ in the Battle Alliance. She has an older brother known as Xiao Qiu Feng, who is very strong.”

“Su’Er, the Mayor of Beijing, Xing Hua Su’s only daughter, aged 15. Her mother died when she was young, so she had never had a sense of security from a young age. She has a weak character and almost never goes out.”

“About Su’Er...” Ling Chen interrupted Mu Bing Yao. He knew Su’Er’s background was not simple, but he did not think that she was the mayor’s daughter: “I heard she has a fiancé, do you know

who it is?”

“I do. You also know that person,” Mu Bing Yao responded.

“I do?”

“Xuanyuan Xue Yi”

“What!?” Ling Chen’s brow rose, and his eyes suddenly became cold.

Chapter 134 - No Longer Dependent

Xuanyuan Xue Yi...

Mu Bing Yao looked down and saw Ling Chen's fists tightly clenched, resulting in the sound of the bones in his fist grinding against each other... These years, he had always been protecting the girl called Shui Ruo, and had not left her alone for even a moment. For her, he would not allow his hands to be stained with blood anymore; for her, he would sacrifice anything... he had also said that he had decided to forget all the grudges he held in the past.

However, Ling Chen's current reaction told her that he had not forgotten the grudges he held in the past... that depth of hatred, how could he let it go so easily! These peaceful years he had spent were all for Shui Ruo. If it were not for Shui Ruo, China's capital would already have been filled with a sea of blood... in order to care for Shui Ruo, he had not taken any action, and had not even mentioned those people's names. All of this was so that Shui Ruo could live a peaceful and safe life with him.

Mu Bing Yao believed that if Ling Shui Ruo died of the Isrock disease, then Ling Tian, maddened by grief and sorrow would let all of his hatred explode from within him... resulting in a terrifying outcome.

"Xuanyuan Xue Yi, is he that 'Sword Emperor'?" Ling Chen asked as he frowned. Within all of the people he knew, to be called the Sword Emperor, as well as occupy the number one position in the Heaven Rankings and to be close with Long Tian Yun, the

person could only be someone from the Xuanyuan family.

"....."

"No." Mu Bing Yao said, "Xuanyuan Xue Yi's mission is to protect the Long family, and has never stepped into the virtual gaming world before. Even if he wanted to, the Xuanyuan family would not allow it."

"It's not him?" Ling Chen frowned, his face full of confusion, "Then who is that number 1 on the Heaven Rankings, Sword Emperor then?"

"I don't know."

"....."

"Whenever the Sword Emperor appears, his cloak is always fully wrapped around him. That includes his hair, eyes, hands... there is not a single bit of his body that is exposed. No one has ever seen what he truly looks like under his cloak. Moreover, he never speaks; he only kills. There were many times when I tried to look into his true identity, but my investigations were always fruitless. All I know is that his real name is 'Feng Xie Yu', same as his name in the virtual world. Perhaps the only people who know his true identity are the Long family." Mu Bing Yao replied.

Ling Chen was silent... when had such a person appeared in the Long family.

“Have you fought with the Sword Emperor before?”

“It ended with my utter defeat.” Mu Bing Yao said straightforwardly.

Ling Chen shook his head in dismay, and said in a quiet voice, “Forget about it, whoever he is, doesn’t really matter to me. Maybe one day if we fight, I’ll find out something about him.” He then laughed out loud, “Ruo Ruo’s been getting better, so I’ve been so happy that I’m itching for some action.”

Mu Bing Yao: “……”

“Bing Yao, you need to protect Meng Xin and them. Long Tian Yun will probably send people to investigate and keep an eye on them, so make sure you’re always alert.” Ling Chen reminded her.

Mu Bing Yao nodded, “Don’t worry, Master.”

“En.” Ling Chen replied. He looked at this cold beauty’s face, and gave her a casual smile. He then turned around, and looked into the distance. Ling Chen decided that for the next few days, he would train here with the rest of the guild. Based on his progress in the morning, levelling up here was not slow at all, but was not very fast either. After all, there was only one Xi Ling destroying mobs, but five people absorbing the EXP.

What he didn’t know was that his casual smile just then caused

the icy-faced girl's heart to start rapidly beating.

When things were peaceful, she always thought of that incredibly weak girl called Shui Ruo, and wondered what sort of sorcery she had used to cause this man to make such inconceivable changes for her. He had changed so much that he would not even allow himself to be stained by blood anymore, putting down his unfathomable hatred.

Although, suffering from the Isrock Disease, she would be constantly walking along the border between life and death, and yet she was probably the luckiest and happiest girl in the world...

After an hour, Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi and Su'Er simultaneously logged on. They were currently living at the same place, and were together during lunchtime.

"Big sister Mu, Ling Tian, have you waited for long?" Seeing Ling Tian and Mu Bing Yao already waiting, Yun MEng Xin leisurely walked over.

"No, we just got here." Ling Chen said as he smiled.

"Big sister Mu, big brother Ling Tian." Behind Yun Meng Xin, Su'Er politely greeted them, looking like an adorable doll that no one could resist hugging.

Xiao Qi directly skipped over to Ling Tian, and directly grabbed onto his arm, "Big brother Ling Tian, you're not allowed to sleep

this afternoon. During lunch, the three of us were talking about you the whole time... there are so many things I want to ask you, I want to hear all of your stories, so make sure you tell us today... Alright? Big brother Ling Tian...”

As a result, Ling Chen was pulled by Xiao Qi to sit down on the grass with her, and was forced to answer many of her questions. However, being surrounded by four beautiful girls, any normal man would enjoy it. Not too far away, Xi Ling and Xiao Hui, one in the sky, one on the ground, were working tirelessly, turning mobs of Red Eyed Lizards into EXP for Ling Chen and the others.

Although they still had not known each other for a long time, they all felt quite close with each other, and interacted very naturally with each other. They had all met each other because of Heart’s Dream... and Ling Chen’s joining of the guild had caused great changes to Heart’s Dream.

In the next two days, Ling Chen trained with the four girls in the Red Eyed Lizard Territory... of course, it wasn’t really training, but ‘training’, since it was free EXP. Under Xi Ling’s outrageously strong attacks, mobs and mobs of Red Eyed Lizards were turned into EXP, causing the four girls’ levels to rapidly increase. By now, they had all reached LV13, whereas Ling Chen who had the permanent EXP debuff, “Heaven’s Jealously”...

“Ding... Congratulations you have levelled up, now LV14, HP+20, MP+10, Strength+5.”

“Ding... Your pet ‘Holy Spirit Beast’ Xiao Hui has levelled up, now LV14...”

In the time that the four girls had risen by two levels, Ling Chen's LV13 EXP had just become full, reaching LV14. As for Xiao Hui... his level had long since caught up to Ling Chen, and was restricted by Ling Chen's level.

"Finally LV14." Ling Chen let out a breath as he looked at the 'Level Up' sign about his head.

"Congratulations! Big brother Ling Tian is definitely the first in China, no, first in the whole world to reach LV14... that's right, I heard that when someone reaches LV15, the Player Rankings will be released." Xiao Qi said as she smiled, "At that time, big brother Ling Tian will definitely be in first place, and we... we're already LV13, so we might even be able to get into the top 100! Wah, I'm getting excited just thinking about it."

The four girls felt that Ling Chen's levelling speed was somewhat slow... the first time they had met, he was already LV13. Over the course of these few days, they had risen from LV10 to LV13, yet Ling Chen had only risen from LV13 to LV14. However, they did not think too much about this.

At this time, Yun Meng Xin had stood up, and after a short pause, said, "Qi Qi, Su Su, with our levels now, we are able to enter the top 100 on the Player Rankings... however..." She paused, then continued, "From tomorrow, we should go somewhere else to practice, and let Ling Tian train by himself."

Ling Chen looked up at Yun Meng Xin, but did not say anything.

“Ah? Why? It’s so easy to level up with big brother Ling Tian, and we don’t even need to do anything ourselves. Why do we need to go somewhere else?” Xiao Qi and Su’Er both revealed expressions of confusion.

“Is it... Is it because having high levels... is bad for us?” Su’Er asked in a small voice.

Yun Meng Xin shook her head, “That’s not the reason. One’s level does not determine their overall power. Increasing by one level only gives a few stat bonuses, but in comparison, SP, equipment and personal skills are much more important than levels. Thus, having a high level mainly makes you look good, but does not increase your overall power by much... The number two player on the Heaven Rankings, The Dark Night’s Gui Ya rarely appears on the Player Ranking, and yet he is publicly acknowledged as the number 2 player in China.”

“But, but, why do we need to leave big brother Ling Tian?”

“Simple.” Yun Meng Xin’s expression was calm. She had originally intended to say these things yesterday, “Because of Ling Tian, without exerting any effort at all, we’ve acquired Gold weapons that other people can only dream of, as well as a Hidden Profession. Even levelling up is much faster, and we don’t even have to do anything. No one would pass up on this type of experience, but by staying with Ling Tian, we’ll begin to rely on him too much. In this whole process, we are not required to face any powerful monsters by ourselves, or suffer from exhaustion or danger. If everything is simply given to us, the thrill and

excitement of the game itself will soon begin to fade. Moreover, our battle skills, resourcefulness and weapon proficiency will not rise at all, but instead decline... Even if we have the best equipment and a powerful class, we'll still be powerless without a good battle sense and battle experience."

Yun Meng Xin's words shocked Xiao Qi and Su'Er, and they all lapsed into silence.

"Ling Tian is extremely powerful, so powerful that it's incomprehensible. However, Heart's Dream does not comprise solely of Ling Tian. Every single one of us needs to improve so that we do not have to rely on anyone. Moreover... if we aren't here, Ling Tian's training will be more free, and it'll become much easier for him to level up. He can do many quests that are on his level, and rise to a level that surpasses everyone else... at that time, our Heart's Dream will be glorified along with him. Right now, if we continue to follow him around, we'll only become a burden to him. We don't want that, right? We all have our own classes, and have our own power and strength. We should continue to struggle and fight, and use our own abilities to walk forwards to see what heights we can rise to!"

Ling Chen smiled. He had been waiting for Yun Meng Xin to say these things. Having given Heart's Dream as much support as possible, he now had to get rid of their dependence on him. He hoped that when Heart's Dream stood at the top of all other guilds, it wouldn't just be him supporting it.

"Oh, I understand now!" After thinking for a while, Xiao Qi vigorously nodded her head and agreed. The look of confusion had

long since vanished on her face, and she did not seem unwilling to part with Ling Tian anymore. She had always been someone who strove for excellence, as well as someone who admired strong people and wanted to become strong herself... and to not lose to any boys. Ling Chen was someone who she was very curious about, and she secretly admired him. Up until now, she had been leisurely enjoying the benefits he had brought, almost taking them for granted. Only after hearing Yun Meng Xin's words did she realise this.

"I will listen to big sister." Su'Er said as she earnestly nodded her head.

Chapter 135 - The First Millionaire

“Ling Tian, from tomorrow onwards, let’s practice separately. We can’t continue to burden you… this way, we’ll also be benefiting Heart’s Dream. We’re all guild members of Heart’s Dream, so the stronger we all get, the stronger Heart’s Dream will become. Thus, I don’t want to burden you, and I don’t want the rest of us to become too dependent on you either.” Yun Meng Xin said as she turned around to look at Ling Chen. From his reaction, she knew that he had been waiting for her to say these words.

With Xi Ling’s abilities and strength, even going to the territory of LV30 monsters would be a piece of cake for them, as Xi Ling would still be able to destroy the mobs in seconds. Thus, levelling up would be even faster. However, Ling Chen had not done this, instead remaining in the territory of LV15 monsters, as he did not want to raise their levels too high. Otherwise, when the Player Rankings were released, they might attract too much attention… If they were ranked high up on the Player Rankings, the attention of countless people would be upon them. Moreover, just having a high level without real battle power would only cause them troubles.

Ling Chen could have raised their levels to an unbelievable extent, but he did not do so… Yun Meng Xin respected him even more. He was not some man who shallowly pursued fame, but someone who considered things deeply… this made it even more evident that he was sincerely helping Heart’s Dream and herself.

“Are you all sure about this?” Ling Chen looked at the three girls.

Xiao Qi vigorously nodded her head, and raised a small fist, “En, en! Big sister Meng Xin is right! We’re all guild members of Heart’s Dream, so we can’t not contribute, and just be a burden to big brother Ling Tian. So, from now on, we’re going to train by ourselves, find our own equipment and do our own quests... Big brother Ling Tian and big sister Mu should go and do their own training as well and not worry about us. With big brother Ling Tian and big sister Mu, our Heart’s Dream will one day become super famous... we definitely won’t become a burden to you guys and work hard as well!”

“Big brother Ling Tian, big sister Mu, we will do our best.” Su’Er earnestly said.

Ling Chen smiled, “Since it’s like this, then that’s fine. However, if there’s any urgent matters, or if you’re in any kind of danger, make sure you let me know.”

“Got it! But we definitely won’t be that easy to bully.”

Just like that, under Meng Xin’s decision, the three girls stopped following Ling Tian to train. They decided that they would return to Azure Dragon City. Having reached LV13, they were not in a hurry to level up, and so decided to spend some time exploring Azure Dragon City. At the same time, the would discuss some future plans for Heart’s Dream.

“Bing Yao, you should go with them too. If something happens, let me know immediately.”

Mu Bing Yao nodded, and walked in the direction that Yun Meng Xin and the others had left in.

The Red Eyed Lizard territory was a place where most players at the current stage would not dare to enter yet, so Ling Chen was the only person there. With four beautiful girls accompanying him, nothing seemed boring. However, looking at the ground covered in Red Eyed Lizards, Ling Chen did not feel too happy.

“Maybe I was a bit unwilling to let them go?” Ling Chen muttered to himself.

“Just a bit I guess.”

In the distance, Xi Ling was still using her flames to roast mobs of Red Eyed Lizards. Below her, Xiao Hui ran around happily, swallowing the corpses. As Ling Chen was now the only person absorbing the EXP, levelling up was much, much faster. However, to the Ling Chen who enjoyed situations filled with danger and adrenaline, receiving free EXP from doing nothing was nice, but it was not the method he preferred.

Qi Yue had said that if he wanted to find all the God Orbs and Saint Orbs, the best method was to explore every corner of the Forgotten Continent. There were no shortcuts in finding these treasures.

In that case, might as well start from these plains.

Ling Chen was just about to call Xi Ling and Xiao Hui back, when an announcement rang out.

“Ding... your pet ‘Xi Ling’ has levelled up, now LV10...”

“Ding... your pet Xi Ling’s Ability [Rootless Fire] has levelled up to LV2, [Wild Flames] has levelled up to LV6, [Red Laser] has levelled up to LV6.”

All of a sudden, Xi Ling had already reached LV10. Ling Chen opened Xi Ling’s stats page... the LV10 Xi Ling had an incredible 6000 Magic Attack Power!

This number caused Ling Chen to feel dizzy. What this number meant... was that Xi Ling’s Wild Flames could do tens of thousands of damage, and one Red Laser could do over 30,000 damage!

Could this be any more broken...

However, her HP was still quite low. At LV10, she only had 800HP. Compared to her 6000 Magic Attack Power and 20,000 Mana, it seemed quite pitiful. Even her Physical Defense was practically non-existent.

Having reached LV10, three of Xi Ling’s skills were automatically upgraded. Ling Chen looked over to the three skills.

[Rootless Fire]: Current level: LV2, Highest level: LV5,

increasing to LV3 requires pet to be LV20. Passive ability, manipulated power is created from its soul, and does not require natural flames to create extreme flames. Will ignore any creature's resistance to flame, its power is stronger than regular flames. Effect: Disregard any fire resistance, use of any fire magic doesn't require an incantation. (PS: Does not ignore elemental weaknesses to fire. Which is to say, if the monster weak against fire, the fire will still deal the appropriate extra amount of damage). All fire damage increases by 10%, and any fire attack can be imbued with a slight 'destruction' status effect; causes a medium destruction effect to objects weak against fire.

[Wild Flames]: current level: LV6, highest level: LV10, increasing to level 7 requires pet to be LV20. Burns all targets within 30m in front with rootless flame, deals 220% of the Magic Attack stat, 30% chance of dealing an addition 10 second burn, cost 300 mana, 5 second cooldown.

[Red Laser]: Current level: LV6, highest level: LV10, increasing to LV7 requires pet to be LV20. Using the rootless fire to gather the sun's searing rays, creating a terrible high heat laser that attacks a single target from the sky, dealing 550% damage. Once locked on, the target cannot avoid it. Costs 600 mana, 10 second cooldown.

The upgraded Wild Flames and Red Laser became slightly

stronger, but the Rootless Fire that had levelled up to LV2 caused Ling Chen to stare in awe... Xi Ling's attacks were already incredibly strong, and now all fire damage would be increased by 10%. What truly intrigued him was the [destruction status effect].

These few words caused Ling Chen to imagine many possibilities.

Closing Xi Ling's stats page, another announcement rang out.

"Ding... your bag's space is now full. You are unable to store more items, please clear space in your bag."

"Hm?" Ling Chen paused... his bag had an Emptying Rock that he had bought from the Underworld Merchant Qian Gun Gun, which could increase his bag's space by 300. That meant all 500 spaces in his bag... were full?

Ling Chen looked over and saw Xiao Hui was running in circles around a mountain of things, but could not pick them up. Ling Chen checked his bag... and was almost blinded by the number of sparkling red crystals.

Lots and lots of elementary strength crystals!

He quickly calculated... the number of elementary strength crystals in his bag was over 30,000! This astonishing number caused Ling Chen to grin like a fool. Including the numerous Pale White and Iron equipment, elementary crystals, various potions, Lizard Scales that the Red Eyed Lizards dropped, all 500 spaces in

his bag were completely full.

Lizard Scales could be traded to the item store for a relatively large amount of gold... but their worth and those of the 30,000 elementary strength crystals could not even be compared!! 30,000 elementary crystals, if sold to the pawnshop for 80 gold each, could be sold for... 2.4million gold!!

If he calculated according to the 150 gold per crystal at the delivery store, if they were all sold out, he would earn... 4.5million gold!

I'm rich, filthy rich... Ling Chen was extremely delighted.

In three days, from the efforts of just Xi Ling and Xiao Hui, he had acquired items worth millions of gold. This was simply too broken. Ling Chen wondered whether or not the Cosmos Corporation would do anything about this if they found out. He immediately called back Xi Ling and Xiao Hui, and used a teleport scroll to teleport to Azure Dragon City.

Standing at the Azure Dragon City Central Square, Ling Chen thought for a while, and went first to the pawnshop at the Market.

The owner of the pawnshop was a skinny old man who was very stingy. Walking up to the counter, Ling Chen poured all of the useless items from his bag onto the counter: Pale White equipment, Iron equipment, Lizard Scales. "Selling all of them."

The tens of thousands of Lizard Scales and tens of equipment netted him 2,000 gold in total. Afterwards, using his fastest speed, Ling Chen quickly transferred all 30,000 of his elementary strength crystals into the trading box...

At that moment, the face of the pawnshop's owner became completely pale, as if he had seen a ghost. After staring for ten seconds did he commence the trade. The 30,000 elementary strength crystals had been given to the pawnshop to sell, while he pocketed 4.5million gold.

4.5million gold, at the current stage of a game, was an incredible and ridiculous amount of money!

And this enormous fortune, had all come from Xiao Hui.

Xiao Hui could use the Red Eyed Lizards' corpses to create elementary strength crystals. That meant that as long as he took Xi Ling and Xiao Hui to the Red Eyed Lizard territory, and lay around for a while, then gold would flow into his pockets like water. One attack pet, one support pet, these two pets together were simply a...

No-cost, no-risk, high-return money making machine!!

Having become Mystic Moon's first millionaire player, there were many things that Ling Chen wanted to do... but what he wanted to do most was naturally to meet the Underworld Merchant Qian Gun Gun.

Chapter 136 - Central Auction House

As Mystic Moon had not yet been released for very long, the Money Exchange System between the real world's currency and the virtual world's currency had not been opened yet. Thus, due to the lack of funds in the virtual world, many large powers were unable to accomplish things that they wanted to. Whether it was an individual or a large financial group, at the current stage of the game, everyone was in dire lack of money. The Ling Chen who now owned a considerable fortune knew what this meant... it meant that before the Money Exchange System opened, he could do many things that other people, even large financial groups could not do.

Ling Chen tapped his chin and thought for a while. He made sure there was no one around him, then opened his communication device. He contacted the other person, and asked in a low voice, "Gui Ya, when will the Money Exchange System open?"

"..."

"Got it."

After this short exchange, Ling Chen turned off the communication device, and strode forwards. Walking on the streets of Azure Dragon City, he walked from the Markets to the Entertainment District, to the Administration District, to the Residential District... by the time it was 2-3AM, he had walked around and carefully observed the central areas in Azure Dragon City. He imprinted a place into his memory, then took out the Azure Dragon City map, and marked its position on the map. As he

closed the map, a light flickered in his eyes. Afterwards, Ling Chen began to walk directly to the Mayor's residence.

The Mayor's residence and the area surrounding it was still a restricted area for players. However, as Ling Chen had a special pass, he was able to enter unhindered, and directly entered into the reception hall. Not too long after, the Azure Dragon's Mayor strode in.

The current Azure Dragon's Mayor had undergone drastic changes. His face was ruddy and full of health, and had a spring in his step. Evidently, he was in a very good mood. Ling Chen smiled and asked, "Mr. Mayor, how is your son?"

"Hahaha!" The Azure Dragon's Mayor let out a cheerful laugh, "The Flaming Black Grass is as effective as described in the legends. After giving some to my son to take, half of the snake poison was dispelled within one day, and was fully dispelled within two days. Although he hasn't made a full recovery yet, that's in the foreseeable future, so I'm not worrying about it anymore. Ling Tian, this is all thanks to you. Otherwise, my son would have lost his life a long time ago... do you have anything you need my help with? Haha, if there's anything, just let me know. As long as it doesn't violate any ethics or morals, I will help you as much as possible."

Hearing the Azure Dragon's Mayor say this, Ling Chen did not beat around this bush anymore, and straightforwardly said, "Since Mr. Mayor has said so, then I won't be courteous anymore. The reason I came this time is to ask a big favour of Mr. Mayor."

Ling Chen walked forwards and stood in front of the Azure Dragon's Mayor. He opened the Azure Dragon City map, and pointed at a location he had marked, "I want the ownership rights to this area of land... I only need it for half a year!"

The place Ling Chen had pointed to was a spacious undeveloped area. It was a long plot of land, and was about four or five thousand square metres... not only was it extremely large, but the location was very good as well! The Azure Dragon City's Market was situated at the west side of the Central Square, whereas this plot of land was on the East side of and right next to the Central Square. Why such a good area of land was empty, Ling Chen had no idea, and did not care... he only knew that once the Money Exchange System opened, and power started flowing in along with money, this plot of land would become a place that would be fought over.

Such a good location, with such a large area, even offering millions of gold was impossible to buy it. As such, Ling Chen could only use the gold he currently had to rent it for a short period of time.

The Azure Dragon's Mayor looked at the location where Ling Chen had pointed to, and shook his head after a short while, "Ling Chen, it's not that I don't want to help you... it's just that this area is our Azure Dragon City's last prime area. Every inch of land is worth gold... No, every inch of land there is worth diamonds! We were planning to construct a Luxury Residential Area, and then sell each house or unit for astronomical prices!"

"I only need the ownership rights for half a year!" Ling Chen

repeated.

“Choosing this place, you should already know that this area is extremely valuable, even if it’s for half a year…”

“One million gold!!”

“One million?!” The Azure Dragon’s Mayor stared at Ling Chen, then started cursing at him, “This area is directly facing the Central Square, Azure Dragon City’s last prime area! One million gold? Are you joking?!!”

Ling Chen knew that even if it was for half a year, one million gold was far from enough. He thought for a moment, then continued to test the waters, “How about, 1.3million…”

“No!”

“1.5million gold… 5 months of ownership rights!!”

“Absolutely not!”

“Two million… three months!!” Ling Chen gnashed his teeth.

Bam!! The Azure Dragon’s Mayor pounded his fist onto the table, “Deal!!”

Ling Chen: ⊙‿⊙b

Half an hour later, Ling Chen walked out of the Mayor's residence with a Title Deed bought with two million gold... The Title Deed clearly stated that the area of land was Ling Chen's for three months.

"Three months, so be it." Ling Chen was not worried in the slightest, "With Xiao Hui and Xi Ling, that money-making pair, sooner or later that entire piece of land will be mine. Plus, with three months... that's entirely enough time, heh heh..."

Azure Dragon City Auction House

The Azure Dragon City Auction House was only open to players, and auctioned various items sent in by players. Although many players had entered into the Azure Dragon City, the Auction House had never held an auction yet.

Entering the front hall of the Auction Hall, the receptionist was an old man of sixty or seventy years of age. He looked at Ling Chen, yawned, then straightened up and said in a bored voice, "Greetings, otherworld traveller, welcome to the Central Auction House. My surname is Li, and my name is Fu, you can call me Lord Fortune. [TLN: Fu/福 means riches/fortune]. Is there anything you would like to consign for auctioning? I need to remind you though, our Auction House only auctions things that are rare or interesting. If it's something ordinary, then I suggest you put it in the delivery store as we will not be accepting it. And even if we accept the item, we decide the auction time... After all, we need to have enough things to auction... moreover, the auction entrance

fees belong to us, and we take a commission of 3%-10% of the total amount received for an item. Of course, if the item is especially rare, and gives us a substantial amount of fame and entrance fees, we can decide not to charge a commission... even the auction time can be decided by you. So, young man, show me what you have to offer."

It was not easy listening to the man ramble on and on. Ling Chen took a step forward and took out three items, "There are three things I want to auction, not sure if these three things are satisfactory for auctioning."

Ling Chen took out a grubby black bean, a gold chain and a black token.

These three items caused Lord Fortune's old eyes to brighten. He reached out and picked up the grubby black bean which looked like sheep dung. He sniffed it to confirm that it wasn't sheep dung, then examined its attributes... this was the sheep dung that Ling Chen had bought from the Underworld Merchant Qian Gun Gun... no, it was a mysterious bean that could give the user 100 SP. He had originally wanted to give this to Shui Ruo to eat, in order to upgrade her skills, but after considering that it was an object of suspicious origins, and had been tainted by Qian Gun Gun's grubby hands... he was not quite willing for the pure Ruo Ruo to be dirtied by such a thing, so he could only auction it off.

"Gives the user 100 SP... Heavens!! What am I looking at... I'm actually looking at an item of the legends!"

Holding the grubby black bean, the originally bored and

lacklustre Lord Fortune let out a passionate cry, “To an adventurer, this is a priceless treasure! Young man, can you tell me where you bought it from?”

Ling Chen: “……”

“Oh, please excuse my rudeness.” Ling Chen’s expression caused Lord Fortune to come back to his senses, and he quickly regained his composure, “Seeing such a legendary item, I actually forgot the ‘do not ask the origins of an item’ rule. Young man, rest assured, when your items are auctioned, I will not ask you any unnecessary questions, and keep your identity strictly confidential.”

“That means, this bean is satisfactory for auctioning?” Ling Chen asked while smiling.

Lord Fortune nodded, “Absolutely, absolutely! Not only you players, all experts in the Forgotten Continent would be excited by such an item… describing it as a priceless treasure would not be an exaggeration at all. This item, we’re definitely auctioning.”

Because of this bean, Lord Fortune became more interested in the other two items. He picked up the gold bracelet, and looked over it. All of a sudden, his eyes became extremely wide, a stood up with a ‘whoosh’, “Gold… Gold grade Lunar Chain!!”

“Young man!” Lord Fortune intensely stared at him, gripping the Gold chain that Ling Chen had acquired from the Greedy Giant Toad, “Do you know the value of a Gold Lunar Chain? A Gold Lunar Chain is much more valuable than any other equipment of

the Gold grade. A Gold Lunar Chain can be used by an expert for their entire life, and is something that many experts can only dream of but can never acquire in their entire life! Young man, you're simply too amazing. You've come here for such a short period of time, and yet you've already acquired a Gold Lunar Chain... I can already tell that this Gold Lunar Chain appearing at an auction will cause a great sensation... trust me, this is definitely the first Gold Lunar Chain to be discovered by a player. The drop rate of high grade Lunar Chains is too low, way too low!"

Chapter 137 - Levelling To LV15

A Gold Lunar Chain caused this Auction House's owner who had seen many treasures to become incredibly shocked. Evidently, it was worth quite a lot. He picked up the third item... the black token. He looked at it, and became extremely startled.

"Are you sure you want to auction this?" Lord Fortune put the token down, and looked at Ling Chen as he frowned.

"Yes!" Ling Chen nodded.

"You should be very clear as to how much this is worth... especially since this is the first of its kind. For the same item, the first will be worth much, much more than the second one. If I were you, even if I could sell it for a huge amount of money, I would not sell it. If you use it, then even if you were unknown in the past, your fame would travel throughout the entire land, helping your development in future." Lord Fortune said in a sincere tone.

Ling Chen gave a casual smile, "Even so, I still want to auction it. Selling it for a large amount of money will benefit me more... I trust that Lord Fortune, having run this Auction House for so many years, will definitely fetch a high price for this item."

Lord Fortune looked at Ling Chen seriously... even if he was an idiot, he should know that someone who is able to take out such an item, and a player at that, is definitely not a normal person. He nodded, and put the items away and said, "Since it's like that, I won't say anything unnecessary. We will accept all of these items.

Furthermore, you can choose the auction time, and we will not take any commission."

Although this was Azure Dragon City's Central Auction House, as well as the largest Auction House in Azure Dragon City, it was still able to be pressured by the other Auction Houses. As the strength of all the players grew, there would be much competition between the different Auction Houses, especially those established by players. In order for an Auction House to increase its fame and reputation, it must auction items that attract the attention of players. The difference in fame and reputation between an Auction House that regularly auctioned ordinary items and an Auction House that auctioned rare and valuable items could not even be compared. Naturally, the revenue earned from entrance fees could not be compared either. Lord Fortune, by waiving any commission earned on Ling Chen's items, was definitely not making a loss. He believed that all three items would each be able to cause a great sensation among all players.

"Then it's settled. I haven't decided on the auction date, so I'll tell you when I've decided. It'll be within 5 days." Ling Chen said.

Lord Fortune nodded and put the three items away, then gave Ling Chen a certificate of receipt. Ling Chen scanned through the certificate, then walked out of the Central Auction House.

"Big brother, I'm nearly LV8 already! I've been killing LV10 monsters with these two big sisters, so levelling is really fast!"

After walking out of the Auction House, Shui Ruo's voice sounded out in Ling Chen's ears. It was now dawn. Before, Ling

Chen absolutely would not have agreed to Shui Ruo being online at such a time, but Shui Ruo's mental state had considerably improved. After playing for a whole day, she did not seem tired at all, and had demanded to play for longer hours. That way, she would be able to quickly enter Azure Dragon City to be with Ling Chen. Since it was Shui Ruo's request, he definitely could not refuse.

"Good work... although, if you're feeling tired at all, you must log off and rest, alright?" Ling Chen reminded her.

"Uh huh, got it... Oh, and those two big sisters are so strong-even when they are surrounded by so many monsters, they don't get hit at all. I haven't used my healing skills in such a long time."

Ling Chen gave a slight smile. Yao Ying and Qian Mo... if they were so easily hit, they would not be worthy to be called the "Absolute Shadow Double Beauties".

Now that Shui Ruo was nearly LV8, with Yao Ying and Qian Mo's efficiency, factoring in the time Shui Ruo spent online every day, it would take them about 2 or 3 days to help Shui Ruo leave Novice Village.

After 2 or 3 days, he would be able to take Shui Ruo and roam around with virtual world with her, train with her, do quests with her, kill monsters with her, explore with her and go anywhere they wanted. Thinking about this, Ling Chen began to smile.

In that case, these few days spent waiting for Ruo Ruo, he might

as well train.

Ling Chen walked out of Azure Dragon City, and walked towards the depths of the plains.

The lowest levelled monsters in the plains were LV10, and highest were LV25.

Passing through the Red Eyed Lizard Territory, then walking onwards for a long time, Ling Chen came to Mid-Eastern region of the plains, the LV20 Tiger Territory.

[Tiger]: Type: Beast, Level: LV20, HP: 820, a type of ferocious wild beast. It has long fangs, extremely large and sharp claws, and is both strong and fast. A fairly dangerous type of beast.

Passive ability: Attack power and speed are both very high. Its attacks have a 3% chance of causing the victim to bleed, resulting in damage over time for 5 seconds. Victim loses 30 HP per second.

Attack skills: [Leaping Bite]: Uses its body to leap at an enemy, and can easily knock its target to the ground, after which it lethally rips and bites the enemy to death.

“Well, let’s train here.”

With Xi Ling, his levelling speed was many times faster than other people's. However, if he levelled up too quickly, it would arouse the suspicion of other people, which is something Ling Chen took into account. With the Heaven's Jealousy debuff, then factoring in the fact that he only played for half the amount of time everyone else did, farming in a LV20 area meant that he would not be too far ahead of the other players.

"Go, Xi Ling, Xiao Hui!"

After being called out, Xi Ling and Xiao Hui rushed forwards. As Xi Ling's first "Wild Flames" landed, a large group of Tigers began to pitifully cry out... with their measly 800 or so HP, they could do nothing in the face of Xi Ling's overwhelming and destructive attacks.

On the other hand, Ling Chen was calmly lying on the grass with his hands behind his head. The items dropped from the Tigers were all picked up by Xiao Hui, and he would also absorb their corpses... while Xi Ling was razing and destroying mobs and mobs of tigers, Xiao Hui was also busily devouring mobs and mobs of corpses. It was the same as devouring the Red Eyed Lizards, Xiao Hui also devoured five Tiger corpses at a time. After a short while, Ling Chen opened his bag, and looked at the items that Xiao Hui had refined.

[Tiger Heart Core]: A core created from the energy of Tigers, after usage the user will receive +50 attack power for 10 minutes.

Ling Chen breathed out in awe... 50 attack power was equivalent to the attack bonus from a LV10 Gold equip, and lasted for 10 minutes, which was not a short period of time at all! Although it was a consumable item, Ling Chen believed that it definitely would not be worth any less than the elementary strength crystals. Although so far Xiao Hui usually only had the chance to absorb low level creatures, but the items he refined were incredibly shocking. Ling Chen was very pleased as he closed his bag, and took out the map of the Forgotten Continent that he had bought from Qian Gun Gun, which he then carefully looked at. As time passed, his EXP bar was quickly filling, and the number of Tiger Heart Cores in his bag unceasingly increased.

One day later.

“Ding... Congratulations you have levelled up, now LV15, HP+20, MP+10, Strength+5.”

“Ding... Congratulations your pet ‘Holy Spirit Beast’ Xiao Hui has levelled up, now LV15, HP+200, Mana+5, Defense+20.”

“Ding... Congratulations your pet ‘Crimson Spirit’ has levelled up, now LV13, HP+40, Mana+1000. Physical Attack Power+10, Magic Attack Power+300.”

“Ding... your pet Holy Divine Beast’s Passive Ability [Holy Spirit’s Aura] has levelled up to LV4.”

[Holy Spirit's Aura]: Current Level: LV4, Highest Level: LV20, Level required to upgrade to LV5: LV20, Using its Holy Spirit Aura that is void of evil and impurity to seek the protection of mother nature, upgrades the innate gifts of itself and all companions. Effect: Luck+4 and Comprehension+4 of itself along with the master and all pet companions. Effect exists even while not summoned.

As mobs and mobs of Tigers became corpses, Ling Chen had finally reached LV15. The Xiao Hui who had long since had enough EXP to level up to LV15 finally reached LV15 as well, and his Holy Spirit's Aura levelled up to LV4... Ling Chen's Luck and Comprehension had both reached 10 points... 10 points was the maximum number of points a player could choose to put into either Luck or Comprehension, and yet he had 10 points for both!

"Phew, finally reached LV15." Ling Chen took his eyes off the Forgotten Continent map. The map of the Forgotten Continent was simply to vast, and Qian Gun Gun's map was especially detailed. If Ling Chen wanted to thoroughly go through the entire map, it would take him 2 to 3 days. At this moment, a loud system announcement sound rang out.

"Ding... China Server Announcement! The first person in the China Region to reach LV15 has appeared. The China Region Player Level Rankings and Fame Rankings will now be revealed. After a short moment players will be able to view the China Region Player Level Rankings and Fame Rankings."

The next announcement only sounded out in Ling Chen's ears.

“Ding… your current level is LV15, and ranks as number 1 on the China Player Level Rankings. Do you wish to hide your personal information from the Rankings?”

“No need!” ling Chen immediately said. Before, Xiao Qi had mentioned that the Player Rankings would be released when a player reached LV15, and it turned out that was true.

“Ding… you currently have 6823 Fame Points, and rank as number 1 on the China Region Fame Rankings. Do you wish to hide your personal information from the Rankings?”

“No need.”

The news of China’s first LV15 player sent waves across the entire country. No matter if it was normal players or the super experts who stood at the peak of all other players, they all silently looked at their own levels, and could scarcely believe that someone had already reached LV15!!

Who was so logic-defying that he had already reached LV15! It had to be said that before that moment, there was only one person in the whole world who had reached LV15, and thus only one Region had released the Player Rankings… the female player in the America Region who was called “God” – Eve!! No one was surprised to see that she had taken this glory.

The second person to reach LV15 had actually come from China. People all thought of one person… the first person in the entire

world to walk out of Novice Village, Ling Tian!

Chapter 138 - Shui Ruo's Arrival

“Ding... Chinese Server Announcement! The Player Level Rankings and Fame Rankings are now open, you can now view the China Region Player Level Rankings and Fame Rankings.

Another server wide announcement was released; the new Player Level Rankings and Fame Rankings were being checked by countless players.

Player ranking list (Players with the same level are ranked by amount of EXP):

Rank 1: Ling Tian, Level: 15, Occupation: Ling Tian Battle Soul, Affiliation: none.

Rank 2: Feng Xie Yu, Level: 14, Occupation: Blade Spirit, Affiliation: none.

Rank 3: Skyfall, Level: 14, Occupation: Summoner, Affiliation: none.

Rank 4: Cang Yan, Level: 13, Occupation: Fire Mage, Affiliation: none.

Rank 5: Mu Bing Yao, Level: 13, Occupation: Assassin, Affiliation: none.

Rank 6: Against Heaven, Level: 13, Occupation: Warrior, Affiliation: none.

Rank 7: Winter of That Year, Level: 13, Occupation: Archer, Affiliation: none.

Rank 8: Xiao Qiu Feng, Level: 13, Occupation: Warrior, Affiliation: none.

Rank 9: Liu Yun Fei Xue, Level: 13, Occupation: Lightning Mage, Affiliation: none.

Rank 10: Gui Ya, Level: 13, Occupation: Assassin, Affiliation: none.

The Player Level Rankings are not the same as their strength rankings, especially this early in the game, as it is very hard for any player to distinguish him/herself from the pack. In fact, the overall positions on the list are constantly changing. Rank 1 is Ling Chen, the only level 15 in China, and rank 2 and 3 are Feng Xie Yu and Skyfall... the only two people that had attained level 14.

Yan Huang Alliance's "Sword Emperor", Feng Xie Yu, and Skyfall Dynasty's number one leader, the head of the Three Heavenly Kings, "Apocalypse Judge" Skyfall.
Ling Chen stared at Feng Xie Yu's name for a number of seconds, frowning.

Blade Spirit... such an unconventional occupation!! He had even received a Hidden Profession in the short time since the beginning of the game!!

This Sword Emperor is indeed remarkable... perhaps even stronger than expected.

Ling Chen looked at the first 10 ranks before closing the rankings and checking the Fame Rankings.

Fame rankings:

Rank 1: Ling Tian, Fame points; 6823, Affiliation: none.

Rank 2: Long Tian Yun, Fame points; 924, Affiliation: none.

Rank 3: Feng Xie Yu, Fame points; 899, Affiliation: none.

Rank 4: Skyfall, Fame points; 858, Affiliation: none.

Rank 5: Gui Ya, Fame points; 850, Affiliation: none.

On the fame rankings, Ling Chen's points far exceeded the others, placing him like a king at the top of the list. In the top 5, Ling Chen saw Long Tian Yun's name, who was known to value fame above strength, as there were two prerequisites to

establishing a guild; having a guild token and having over 1000 fame. To be the first person to create the Yan Huang Alliance in Mystic Moon, the guild leaders needed to spend all their energy collecting fame points. Therefore, Long Tian Yun and Skyfall ranked within the top 5 in fame.

Looking at the first of the player rankings, the Chinese player base was unsurprised. Ling Tian was the first to enter Azure Dragon City by a few days, and moreover, was carrying two Celestial grade items, as well as the two highest ranking pets. What they were shocked by, however, were the first and second ranked occupations – Ling Tian Battle Soul and Blade Spirit, which were both unfamiliar to all.

As far as the player-base could remember, only the Sword Emperor had acquired a Hidden Profession this early in the game. Moreover, the Hidden Profession had to have something to do with a sword and was something only the Sword Emperor could have. But now, in addition to the Sword Emperor, Ling Tian could as well! He too, had a hiden profession, but his level and fame points both exceeded that of Feng Xie Yun.

The legend of the Sword Emperor, had it really been dispelled?

When the fame rankings were released, the fame points of the first ranking player made everyone gasp.

A value of nearly 7000; more than 7 times the second ranking player, Long Tian Yun!

Fame points can only be gained by completing tasks, as well as killing fairies and bosses. The world of Mystic Moon had only opened for more than 10 days, so obtaining a few hundred points would have already been considered as remarkable, but to amass 7000 was unheard of.

In the corner of some plains.

All the players were evacuated from the monster's territory and stood in the safe zone according to each of the major occupations. Although their formation appeared to be scattered, in reality they were in a strong defensive position. Every player was looking in all directions for movement in the surrounding area, sometimes focusing on the person in the middle... it looked as if he was a supreme God.

Long Tian Yun was staring coldly ahead; he had been standing there for quite some time now. Carefully looking over the top 100 player rankings again, he saw many familiar names on the list, however, there were also many strange names. His eyes were now fixed on the first place of the fame rankings, locked onto the digital numbers '6823'. After a long time, he narrowed his eyes, and expressionlessly said, "This person has gained my attention. Ranking higher than Xie Yu, and even having a Hidden Profession – it appears that he has even named it after himself! Here I thought only Xie Yu could do that. Then there's the matter of his fame points... this guy, what kind of otherworldly boss did he kill? Or perhaps he completed a difficult heavenly task...there's simply no way he could have achieved this. This alone is enough to prove that his strength is extraordinary, and that he wasn't just extremely lucky."

“Lord, we are already focusing all our resources to find his identity… we are confident that the results will be in soon,” a person standing near Long Tian Yun said.

“Don’t worry over this matter.” Long Tian Yun raised his hand, and coolly said: “Based on how he is acting currently, he has not tried to hide any of his intentions. In this case, I believe it won’t be long, before his identity will appear on its own…try to track him down, and then ask if he has any interest in joining the Yan Huang alliance. Remember, if you meet him, be as friendly as possible. Even if he refuses to join my Yan Huang Alliance, do not quarrel with him.”

“Yes mi’lord.”

“Also, inform Xie Yu; ask if he has any interest towards this person. If he does, I can use those two to design a spectacular battle.” Closing the Fame Rankings, Long Tian Yun gazed into the distance and slowly spoke.

“I’ll notify the Sword Emperor of this… but I am certain that Ling Tian will be no match for him; the Sword Emperor is invincible! “As he said this, his eyes flashed with a hint of fear.

“WOW! You’re too good! Ling Tian big brother, you topped both rankings!! Oh yeah! I was ranked 43rd on the player ranking, it totally gave my brother a shock! Big sister Meng Xin ranked 17th, Su Su ranked 49th, and super strong big sister Mu Bing ranked 5th. All the members of Heart’s Dream are ranked within the top 50, and two of us are in the top 10! This is great! This was something

that previously only the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall dynasty could do!!”

“It was good that we spent most of yesterday and today in the Azure Dragon city, otherwise, we would have all gotten within the top 10, which would draw too much attention. We aren’t exactly very strong, at least for now.” This was Yun Meng Xin’s voice. When she saw Ling Tian’s ranking, she wasn’t surprised, but when she saw his Fame Points, she too was shocked.
“Big brother Ling Tian, keep going strong. We’ll keep trying our best too.” This was Su’Er’s voice.

The three girls excitedly talked for almost half a day, while Ling Chen temporarily stopped levelling and returned Xi Ling and Xiao Hui. It did not take much to figure out that he had once again become the conversational topic of all the players. His fame was unbelievable... being the first out of the Novice VIllage, the first to attain a Celestial equip, and the first to get a pet, unlocking the Pet Rankings. He had also killed a LV10 boss and a LV15 celestial boss, among a multitude of other big and small bosses... the fame points that he had received in the process were far greater than any other player.

Ling Chen returned to the Azure Dragon City to clean up his inventory, selling his Tiger Heart Cores for 20 gold each at the pawn shop. The Tiger Heart Cores were like treasure to other players, but worthless to him because he had collected so many. None of this bothered him in the slightest however; after clearing out his backpack, he would return once again to clearing out patches of the poor Tigers in their territory.

Before Shui Ruo left the novice village, Ling Chen was preparing to spend all his time levelling.

Finally... on one sunny morning.

“Big Brother! Big Brother... I’m finally LV10!! I’m so happy! I immediately left for the Azure Dragon City with the two older sisters! Wait for me!”

Ling Chen jumped up from the grass, and couldn’t help but smile. He had eagerly been awaiting the arrival of this day.

“Xi Ling, Xiao Hui, let’s go. Time to meet your female master!” Ling Chen smiled as he returned Xi Ling and Xiao Hui, whereupon raising his hand, a halo suddenly floated above his head.

“Ding... congratulations on levelling up, now level 16, HP +20, Magic +10, Strength +5.”

“Ding... your pet, “Holy Divine Beast” has levelled up, now level 16...”

Ling Chen was slightly amused. While Xi Ling and Xiao Hui were working hard, he had been studying the map of the Forgotten Continent, wanting to completely memorize it. Without knowing it, his LV15 EXP bar had been filled.

Now at level 16, his SP was 1380. Ling Chen returned Xi Ling and Xiao Pet Dimension, and then made his way back to the Azure

Dragon City, waiting for Shui Ruo’s arrival.

Chapter 139 - Fairy Priest

Ling Chen didn't have to wait long; it was only 10 minutes later that he spotted a beautiful figure approaching as he stood beside the resurrection stone. The Azure Dragon Square was always bustling with crowds of people, but when Shui Rui, wearing a cute butterfly mask, walked into the city, Ling Chen immediately recognised her. After all, he was all too familiar with Shui Ruo and would have been able to pick her out from among the sea of faces, even if there were ten times as many people.

Also seeing Ling Chen, Ling Shui Ruo began to quickly run towards him, and with a loud cry of joy she exclaimed, "Big brother!"

Ling Chen walked over, and pulled her closely to his side so she wouldn't get hit by the people rushing about. It felt good to finally be with her in the game world. He lowered his head, and spoke into her ear, "Ruo Ruo, it's too noisy here, let's go someplace quiet. There are a few guildmates I'd like you to meet."

"Okay!" Arriving in a new place and being together with Ling Tian; her heart was filled with excitement at the novelty of the experience. Mystic Moon was like heaven to her, compared to the past that she had spent trapped in her bed. "Oh yeah, big brother, these are the big sisters who always helped me train when I was in the novice village. All the equipment I have was given to me by her and she even helped me get to this place. Two big sisters, this is my big brother."

Looking to her side, Ling Chen also saw two other girls dressed in

common equipment, their faces hidden by masks. As he turned towards them, they nodded at him and one of them said: “Hello, pleased to meet you… I really like Ruo Ruo; she often talks about you.”

The girl’s voice sounded young, but cold with a slight stiffness.

“Big brother, if not for these big sisters helping me, I don’t know how long it would be before I could leave the Novice Village. We have to give our thanks to these two big sisters, alright?”

It was so typical of Shui Ruo; she would never forget an act of kindness. Ling Chen gently smiled, and said to them: “Thanks for helping me take care of Shui Ruo.”

Taken aback, the girls began to panic and one of them began to wave her arms around saying: “No… no need to thank us; we brought her because we really liked Ruo Ruo… If there’s nothing else, I think we’ll be heading off, but if you need help with anything, feel free to call us at any time.”

Her cold voice was unable to hide her clear anxiety, and when she had finished speaking, they both walked away, not waiting for a response… almost as if they were fleeing.

“Huh? Big sisters, where are you going…”

Then they were gone, swept away in the ocean of players that filled the square centre. Shui Ruo looked around for a moment,

and then said: “That’s strange, why were they in such a hurry to leave?”

“Maybe it was because they saw that Ruo Ruo had found big brother, so now they can relax and do some of their own things. Don’t worry, if you ever miss them, you can just call them over to play with you. “Ling Chen smiled as he spoke, then held her hand and led her north of the city.

“Well, all right.” Even though it still felt a little unusual, Shui Ruo didn’t think too much of it, trusting Ling Chen, “Big brother; the guildmates that you want to introduce to me, are they beautiful? Oh, and should I advance my occupation?”

“No need, let’s go.”

They walked through the Marketplace and the Administrative Zone until they reached the common residential areas in the northern part of the city. There were very few players around; most of the inhabitants were NPCs. When they had reached a safe place, Ling Chen stopped and took out a scroll he had specially prepared for Shui Ruo... it was a job advancement scroll for [Fairy Priest]!

When he faced the Azure Dragon’s Mayor he was granted a single request, and after careful deliberation, chose to ask for job advancement scrolls from the Hall of Heroic Spirits. He selected one that was suitable for Shui Ruo to job advance into-Fairy Priest. As for the [Phantasmal Bladedancer], it was just a bonus – levels could be increased, equipment could be obtained with effort, and money could be earned. Everything that could be bought or earnt

with effort could not be considered the ‘extremely valuable’. As such, this scroll that was almost impossible to obtain was quite valuable to him.

“Ruo Ruo, shatter this scroll and advance your job.” As he placed the scroll into her hands, He hoped that his Shui Ruo would be the happiest princess, even if only in the virtual world.

When she opened it, her mouth widened and she cried out: “Wow!! A Hidden Profession class change scroll!”

Although this was her first time playing a virtual game, she had been exposed to them when she was younger, so she had a basic understanding of the game’s elements. She knew that this scroll was extremely rare and precious, and that it was also the right one for her current class. Looking up, her face was filled with joy and gratitude for Ling Chen, “Big brother! You’re so great! Big brother is the greatest in the whole world!”

Players in the Novice Village could also hear server-wide announcements, from the mouths of other players. The name that she heard the most from their discussions was “Ling Tian”. She knew that the person that people were talking about was her favourite big brother and was very familiar with every major event that had transpired within Mystic Moon since its opening. None of this had really surprised her at all, and she was secretly proud, because from a young age she had liked him to the point of almost worshipping him. To her, her brother was the world’s most amazing and powerful person.

“But of course! Otherwise how could I be Ruo Ruo’s big brother.”

Ling Chen laughed with pride at the sight of her happiness. He felt more and more certain that taking this scroll was worth it. “Come on now, shatter it and advance your job.”

“Yup!” Shui Ruo nodded.

Excited, but nervous at the prospect of using a Hidden Profession scroll, she took a deep breath and cautiously crushed it as she closed her eyes. Suddenly, the pieces of the scroll floated up and fragments of green light exploded from within, bathing Shui Ruo’s body until she had been completely covered.

With a sweet smile, she opened her eyes, and exclaimed: “Big brother, it succeeded!”

The green light still hovered around Shui Ruo’s body, releasing a breeze that smelled like the freshness of a grassy field.

The properties of Shui Ruo’s new class were revealed before Ling Chen’s eyes, and the two siblings looked to see what kind of special abilities this class possessed.

[Fairy Priest]: A class originating from the mystical Fairy Clan. The user can harness the sheer force of nature to be used for healing and support, or to perform mild attacks on enemies. When advancing to this class, the body will be shrouded with the beautiful light of Fairies. If a person with this class enters the Fairy Clan they will have the goodwill and trust of the Fairies.

Class Bonus Stats: Constitution +10, Agility +10, Spirit +20, HP +100, Magic +200, water, fire, wind, thunder, earth, light, darkness, all seven elements resistance +12%, SP +50.

Class Passive Abilities: Able to freely activate the Fairy Light. When active, 5% HP and 3%MP is restored per second. Can greatly reduce any kind of aggression from any creature. Core attribute result: 1 Strength = 2 Physical Attack, 1 Constitution = 10HP + 1 defence, 1 Agility = 1 Hit rate + 1 dodge, 1 Spirit = 2 Magic attack + 15 mana. Every time it is upgraded, +10HP, +20 mana, +1 spirit, +5 free AP.

Class Skills:

[Holy Movement]: Current level: LV1, highest level: LV3, SP requirement for upgrading to LV2: 100. A skill all elementalists have; blink 3m in any direction. Cannot blink past barriers, costs 60 mana, 3 second cooldown.

[Self-Spirit Healing]: Current level: LV1, highest level: LV5, SP requirement for upgrading to LV2: 30. Invokes the power of nature to heal self, heals 30% of own HP, cost 15 mana, 5 second cooldown.

[Fairy Heal]: Current level: LV1, highest level: LV5, SP requirement for upgrading to LV2: 30, Invokes the power of nature to heal a target within 15m. Target healed for Magic attack x2, costs 20 mana, 5 second cooldown.

[Fairy Arrow]: Current level: LV1, highest level: LV5, SP requirement for upgrading to LV2: 30. Manipulates the force of nature into an elemental arrow, attacking a single target within 10m.

[Nature's Light]: Current level: LV1, highest level: LV5, SP requirement for upgrading to LV2: 200. A reverent prayer is made to Nature, summoning the power of nature to cover self and surrounding players. Restores HP (Magic Attack x3) to all targets within 30m radius, and removes all abnormal states, costs 300 mana, 30 second cooldown.

[Fairy Shield]: Current level: LV1, highest level: LV5, SP requirement for upgrading to LV2: 200. Using the power of nature, casts a shield of nature onto a target within a 15m radius, reducing all damage taken by that target by 30%. Lasts 20 seconds, 60 second cooldown.

Chapter 140 - Heart's Dream's New Member

After carefully looking through the stats and skills of the Fairy Priest class, no matter if it was Ling Chen or Shui Ruo, they were both utterly dumbfounded. Although they were somewhat prepared, this class had surpassed anything they had expected. After changing class, there were six skills that could be immediately used, even more than Ling Chen's "Ling Tian Battle Soul".

"So powerful..." Ling Shui Ruo opened her mouth, and felt her whole body brimming with a pure energy, "This... is this power really mine now... so powerful, it's like I'm in a dream."

Although she didn't know strong a normal Priest was, but the Fairy Priest class she had just changed to was many, many times stronger than the Apprentice Priest class she had before. Moreover, she had only just changed class, and this was the weakest state of the class... and yet, it already had six usable skills. If this class and its skills were all upgraded, and advanced into a higher class, it would be absolutely inconceivable how strong the advanced class would be.

"Of course it is! Ruo Ruo, right now, you're probably the strongest Priest in all of China." Ling Chen said while smiling. He had said this to make Shui Ruo happy, but at the same time, he knew that he was not exaggerating at all. After looking at the Fairy Priest's stats and skills, even he had been completely shocked. It was so much stronger than a normal Priest, and this was only the beginning. It was difficult to imagine how powerful this class would be after it was developed and upgraded.

Ling Shui Ruo gave a sweet smile, “Then I’m going to be able to protect big brother right?”

“Of course! My Ruo Ruo will become the strongest Priest out there, and there will be countless people begging Ruo Ruo to protect them.” Ling Chen said with a smile. Powerful Priests were people who guilds desperately fought over, this was something that was commonly seen. It was because the role of a Priest was far too important in team battles. Shield bearers and Priests were two classes that a powerful team absolutely needed.

Fairy Priest… if the stats and skills of this class were made public, there would be many jealous Priests who would drool from just looking at the stats and skills.

“Let’s go, I’ll take you to meet our guild members. They’re already waiting for us.”

No one could resist the allure of a powerful class. The sheer power and mysteriousness of the Hidden Professions were things that caused people to lose control of themselves. The Shui Ruo who had just changed to the Fairy Priest class was still lost in her exhilaration… or perhaps, she was always this happy and carefree when she was with Ling Chen.

Before Ling Chen had met up with Shui Ruo, he had already told Meng Xin and the rest of them about her. They had long since been waiting for this mysterious guild member, and were very much looking forwards to meeting her.

They walked to the house with the “Heart’s Dream” sign, and opened the door. Inside, Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su’Er an Mu Bing Yao had been sitting together, discussing something. When they saw Ling Chen and the girl he had brought, they all stood up, and went over to greet them.

“Good morning big brother Ling Tian… is she your little sister, our Heart’s Dream’s new member?” The first to rush up was naturally the energetic Xiao Qi. She immediately started questioning Ling Chen as she curiously stared at Shui Ruo.

“Yeah, this is my little sister, you can call her Ruo Ruo. She’s sixteen years and five months old.” Ling Chen said as he nodded.

Ever since she was diagnosed with the Isrock disease, apart from himself, Shui Ruo had not been in contact with any other people, and thus did not have any friends. Ling Chen hoped that she would make many friends in this world, friends who she could chat with, have fun with and play with.

“Wah!! Awesome!! Hi Ruo Ruo, I’m called Xiao Qi, and I’m older than you by one year. You can call me Qi Qi.” Another new member had joined, and it was Ling Tian’s little sister. Xiao Qi’s excitement was written all over her face.

“Hi big sister Qi Qi, big brother often mentions you these days.” The Shui Ruo who had not been in contact with other people for a while was not shy or reclusive at all. Whether it was her voice, or her smile, they were both extremely natural and relaxed.

“Eh? Big brother Ling Tian often mentions me?” This sentence caused Xiao Qi’s heart to start beating 200% faster. She secretly glanced at Ling Chen and hurriedly asked, “What does he say about me? Did he say anything bad about me?”

Ling Shui Ruo shook her head, “No way. Big brother said Qi Qi is a very pretty, cute and pure girl, as well as has a very powerful background. However, she doesn’t act like a stuck-up girl at all, and no matter who she talks to, that person will become very happy.”

Ling Chen: “……”

Hearing that she had been described like this by Ling Chen, Xiao Qi felt like flowers were blooming in her heart. Instantly, her opinion of the girl in front of her considerably rose as well. She covered her face, and slightly embarrassedly said, “Hehe, no way I’m as good as big brother Ling Tian described… En, Ruo Ruo, once again, welcome to Heart’s Dream. If anyone dares to bully you, let me know and I’ll teach them a lesson. Don’t worry, with me protecting you, no one will dare to bully you.”

“En! Thanks big sister Qi Qi.”

Shui Ruo’s voice was so soft and pure that it seemed like it could melt any and all evil and sinfulness. It was just as effective towards women as towards men, causing the Xiao Princess to vow to protect her as soon as they had met. She affectionately held Shui Ruo’s little hands as she introduced everyone else, “This is big

sister Meng Xin, who is our Heart's Dream's guild master! She's a very good person, so I'm sure that you will like her."

"Hello big sister Meng Xin... I've been hearing about you since a long time ago. Big brother said that your temperament and personality is one of the best he's ever seen, and today I can confirm this is true!"

Shui Ruo's words caused Yun Meng Xin to gently smile. She felt that even the softest places in her heart had been stirred by Shui Ruo. This was a girl who was almost impossible to dislike. It seemed that Yun Meng Xin's previous worries had all been unnecessary, "Ruo Ruo, welcome to Heart's Dream. I hope that it will become like another family for you."

"Definitely!" Ling Shui Ruo answered in a clear voice.

"And the most, most little-est; most, most cute-est is our little Su Su. She's only fifteen years old, so she's a big younger than you." Xiao Qi began to introduce Su'Er.

"Hello Su Su... Su Su is just as cute as big brother described. Yesterday big brother was saying how he liked seeing Su Su's face when she's blushing." Ling Shui Ruo walked towards Su'Er with a sweet smile.

Hearing what Ling Chen had said about her, Su'Er began to blush and slightly lowered her head. She looked so cute that anyone would be tempted to kiss her little face. She used a very small and weak voice to say, "Big sister Ruo Ruo, welcome to Heart's Dream.

Let's… all work hard together."

"En! Let's work hard together! I will definitely work hard with all of you!"

Ling Shui Ruo's behaviour caused Ling Chen to be somewhat surprised. After being diagnosed with the Isrock Disease, she had been cut off from the rest of the world for three years. What he expected was that she would act somewhat awkwardly or cautiously around strangers, and would not be able to act in such a relaxed manner. However, the way Shui Ruo acted towards them seemed like she had seen her own blood-related sisters, and had even caused every single person to have a good impression of her… from the way they all looked at Shui Ruo, Ling Chen could tell that they all extremely liked this girl, although they had only just met. Silently, he thought of the Shui Ruo from three years ago… indeed, the Shui Ruo from back then was just as energetic and outgoing, just like Xiao Qi. She was not afraid of anything and held no malicious intents whatsoever in her heart. She was so kind and caring… even to a person who was collapsed on the ground, someone no one else even bothered to look at. And yet, she had anxiously and caringly called out to him…

Indeed, she was someone who enjoyed lively places and events, and enjoyed having many friends. Three years ago she was like this; naturally, three years after, she would be too. She wouldn't be shy or afraid, and would instead be incredibly happy to have so many friends…

"And finally, this is the most, most strongest girl in all of China… as well our Heart's Dream's member!" Xiao Qi pointed towards Mu

Bing Yao.

“I know, it’s big sister Bing Yao!” Ling Shui Ruo immediately called out Mu Bing Yao’s name, causing this cold beauty to reveal an expression of shock, as well as another strange expression which quickly disappeared. Ling Shui Ruo contined, “Hello big sister Bing Yao, it’s so good to see you up close! I heard of your name a long time ago, and I know you’re even called the ‘Frozen Hearted Man-eater.” I never thought that I could become guildmates with big sister Bing Yao, I’m so happy!”

Hearing Shui Ruo say this, Mu Bing Yao’s icy heart deep down felt a sensation of warmth. She did not say anything back, only nodding at Ling Shui Ruo. However, her snowy-jade complexion revealed a faint expression of gentleness towards Shui Ruo.

“And now, our Heart’s Dream has six members! Yet another guild member, I’m so happy!” Xiao Qi fondly pulled Shui Ruo to sit next to her at the table. Shui Ruo’s little hands were extremely soft and gentle, causing Xiao Qi to be unwilling to let go. She looked at Ling Shui Ruo, and stretched out her hands towards the butterfly mask she was wearing, “Ruo Ruo, quickly take off your mask so we can see what you look like. Ruo Ruo’s voice is so pleasant, so I’m sure that you’re a super pretty girl.”

Ling Shui Ruo put up her hands in front of the mask, and gently shook her head, “I also really want to show everyone what I look like, but I need to listen to big brother. He doesn’t want me to take off my mask, so I won’t.”

Ling Chen, who knew that this was bound to happen, let out a

sigh. Without giving Xiao Qi a chance to continue to push Shui Ruo, he walked over and put his arm around Shui Ruo's shoulders, "It's not that I don't want you guys to see what Ruo Ruo looks like, and it's not that I don't trust you guys. It's just that Ruo Ruo's body isn't too well... and you should all know that right now I'm attracting a lot of attention. If they people who were observing me found out about me, they'd use Ruo Ruo to find out my identity. Although it wouldn't matter much for me, but I'm afraid that Ruo Ruo would be negatively affected. Thus, just to be especially safe, we need to protect our identities."

"Indeed, Ling Tian, you're very famous now, so much that you're squashing the names of the Sword Emperor and Shinigami. Right now, there are definitely countless people who are desperately trying to find your real identity in order to rope you in with them, or even control you. If your identity does become exposed, then your life will be disrupted, as well as Ruo Ruo's, who needs to be looked after. I agree that you should be as cautious as possible." Yun Meng Xin was very understanding of Ling Chen's position.

"Fine then." Although Xiao Qi was still extremely curious and was not quite happy to give up, she did not persist anymore.

"When it's the right time, Ruo Ruo and I will not hide our identities from you guys anymore. I believe that this day will not be too far away." Ling Chen smilingly said.

Chapter 141 - The Four Mega Quests (1)

Just how charming Ling Shui Ruo was, she herself had no idea. At least, she had unknowingly caused someone like Ling Chen to, for her, become a completely different person. For her, he had given up many things he definitely would not have given up in the past.

Her voice, every sentence she spoke, as well as her demeanour and temperament caused people to like her. Her arrival had caused her to become the focus of everyone. As they were all girls, they did not feel distant or unfamiliar when chatting, and felt like that they had all been friends for a long time.

They all knew that Ling Shui Ruo had just left Novice Village, and had wanted to take her to change her class. However, when Ling Shui Ruo revealed her [Fairy Priest] class, they had all been shocked out of their minds.

“Hidden Profession! Such a powerful Priest... Heavens! It must be many, many times stronger than normal Priests!”

“Looks like our Heart’s Dream has a very, very powerful Priest now. With Ruo Ruo, we can fight with no worries now.” Yun Meng Xin said while smiling.

“Us five girls, big sister Meng Xin and big sister Bing Yao are close quarter combat, Su Su is ranged combat, I’m a Mage and now we have Ruo Ruo. If we can find a Shield Bearer, then we would have a perfect team!” Xiao Qi said while grinning.

“But, what about big brother Ling Tian?” Su’Er asked in a small voice.

Xiao Qi wrinkled her nose, “Big brother Ling Tian is way too overpowered, if he’s there, then we won’t have anything to do. When we go on quests, we need to get rid of big brother Ling Tian, otherwise there won’t be any danger or excitement anymore.”

Ling Chen curled his lips, but didn’t say anything.

Meng Xin and the rest of them felt that what Xiao Qi had said was quite true. Every time there was a monster or a group of monsters, they would fight them to the best of their abilities. However, if Ling Chen was present, if he called out Xi Ling, all she had to do was flap her wings and mobs and mobs of monsters would be easily destroyed. The rest of the girls would have nothing to do. Before, they were discussing how if Ling Chen’s true power was displayed in front of everyone, who knew how big the waves would be.

“That’s right, big brother Ling Tian!” Xiao Qi stood up from her chair, and ran to Ling Chen’s side. Her two large eyes sparkled as she looked at him, “The Hidden Profession Ruo Ruo has must have come from you right? Do you have any other Hidden Professions? You have one, Ruo Ruo has one, big sister Meng Xin has one. There’s still big sister Bing Yao, Su Su and me, Qi Qi... we also want a Hidden Profession! Give us one each as well.”

Ling Chen’s mouth slightly tensed, “Do you think Hidden Professions are heads of cabbage, and you can just find them all

over the ground?!”

Come to think of it, Ling Chen did indeed have a Hidden Profession class change scroll… it was the [Wind Spirit Marksman] that had dropped from the Zephyr Bird. Su’Er was an Archer, and thus could use this scroll. However, Ling Chen still did not choose to take out the scroll.

The reason he had given Yun Meng Xin a Hidden Profession was because she was the reason why he had joined the virtual world; she was the person he was directly trying to help. He had only known everyone else for a short period of time, and could not base the decision of giving something so valuable on such a short period of time.

“But, I really want one… big sister Bing Yao, Su Su, I’m sure you guys want one too, right?” Xiao Qi grabbed Ling Chen’s hand, acting like a little sister who was trying to convince her older brother to buy her something she wanted by acting cute. The power of beauty was very strong, but even if it was stronger by ten times, Ling Chen still wouldn’t be able to take anything out. He could only exasperatedly say, “In a game, only a few Hidden Professions might be found. It’s really not easy at all to find one. How about this, if I really do find one in future, I’ll immediately give it to you, alright?”

Of course, Xiao Qi had known that the chance for a Hidden Profession class change scroll was extremely low. If it was that easy to find, then there would be players with Hidden Professions all over the place. She never expected to really get a Hidden Profession from Ling Chen just like that; to be able to get this

promise from Ling Chen, she was already very satisfied, “As a man, you need to keep your promises! Remember, if you find any Elementalist Hidden Professions, you definitely have to give it to me!”

Heart’s Dream now had six members. Out of the six members, three had Hidden Professions, and two were in the top 10 of the Player Level Rankings. The Ling Chen who had become the core of Heart’s Dream was number 1 on the Player Level Rankings, no less. A guild with little to no foundation and fame, and had not even been officially established yet, surprisingly had quite an impressive line-up.

“In that case, what should we do now? Right, let’s take Ruo Ruo to have a look around Azure Dragon City. Azure Dragon City’s so large, and there are a lot of fun things to do.”

“How about this,” Yun Meng Xin said while smiling, “After coming to Azure Dragon City, we still haven’t had a taste of the delicacies here. Today, let’s spend a bit extravagantly, and have a nice banquet.”

“Good idea! I completely agree!”

Yun Meng Xin’s suggestion received positive responses from everyone else, so they decided to go with this plan. Just as they were about to leave, a system announcement rang out in everyone’s ears.

“Ding... China Region Announcement. Over 50% of players have

completed their first class change in the China Region. The China Region Mercenary system has been released, from now on players can go to the Mercenary Registration in large cities to register a Mercenary Group.

The China Region Guild system has been released, players with over 1000 Fame and have a Guild Creation Token can go to the Mayor's Residence in large cities to create a Guild.

The China Region Guild Rankings have been released (Guilds are ranked according to their time of creation)."

"Ding... China Region Announcement. Over 50% of players have completed their first class change in the China Region. China Region's 4 Mega Quests have been released. The 4 Mega Quests are for strong players who enjoy dangerous quests that push them to their limits. Every Mega Quest has extremely high difficulty. After completing a Mega Quest, players will receive bounteous rewards. The information regarding the 4 Mega Quests have been sent to every player's Quest Page. It is recommended that brave players who wish to challenge the 4 Mega Quests make sufficient preparations. Entry requirements: After creating a group, the group leader will choose the Mega Quest. The group will then be teleported to the location of the Mega Quest.

The Mercenary system and Guild system had finally been released. Although both were player groups, a Mercenary Group had much more freedom than a Guild. Mercenary Groups could be created or disbanded at any time, and did not have as many requirements or restrictions. However, because of this, they would forever remain as small-scale entities. The creation of Guilds was

much more complicated, as well as serious, than the creation of Mercenary Groups. A few minutes after the System Announcement had ended, a player initiated Region Announcement sounded out.

"Ding... player "Yan Huang's Shadow" initiated Region Announcement: Yan Huang Alliance is currently requesting for a Guild Creation Token. If any player has found a Guild Creation Token, please contact me directly; price is not an issue. Our Yan Huang Alliance represents China's power and glory. In Mystic Moon, we vow to grow even stronger, and make the entire world tremble before our mighty Yan Huang Alliance!"

A Region Announcement could transmit a message to hundreds of millions of players at the same time. As such, initiating such an announcement was very costly-an announcement, restricted to one minute, costed an extraordinary ten thousand gold!!

Even if it was the Yan Huang Alliance, being able to fork out ten thousand gold at the current stage of the game was not easy for them. However, in order to be the first to obtain a Guild Creation Token and become the first official guild, they were willing to make sacrifices. Guilds were ranked according to their time of creation. This meant that the first Guild to be created, unless it was destroyed, would forever remain at the top of the Guild Rankings. As such, it was obvious why everyone was so desperate to obtain the first Guild Creation Token. Having the number 1 position and having any lower position were completely different things.

After the Yan Huang Alliance's announcement sounded out, another player initiated announcement rang out...

“Ding… player “Gloomy Ecstasy” initiated Region Announcement: Skyfall Dynasty is currently looking for a Guild Creation Token. Our Three Heavenly Kings promise that whoever gives us the first Guild Creation Token, they will immediately become a core member of Skyfall Dynasty, enjoying the same benefits as a core member before Mystic Moon closes. You will never have to worry about money again…”

Immediately after the Guild system had been released, the fight to become the first official Guild had started. There was destined to be a blood-filled showdown between the Yan Huang Alliance and the Skyfall Dynasty, these two great powers. To them, their only competitors were the other side; they did not believe that there were any other guilds with the power or resources to acquire the first Guild Creation Token.

Of course, these were only the concerns of the big figures of the Guilds. The attention of all the other players was placed upon the ‘4 Mega Quests’.

“Looks like we have something to do now.” The group that had just been about to leave to have a luxurious banquet stopped. Ling Chen opened his Quests Page, and showed it to everyone, “Let’s have a look at these Quests. Maybe doing a Quest together wouldn’t be too bad either.”

Chapter 142 - The Four Mega Quests (2)

Mega Quest 1: [Exterminate the Ogres]

Quest Background: In the North-East of the Azure Dragon City, there is a dark, rocky area that has Ogres. It is said that the Ogres are survivors of the Demon Clan that had been exterminated in the ancient times. Although they do not have the power of the Demon Clan, they still are extremely cruel and vicious. They believe that drinking fresh human blood can give them more power. Thus, every human that passes by is their target. This has caused this area to become a haunted place, with the residents nearby being extremely terrified of the place. The human residents cannot help but worry that one day they will run out of the dark place and into human territory.

Quest Details: Advance to the 'Dark Craggy Hill' and kill 200 Ogres. This Quest can be completed as a solo player, or in a group of no more than twelve people. Different player groups will be sent to different regions in the 'Dark Craggy Hill' and will not be able to affect each other.

Quest Difficulty: Relatively Hard

Quest Rewards: 2 x LV15 Copper weapons (only 2 per team), SP+50 (every player), Fame+50 (every player). This Quest can only be entered three times. The SP and Fame rewards can only be received in the first completion.

Quest Warning: The Ogres are LV13-16, and are stronger than

normal monsters of the same level. They hunt in packs, and are difficult to deal with. Players should be aware that Giant Ogres may appear, which are generally impossible to defeat for normal players at the current stage. Recommended Level: 13+, Recommended Number of Players: 12 players.

Mega Quest 2: [Collect Red Crystal Grass]

Quest Background: The Azure Dragon's Mayor's son was bitten by a venomous snake and severely poisoned. The venom has been dispelled and his life is no longer in any danger. However, because of the snake venom, his body has become quite weak. In order to fully recover his body's health and energy, he requires large amounts of Red Crystal Crass.

Quest Details: Advance to the Forest Region at the East of the Azure Dragon City and collect at least three Red Crystal Grass. Deliver the Red Crystal Grass to the guards of the Mayor's Residence. This Quest can be completed as a solo player, or in a group of no more than twelve people.

Difficulty: Hard

Quest Rewards: 1 x LV15 Silver Weapon (only 1 per team), SP+80 (every player), Fame+80 (every player). This Quest can only be entered three times. The SP and Fame rewards can only be received in the first completion.

Quest Warning: The monsters at the Forest Region are all LV30+, the players entering the Forest Region should avoid the monsters at all circumstances. It is recommended that the players split up, as well as use equips that can increase agility and/or speed. Recommended Level: 15+, Recommended Number of Players: 12 players.

Mega Quest 3: [Forest of Bones]

Quest Background: To the South-East of the Azure Dragon City, right next to the Eastern Sea, there is a dark, forbidden forest called the “Forest of Bones”. The Forest of Bones, Lonely Spirit Ridge and Moon God Ruins are the three forbidden areas for humans in the Eastern Region of the Forgotten Continent. There are countless bones inside the Forest of Bones, which suggests that countless beings have died or were buried there. However, to this date, no one knows where all the bones came from. The Forest of Bones not only has normal Skeletons, but also weapon carrying Skeleton Soldiers, which have incredibly solid bodies and strong attack power. They will emotionlessly kill any humans who come near, and add their bones to the masses of bones already there. It is said that something is behind the scenes controlling the Skeletons, protecting something.

Quest Details: Advance to the Forest of Bones. Find out what is at the heart of the Forest of Bones, and report to the Chief of Bodyguards.

Difficulty: Extremely Hard

Quest Rewards: 2 x LV20 Gold Weapon (only 2 per team) and one Intermediate Energy Crystal (only 1 per team), SP+150 (every player), Fame+150 (every player), Luck+1, Comprehension+1 (every player). This Quest can only be entered three times, and can only be entered once per day. This Quest has a time limit of 3 hours; after 3 hours, players will be returned from the Quest. Once a player has completed the Quest, the Quest will automatically be closed (i.e. the Quest can only be completed by one player or one group of players).

Quest Warning: The Skeletons in the Forest of Bones are special monsters and have extremely strong defence. The heart of the Forest of Bones contains many hidden dangers, so players should proceed with caution. Recommended Level: LV20+, Recommended Number of Players: 12 players.

Ultimate Quest: [Moon God Ruins]

Quest Background: Ten thousand years ago, a catastrophe called the “Shura’s Devastation” occurred. Because of mankind’s constant modernisation and updating of history, this event has long since been forgotten by the humans. However, the Moon God Clan will never forget this catastrophe. This is because in that event, thirty Moon Gods were slain by the Shura. After a tragic and horrifying battle, the Moon God Clan finally killed the Shura at the place the thirty Moon Gods had died at. However, because of the severity of the battle, the surrounding area was reduced to ruins. From then onwards, the Moon God Clan has never entered that place.

Since ten years ago, the Azure Dragon's Mayor started receiving news that mournful weeping had been heard from the direction of the Moon God Ruins. It is said that the mournful weeping came from the souls of the Moon Gods that were slain there. Five years ago, the Azure Dragon's Mayor sent people to investigate the Moon God Ruins, but to this date, none have returned.

Quest Details: Advance to the Moon God Ruins and investigate the origin of the mournful weeping. Report your findings to the Azure Dragon's Mayor. Only after completing the other three Mega Quests can players accept this Quest. Only one player can enter at a time.

Quest Difficulty: Insanely Difficult

Quest Rewards: Unknown. Every player can only enter once. If any player completes the Quest, the Quest will automatically be closed.

Quest Warning: If you would like to die, please accept this Quest. Recommended Level: Unsuitable for any level, Recommended Number of Players: All who enter shall die.

The 4 Mega Quests had been listed on every player's Quest Page, and each Mega Quest was described in detail. The difficulties were split into Relatively Hard, Hard, Extremely Hard... and Insanely Hard. There were no normal or easy difficulty Quests. The Ultimate Quest, the "Moon God Ruins" Quest, had even clearly stated that 'If you would like to die, please accept this Quest'.

“Wow, all of the rewards are so good! You can receive so many SP!! And look, look! If you finish that “Forest of Bones” Quest, you can get two Gold equips, two!! As well as an Intermediate Energy Crystal! Ah! Heavens, you also get bonuses to your Luck and Comprehension!!”

“However, for these good quests, as soon as they are completed, they will be closed. The difficulty of these types of Quests will definitely be at a ridiculous level. The Quest Warning also stated that players should be at least LV20 before attempting the Quest, so no sensible player would go and try it out now.” Yun Meng Xin said. “The “Forest of Bones” Quest’s rewards are incredibly tempting, and only one player or one group of players can receive these rewards. I’m sure there are many players who will be tempted to try out this Quest before other players complete it. Nonetheless, it has been labelled as “Extremely Hard”, so it is definitely almost impossible to clear at this stage of the game.”

“Big brother, this Moon God Ruins Quest is so strange. The Quest description almost implies that it is impossible to clear, so why would they even offer such a Quest?” Ling Shui Ruo asked Ling Chen while pointing at the Quest.

Ling Chen believed that the “Moon God Ruins” Quest would definitely become the hot topic of discussion among players. The Quest was labelled as “Insanely Hard”, and claimed that anyone who entered would die, as well as had quite an impressive background. Apparently it was related to the powerful “Moon God Clan”. However, the more mysterious and terrifying a Quest was described as, the more intrigued and interested players would become. Moreover, anyone knew, the harder a Quest, the better

the rewards would be.

[Exterminate the Ogres], this was a somewhat decent extermination Quest. However, to be the targets of a Mega Quest, the Ogres definitely would not be easy to kill. If they were not careful while hunting the Ogres, they would instead become the hunted. This was especially so because the Quest mentioned that Ogres often hunted in packs.

[Collect Red Crystal Grass], this Quest was situated in the Forest Region, the place Ling Chen had passed while heading to Lonely Spirit Ridge in the past. The hardest part was not finding the Red Crystal Grass, but rather in staying alive in such a dangerous place… because the monsters that appeared there simply could not be defeated by players of the current stage of the game. If a single monster appeared, then the entire party would have a difficult time getting rid of it, but if it was a group of monsters… then the player group would be finished.

[Forest of Bones]: Like the Lonely Spirit Ridge, it was also a forbidden area. Thus, it definitely was hiding some sort of dangerous and terrifying thing. However, this Quest was not impossible, as the objective was not to kill something or collect something, but to rather just reach the heart of the Forest of Bones. Nevertheless, this was a forbidden area, so even if the objective was to reach the central area, it would still be incredibly difficult.

[Moon God Ruins]…… Ling Chen’s gaze lingered on this Quest for a very long time, and read through the description again and again with his eyebrows furrowed.

The Moon God Ruins' description was something that would cause many players to become too afraid to attempt the Quest, but Ling Chen was someone who enjoyed thrilling and dangerous situations. The more difficult something was, the more he wanted to overcome it.

After looking through these Quests a few times, he had already become determined to go to the Moon God Ruins to see what was hiding there... but in order to enter the Moon God Ruins, he would have to finish all three of the other Mega Quests, including the [Forest of Bones] Quest that could only be completed once by one player or group of players.

"What do you guys think of doing a Quest together?" Ling Chen suggested, "This Ogre-exterminating Quest doesn't look too hard, and it doesn't seem like it'll take too long. Plus, all the different groups are transported to different areas, so we won't have to fight with anyone else. The rewards of 50 SP and 50 Fame Points are also pretty good."

"Sure. Come to think of it, we've never completed a Quest together as Heart's Dream before, right?" Yun Meng Xin said.

"I agree! Then, let's begin our Heart's Dream's first Quest expedition. After we complete the Quest, we can go to have our banquet!" Xiao Qi raised her hands in total agreement.

Chapter 143 - A Surprise Attack

The [Exterminate the Ogres] quest was a simple quest in every respect: it could be started at any time convenient, and all players involved could be directly transported to the quest location. All of Heart's Dream agreed to complete a quest and fight together, as only then would they have a real sense of belonging.

The 5 girls decided that the leader would not be Yun Meng Xin, but rather the only man present, Ling Tian.

"Is this really a good idea?" Ling Chen gently fidgeted as he spoke. "Yun Meng Xin is the founder and figurehead of our group, so it's only natural that she should be the leader here."

"You're the only man here, so you should take responsibility and take care of all of us. Also, you're Ling Tian – the most powerful player! If you take up as leader, then we'll all feel more secure!" Xiao Qi retorted.

"Agreed." Su'er nodded.

"The most suitable person for captain is you, not me," Yun Meng Xin said with a smile. "Although I created Heart's Dream, the person at the centre of all this should most definitely be you." No matter where he went, Ling Chen's strength, fame, actions – even his gender – made him an easily trustworthy and dependable character, a figurehead in any situation.

"Well if everyone's agreed to this idea, then I too, will give my

full support," Ling Shui Ruo said as she raised her hand, smiling.

"Alright then." Ling Chen had a look of helplessness on his face, but quickly sprang into action. He created a party between the 6 of them, opened the Quest Page, and selected the [Exterminate the Ogres] quest. "Okay then, let the first party quest for Heart's Dream... Begin! Get ready, we're heading in!"

"[DING] You have arrived in the quest area, Dark Craggy Hill."

"[DING] Please note, the allocated time for this quest is 60 minutes. You will be allowed to leave upon completion of the quest, [Exterminate the Ogres]. However, if you fail to complete the quest within the allocated time, you will be removed and sent back to Azure Dragon City."

"[DING] Please exercise caution in any encounter with an Ogre – their overall strength is significantly higher than any other creature of the same level. Please be especially careful should you encounter a Giant Ogre. Withdrawal is recommended in the event of a Giant Ogre encounter."

Upon hearing the announcements, the nature of Ling Chen's environment became clear.

The sky was grey, and the landscape before him was dark. It felt as if the sun had just set, but the night had not yet fallen. At first glance, there were a few weeds growing around, but the distribution of flora was quite sparse – the ground was mostly composed of various sized rocks with an eerily dark colour.

“Is this really the quest area? It feels more like a haunted ground meant for scaring people.” The wind brought a slight chill down Xiao Qi’s spine.

“Different parties are separated to different parts of the quest area, so you don’t have to worry about meeting other parties,” Yun Meng Xin said. “There are a particularly large number of loose rocks around. The larger ones can block a large line of sight, so everyone be careful – there could be an Ogre hiding behind any of them.”

“Okay.”

“What Meng Xin said is right, the large rocks around us are will obstruct the view and divert attention. Everyone stay on high alert, the Ogres are going to cause some trouble,” Ling Chen said. Standing ahead of the party, he looked around at his surroundings. Not a single Ogre in sight. He grabbed Ling Shui Ruo’s hand and started to move ahead. Although it was an entirely subconscious action, to him, nothing was more important than Shui Ruo’s safety. And as she also closely depended on him, she was the least afraid of the 6 of them.

After they walked ahead for about 10m, all they saw was still a wide range of irregular rocks, and all they heard was the sounds of their own footsteps and the sound of the wind.

“Why isn’t there even a single Ogre? Did they all run away to their dens or something?” Xiao Qi had her staff ready, and looked

around nervously but excitedly.

Ling Chen, who walked the furthest ahead, stopped. Shui Ruo stopped behind him. She raised her head and looked at him.
“It’s too quiet…” Ling Chen thought. It was eerily quiet. With his heightened perception, he should have been able to at least feel a monster’s presence nearby. But then, a thought came to him: if the Ogres were demons, which have a dark attribute, then they might have been able to hide under the atmosphere, which was filled with a similarly thick and dark spirit. If that were to be true, then they would be nearly impossible to detect, even if they were standing right behind him.

“Everyone be careful,” Ling Chen reminded once again.

He heard two screams behind him.In the moment he heard the screams reach his ears, Ling Chen’s body reacted like an arrow. He didn’t see anything, but immediately rushed towards the source of the sound. Two large shadows suddenly arose from 2 boulders, pouncing on Xiao Qi and Su’Er who were completely helpless. The two shadowy figures were about 2m tall, their whole bodies completely black. They had a humanoid face, but it possessed an inhuman expression. Both Xiao Qi and Su’Er were petrified at the sight of such a creature appearing from the rear. It was too late to escape now, let alone attack.

Is that… the Ogres!?

The two dark Ogres dropped down towards the heads of the two girls. Knowing that they were doomed they instinctively closed their eyes. However, instead of being crushed, they heard two

sounds, and two screams. Pa! pa!!

-1690, -3380!

With the Soaring Cloud in his left hand, and the Zephyr Blade in his right, Ling Chen's hands were fully extended, casting "Ling Tian Slash" with equal strength onto the two Ogres, which were less than a penny's distance away from the girls.

Ling Tian Slash delivered a powerful hit, knocking the two Ogres' large bodies onto the ground and leaving them screaming as their HP emptied.

Ling Chen let out a breath. After seeing those two girls shocked, he gave a smile, "Are you two alright?"

"Ah... well... yeah, we're fine." Xiao Qi brought her hands to her chest. The scare from before had significantly increased her heart rate. Had she been attacked by a smaller monster, she wouldn't have panicked as much, but the Ogres looked so terrifying that every fibre of her being quivered in fear. Her fear quickly left as Xiao Qi went to comfort her. "Thanks big brother Ling Tian."

"I'm fine as well," Su'Er nodded. As she said that, she took a sneaky glimpse of Ling Chen. Her eyes were in a trance for a moment, but then she quickly looked back down and gripped her silver bow.

When the girls screamed, Yun Meng Xin also quickly turned

around and witnessed the entire event. Her eyes flashed in amazement. Not to Ling Chen's amazing attack power, but to his terrifying reaction speed. She was closer to Xiao Qi and Su'Er than he was, yet when she turned around to their screams he was already at their side, using his hands to perform a dual wield attack as fast as lightning. In addition, Ling Chen's attack was executed with calculation and extreme precision, hitting the Ogres in the ribs where the force would generate the largest knockback. Witnessing the spectacle, Yun Meng Xin was convinced that no normal player could have ever reacted to attack with that speed and precision. Even Mu Bing Yao, who was by his side sprinting with her short blades, was a step slower... No, several steps slower.

As China's second most renowned assassin, Mu Bing Yao's agility was best categorised into a tier of its own – but was still overtaken by the speed of Ling Chen. It wasn't a surprise then that his physical capacity seemed to be unrivalled. A kind of reaction time and speed that seemed to be the products of pushing beyond the limits of human cognition. How did such a person come to exist?

Upon seeing him in action, Mu Bing Yao sheathed her dagger, her eyes flashing in disbelief of what just happened... Even if he didn't kill anything for many, many years, he would remain the same – a monster scarier than monsters!

"Be careful! There are probably more Ogres in the area, and they'll probably come out in groups based on how these 2 appeared here," Ling Chen said in a quiet, low voice. Another 2 shadowy figures rolled out from the rocks at the front, rushing towards Shui Ruo's direction.

“You looking to die?!” Ling Chen’s face clouded. Suddenly swinging his left hand, a silver light shot out – Soaring Cloud!

Wooosh!!

Pa! pa!!

-2414, – 2419

Soaring Cloud knocked both Ogres to the ground simultaneously before they could even come within three steps of Shui Ruo. Then, a roar sounded out from all directions, from behind the boulders all around. More dark figures were appearing – forty, maybe fifty of them – and ran towards the group screaming wildly.

“So… so many!!”

Each Ogre had strength that well exceeded other level 15 monsters; and when confronted by forty to fifty of them at once, it could very well scare off half a party. Then again, the task was not meant to be easy. Facing a scenario as such, a party’s best move would be to escape, and in the process of escaping, take the Ogres down one by one, which was another challenge in itself.

“Big brother, what do we do… there’s so many!” Ling Shui Ruo slipped over to Ling Chen’s side, and anxiously tugged on his clothes as he spoke.

“Hah! We’ll just kill however many come our way! Before they

even dared to scare the princess me! Now is the time to have our revenge!” Xiao Qi clenched her fists, her mouth pouting. But her eyes were focused towards Ling Chen. She truly believed that with Ling Tian around, she wouldn’t have to be afraid at all.

If the attack was comprised of just one or two Ogres, all Ling Chen would have done was organise the girls to perform the most efficient attack combos. But with such a large scale attack, none of it mattered anymore. Ling Chen raised his hand, and summoned Xiao Hui and Xi Ling, “Xi Ling, go and burn them all to the ground!”

Chapter 144 - Challenging Again

After calling out Xiao Hui, the Ogre's stats appeared in Ling Chen's mind.

[Ogre]: Type: Demon, Level: LV15, HP: 1200. The lowest level of Demons of the ancient Demon Clan. They had a demonic nature, but had very low power, and so were not recognised by the Demon Clan. After the Demon Clan was exterminated, the Ogres who had not been able to enter the core group of the Demon Clan were spared. However, because they were stigmatised by all other creatures, they could only hide in a dark, secluded place.

Passive Ability: Darkness Resistance: 30%, able to see clearly in the darkness.

Attack Skills: [Bodyslam]: Leaps towards its target, causing Physical Attack Damage as well as 20 Darkness Element Damage.

The overall strength of the Ogres was far superior to normal LV15 monsters. Although they were just regular monsters, they were comparable to 1 Star Elite Monsters. The reason why they were not 1 Star Elites was simple: if they were, this place would become a place to farm an incredible amount of SP.

Xi Ling's appearance marked the beginning of the Ogres' nightmares.

As Xi Ling's first wave of Wild Flames descended on the Ogres, the group of Ogres began to wail pitifully. Xi Ling's flames were greatly feared by Demons. Even the War Demon Beast of the Mysterious God level knelt before Xi Ling's flames, begging for mercy-these low level Ogres too were completely and utterly powerless before them.

-33396, -33396, -33396, -33396……

As the Ogres were consumed by the flames, terrifying numbers began to appear, causing Ling Chen to stare, dumbfounded. Xi Ling's current Magic Attack Damage was 6900, and caused double damage to the Ogres because of elemental weaknesses!!

Xi Ling's flames were indeed the Demons' greatest fear.

"Over thirty thousand damage… and it's an Area of Effect attack, Heavens!!"

Watching the Ogres screaming in the midst of the flames, as well as the overwhelming numbers above their heads, the girls were shocked out of their minds. Even Mu Bing Yao had a look of stupor on her face. Currently, most players were not much higher than LV10, and could at most cause damage numbers in the three digits range. However, what they were looking at right now were five digits! This sort of number was not supposed to appear at this stage of the game… what was even more unbelievable was that this sort of damage was coming from a pet!

No matter who was looking at this scene, in addition to shock, the only other things present were disbelief and unacceptance. Xi Ling was already known by everyone to be the only Heaven's End grade pet... however, was this damage really coming from a LV13 Heaven's End grade pet? Let alone Heaven's End, even if it was a LV13 Mysterious God grade pet, such damage figures should not be possible!!

"This is too shocking. If it is so powerful at LV13, then if it continues levelling up, then its strength would be unimaginable. Even the entire world's only SSS player, Eve, would be killed in less than a second by this pet." Yun Meng Xin thought to herself.

As Xi Ling continued to unleash Wild Flames, the large wave of Ogres that were rushing over all became corpses. There were a lucky few that survived, screaming and wailing as they scrambled to get away from the flames. It was as if they had seen their worst nightmare. The girls promptly forget their nervousness, as well as the ferocity of the Ogres from before. They stood transfixed, staring at the flames and red damage numbers.

At this moment, watching Xi Ling and its owner Ling Tian, all of the girls had the same thought... in terms of power, they were simply on a completely different level.

In the blink of an eye, tens of Ogres had been utterly decimated. What was left was simply a pile of black corpses and tongues of flame on the ground. The Ogres' bodies were quickly devoured by Xiao Hui, who refined them into items then transferred them into Ling Chen's bag.

[Elementary Darkness Soul Stone]: A low quality stone with a high density of Darkness Demonic energy. It can be embedded into a weapon or armour. If it is embedded into a weapon, a small amount of Darkness element damage will be added to the attack. If it is embedded onto armour, the armour will gain a small amount of Darkness element resistance.

Although Xiao Hui had only been refining items from fairly low level monsters recently, not a single one of them was useless. This caused Ling Chen to shiver with anticipation as to what sort of items Xiao Hui would refine if he devoured high level monsters.

After completing his clean up, Xiao Hui returned to Ling Chen's side. Ling Chen held Shui Ruo's hand, and said while looking forwards, "Xiao Hui, go and find the place where there are the most Ogres. Xi Ling, go with Xiao Hui and destroy an Ogres you find. Let's go, this quest shouldn't take too long."

Ling Chen knew what the girls were all thinking and did not say anything about it. No matter how one's mental fortitude was, facing such a scene, they would still be unable to remain calm seeing Xi Ling's incredible power.

The Ogres' 1200 HP was not a small figure to players of the current stage of the game. However, under Xi Ling's terrifying attack power, their HP was not even worth looking at. Let alone tens, even if hundreds of Ogres came swarming, all Xi Ling would have to do was flap her wings a few times, and would decimate them without any danger.

As such, with Xi Ling present, what was quite a challenge to other players, something that could result in the entire group dying, was an extremely easy task. In less than ten minutes, 200 Ogres had fallen under Xi Ling's flames. From the beginning to the end, although they had been slightly scared at the beginning, the five girls did not have a chance to attack. Instead, they just followed Xi Ling and walked for a while, completing the Quest.

"Ding... you have successfully killed 200 Ogres."

"Ding... the Quest [Exterminate Ogres] has been completed. Group rewards: [Rusty Armour], [Shadow Dagger]. Every player will receive: SP+50, Fame+50. You may remain in 'Dark Craggy Hill' for another 48 minutes, or you can choose to immediately depart."

"Quest complete!" Ling Chen said as he called back Xi Ling and Xiao Hui. He took out the two Copper items that they had received from the Quest... Quest rewards were directly given to the group leader, who could distribute them as he or she liked. One of the Copper equips was a Copper armour, and was limited to LV15 male Warriors. The other was a LV15 Assassin dagger.

"Meng Xin, I'll give this armour to you. When you have time, please give it to your brother... although he'll probably be able to find better armour himself sooner or later. Bing Yao, this dagger is for you. If you don't have any better items by the time you reach LV15, just use until you do." Ling Chen efficiently distributed the Copper equips.

With Xi Ling present, they had completed the Quest easily.

However, Ling Chen was sure that less than 10% of current players would be able to complete such a quest. After all, Copper grade equips were not so easy to obtain. Moreover, if they had the power, even if the SP and Fame Points could only be received after the first completion, completing the Quest three times would yield six Copper grade equips!

Seeing that the first Quest had such a difficulty level, Ling Chen began to become excited for the next Quest.

Yun Meng Xin and Mu Bing Yao accepted the armour and dagger, but did not say anything. Ling Chen suspiciously looked at them, and asked, “Are you guys alright... why do you have such strange expressions? We’ve completed the Quest, so do you guys want to go back, or stay for a while?”

Yun Meng Xin slightly stepped forwards and said, “The Quest has been completed, not to mention the speed... we just discussed, after leaving here, we’re going to do the Quest again.”

Ling Chen nodded, “Hmm, good idea. That way, you can get another two Copper equips.”

Yun Meng Xin nodded, then shook her head. She looked at Ling Chen, “Although, the most important thing is, next time we attempt this Quest, we hope that you can stand by the side and not help us.”

Ling Chen was slightly shocked, but looked thoughtfully at her as he asked, “Why is that?”

“Because big brother Ling Tian and Xi Ling are simply too strong, strong to the point that we don’t even have the chance to participate in the Quest.” Xiao QI replied, “This is a Quest, and is supposed to be hard, as well as filled with danger and excitement. It’s meant to test our abilities and strength in different areas. However, with big brother Ling Tian present, without even doing anything, we’ve completed the Quest. And yet, there was no sense of a challenge, or any sense of accomplishment… plus, a long time ago we said that big brother Ling Tian is the strongest in our group, and is the core of Heart’s Dream. Maybe one day you’ll even help our Heart’s Dream to become a legend… however, we don’t want to always rely on big brother Ling Tian, but rather work hard ourselves, so that we can help big sister Meng Xin and stand with big brother Ling Tian in supporting Heart’s Dream. So… we hope that we can once again challenge this Quest without big brother Ling Tian’s help. Even if we fail, that will still be the outcome of our own efforts, and will push us to grow and work even harder.”

“That’s how I feel as well… before, we were scared stiff by the Ogres and were quite useless. I want to use my own strength to challenge this Quest again.” Su’Er’s voice was as soft and mellow as it usually was, but also contained a hint of resolution and determination.

Ling Chen gently smiled, and looked at each of the girls. They were completely different to how daughters of big families normally acted, arrogant and pretentious. Yun Meng Xin was a strong, independent girl, and her two friends who had sacrificed much to join Heart’s Dreams were not normal girls either. Moreover, with Mu Bing Yao present, they probably wouldn’t be in any danger.

“Alright then.” Ling Chen smiled as he nodded, “Then Ruo Ruo and I will go and complete the three other Quests, you guys can complete this Quest again... I believe that even if I’m not here, you’ll still be victorious.”

“Ahhhh! No, no, no!” Hearing that Ling Chen wanted to take Ling Shui Ruo away with him, Xiao Qi hurriedly pulled Ling Shui Ruo towards her, “Ruo Ruo is ours! With such a strong Priest, even if we only have five people, we still have confidence to complete this Quest! Big brother Ling Tian, you’re strong enough to not need any protection.”

Chapter 145 - The Hidden Place In The Forest

Keeping Shui Ruo by his side was almost a natural action for Ling Chen. This was so in the real world, and in the virtual world, he was determined to continue keeping her safe. Deep in his heart, he also wanted to be able to spend more time with her. Ever since Ling Shui Ruo was diagnosed with the Isrock Disease, it had been an extremely long time since he was able to walk and have fun with her while holding her hands.

"Big brother, then I'll stay with big sister Meng Xin and them. I can't always rely on big brother." After being blocked by Xiao Qi, Ling Shui Ruo thought for a while and gave a slightly surprising answer... Indeed, after Ling Chen left, they would only have five people left, whereas this Quest was recommended for twelve people to complete together. Even if Mu Bing Yao was present, it would still be difficult for them to complete the Quest. However, with Ling Shui Ruo's Fairy Priest class and its extremely powerful healing and supporting abilities, they would not be too worried.

Five people with two Hidden Professions. This team setup was something that would shock most people out of their minds.

Although he was still quite unwilling, since Shui Ruo had made up her mind, Ling Chen could not bring himself to refuse. He smiled and said, "Alright then. Meng Xin, Bing Yao, Qi Qi, Su Su, please take care of Ruo Ruo. I don't want to see her hurt in any way... if you run into any trouble, make sure you let me know immediately."

“Uh huh, don’t worry! Ruo Ruo’s so cute, we definitely won’t let her come to any harm… moreover, it’s not us protecting Ruo Ruo, it’s Ruo Ruo protecting us.” With Ling Chen’s approval, Xiao Qi held Shui Ruo’s hand, and started laughing happily.

“Don’t worry, we will definitely take care of her. Indeed, if it was just us four without Shui Ruo, even with big sister Bing Yao, this Quest would still be incredibly difficult.” Yun Meng Xin said.

Only Mu Bing Yao knew how important Ling Chen’s seemingly gentle sentence “Please take care of Ruo Ruo. I don’t want to see her hurt in any way” was. As such, her main mission was not to kill Ogres, but rather to protect Ling Shui Ruo. With her abilities, killing 200 Ogres without being hit was not too difficult, but it would definitely take over an hour. Doing this quest solo was simply impossible. However, with Meng Xin and the others, killing Ogres would definitely take less time, but she would also have to look out for them.

“In that case, I’ll be going first. I’m going to go to the next Quest.” Ling Chen said as he took out a Teleport Scroll.

Ling Chen would be attempting the next Quest by himself, but none of the girls felt that there was anything dangerous about that. With Xi Ling’s power, no Quest would be too difficult for him.

As Ling Chen left, Ling Shui Ruo clasped together her hands, and said in her heart, “Do your best, big brother… I’ll work hard as well.”

The Azure Dragon City Square was still as noisy as ever, but was not as simple as it was before. Now, there were many large guilds advertising, with the Square filled with voices of guild members recruiting more people. The second Quest required one to advance to the Forest Region. This Quest did not directly teleport the players to the location, and instead required players to walk there by themselves. Thus, the first challenge of the Quest was to safely pass through the Plains Region in order to arrive at the Forest Region.

However, this was not a challenge to Ling Chen at all. Back when he was heading to Lonely Spirit Ridge, he had already passed through the Plains Region and the Forest Region. He had also bought all of the Teleport Scrolls to each of the small towns along the way, one of which was right next to the Forest Region. As such, he could directly teleport to the edge of the Forest Region.

After finding the Teleport Scroll, he shattered it in his hands. A white light enveloped him, and Ling Chen appeared in the town beside the Forest Region. He restocked on his potions and then directly headed towards the Forest Region. He was not too interested in the first two of the Four Mega Quests, but was quite interested in the last two... especially the one called “Moon God Ruins”.

The monsters in the Forest Region were all vicious beasts, and most were mutants. They were all above LV25, so the most players of the current stage could do was run. This Quest was completely different to the first Quest-the first Quest required players to search for and kill Ogres; this Quest required players to avoid monsters in order not to be killed. Furthermore, this Quest did not have a time limit. If a player found three Red Crystal Grass, they

would be able to complete the Quest; if they could collect nine, then it would be counted as three completions of the Quest.

Back then, when Ling Chen passed through here, he did so at his fastest speed, doing his best to avoid all monsters. As such, he did not notice any Red Crystal Grass, so after entering the Forest Region, he did not have any idea where he could find any.

Apart from the sounds of birds, there were no other noises in the Forest Region, nor were there any other players. There were not any other players who would be able to directly enter the Forest Region like him. Even if other players completed the first Quest as fast as possible and headed over immediately, it would still take them a long time to reach the Forest Region.

Red Crystal Grass... from the name, it seemed fair to infer that it would be a red plant, and have the visual effects of a crystal. Ling Chen walked around slowly, looking around in his surroundings carefully. There were countless weeds and grasses growing in the Forest Region, most of which were green or yellow. After walking for more than half an hour, Ling Chen still had not found a single red and crystal-like plant. Moreover, wild beasts often burst out of the thickets. Although it was quite time consuming for Ling Chen to personally kill these LV25+ monsters, the same could not be said for Xi Ling. If she saw one, she would destroy one; if she saw a group, she would destroy a group. As such, Ling Chen did not have any problems with monsters along the way. He did not even blink when large groups of monsters jumped out... because with Xi Ling present, the monsters were jumping to their deaths.

What was going on? Another half an hour went by, but Ling

Chen still had not found a single Red Crystal Grass. This Quest was open to all players, and every group of players had to find at least three Red Crystal Grass. Given the size of the China Region player base, there should be an abundance of Red Crystal Grass. Otherwise, how would players be able to complete this Quest? However, despite being the first player to arrive, spending so much time looking, as well as killing so many monsters, Ling Chen had yet to find a single one!

"Big brother!! We succeeded! Us five people, we completed this Quest by ourselves!!"

Ling Chen was about to continue searching when Shui Ruo's excited voice burst out through Ling Chen's communication deice. Hearing Shui Ruo's voice, Ling Chen's frustration in not being able to find the Red Crystal Grass immediately vanished. With Mu Bing Yao's strength, as long as she had enough time, even completing the Quest by herself was possible. Adding on Meng Xin with her two Gold grade weapons and Hidden Profession and Shui Ruo's Fairy Priest class, the five people clearing the Ogre extermination was not unexpected.

"Heheh! Big brother Ling Tian, we're pretty amazing right? Even if we don't have you with us, we still passed it!" This was Xiao Qi's voice. Ling Chen could almost imagine her delighted smile.

"Luckily we had Ruo Ruo. If we didn't have Ruo Ruo, we really would have been in trouble." This was Yun Meng Xin's voice.

"Five people clearing a Quest recommended for twelve people is quite impressive." Ling Chen said as he smiled, "In that case, do

you guys want to come to the Forest Region to do the second Quest?”

“Of course not! We’re going to do this Quest again! Just then it was so exciting, so thrilling, so dangerous! We’ve got to do it again!”

“Agreed!”

Ling Chen: “.....”

The five girls unanimously decided to do the Ogre Extermination Quest again. What they wanted was not the two Copper equips, but rather the thrill and feeling of accomplishment of facing a challenging Quest as a team. After talking, the girls went to the Marketplace to buy items, leaving Ling Chen to continue on his search for the Red Crystal Grass. Maybe it was because his spirits had been lifted, causing him to be more attentive, but after walking for a few steps, a red sparkle flashed into his eyes.

That was...

Ling Chen immediately walked over. This was close to the Northern border of the Forest Region. If he continued walking, he would no longer be in the Forest, but rather in the Mountain region. There were many plants growing on the mountains, and at the bottom, there was a sparkle of red.

Squatting down in front of the plant giving off a weak red glow,

Ling Chen pushed aside the other grasses and weeds around it.

> [Red Crystal Grass]: A ‘warm’ type plant, with a stem that is crystal red. It can be directly eaten. After being consumed, it can recover some life force of the consumer.

This was it!

Ling Chen immediately reached out with his hands and picked up the Red Crystal Grass, putting it into his bag. He then looked around his surroundings, seeing if there were any more around him. At this moment, Xiao Hui, who had been walking behind him the entire time, gave a small bark, then raced towards the Mountain.

Every time Xiao Hui acted weirdly, it signified that he found something special. Ling Chen immediately followed Xiao Hui. Xiao Hui stopped in front of a mass of vines on the mountain, and barked a few times at the vines. He then used his claws to claw at the vines.

Ling Chen immediately understood. He walked forwards, pulled out the Zephyr Blade and used a “Ling Tian Slash” towards the vines.

Bam!

A muffled sound reverberated as Ling Chen's Zephyr Blade was knocked out of his hands by the recoil. However, the vines of this ageless, solid tree were undamaged. Ling Chen realised that unless the weapon contained the 'destruction element', no amount of physical attack damage would be able to destroy the vines. He put away the Zephyr Blade, walked a few metres back and said in a low voice, "Xi Ling, burn these vines, but take care not to damage the surroundings."

Xi Ling complied, flying high into the air and letting out a piercing cry. As her wings began to flap, a ray of red light began to descend, and shot towards the vines Ling Chen was trying to cut like a fiery arrow.

Whoosh... the blistering heat waves rolled past Ling Chen. Although he was ten or so metres away, the scalding heat still caused him to feel some pain. The red line shot into the vines, and exploded into a ball of fiery red light. Through the dark smoke, a two-metre high cave entrance appeared on the side of the mountain. The mouth of the cave was a perfect circle. Once the entrance to the cave had been revealed, the flames began to die down. What was remarkable was that outside of the circular entrance, nothing had been damaged in the slightest... after the mouth of the cave was revealed, nothing could be seen inside the cave except darkness.

Chapter 146 - Furious Pineapple

This was the third ‘secret map’ Xiao Hui had found after his “Eye of the Holy Spirit” was unlocked.

Once most players had reached LV25, the Forest Region would become one of the main places for players to train and conduct activities. At that time, players would completely fill up the Forest Region. However... in the Northern boundary of the Forest Region, no players would expect that under all these tree vines there would be a cave entrance, nor would they have the power to open the entrance. The reason why Ling Chen was able to discover this cave was because of Xiao Hui’s ability to find hidden maps. The reason why he was able to open the entrance was because of Xi Ling’s flames which contained the ‘destruction’ power.

The items in hidden maps were far from ordinary, but hidden maps also contained many dangers. Ling Chen took out both of his weapons, stopped for a while, then entered.

“Xiao Hui, go ahead and see if there is any danger.”

Xiao Hui complied, and shot forwards. Xiao Hui’s ability to detect danger was far superior to his. Every time there was danger, it was always Xiao Hui who detected it first. Moreover, with Xiao Hui’s light body, not only was he extremely fast, but was also swift and stealthy.

Shortly after entering the cave, Xiao Hui came rushing back and stood in front of Ling Chen. He made a waving action with his

front two paws, and without giving Ling Chen to think what the action meant, he turned around and slowly began to walk forwards.

Xiao Hui's actions caused Ling Chen to hold his breath in anticipation. He followed behind Xiao Hui, stealthily and silently walking forwards... Xiao Hui's actions indicated that there was some sort of danger ahead, or that there was something ahead that should not be disturbed.

The further they went into the cave, the darker it became. Soon, it became so dark that it was almost impossible to see. After walking for tens of metres, the tunnel that they had been walking in began to curve. Xiao Hui stopped walking at the curve, and made a waving motion with his paws.

Ling Chen cautiously looked around the curve in the tunnel. With the limited vision he had, he could see a shining, golden object... no it was a creature. Its body was round like a ball, and its limbs were short and thick. Its whole body was shining with golden light, and it looked like it was digging something.

Ling Chen stared for a few seconds, his eyes widening.

That was……

Lucky Cat!!

That time Ling Chen was heading towards the Ghastly Grounds,

he had met one and taken a pan from it. A being that supposedly had many treasures hidden on its body, Lucky Cat!

There was one right there!!

The entrance to the cave had been completely sealed by the tree vines, with no room to squeeze through. How did the fat golden cat come in then? However, this was not important. Qi Yue mentioned before that normal people might only see a Lucky Cat once in their lives, and that meeting a Lucky Cat completely depended on one's luck. However, Ling Chen had just bumped into one before, and here was another one... what sort of luck was this?!

Although, the situation this time was different to the last.

Ling Chen looked around himself. This was a tunnel, with no exit except for where he had entered from. Moreover, this tunnel was only two metres wide and high. In that case, the Lucky Cat's only option was to run towards him...

Ling Chen clenched his fist. If he could get the timing right, and use 'Moon Shadow' when he got close enough... he could catch the Lucky Cat!

Thinking to there, Ling Chen began to smile. It was said that the Lucky Cat's escaping skills was nonpareil in the whole world, and no one had ever caught a Lucky Cat before. If he could finally catch one, then it would benefit him greatly.

The Lucky Cat in front of him was pretty much doing the exact same thing as the one he had seen before-digging something out of the ground with its butt in the air. Last time, it was digging out the Mysterious Red Sun Gold. Whatever it was digging out this time, being desired by the Lucky Cat, it was sure to be something good.

In order to prevent the Lucky Cat from taking whatever was there, Ling Chen took a step forwards, but did not try to hide his presence whatsoever. Sure enough, hearing his footstep, the Lucky Cat's golden fur bristled, and its fat and round body immediately turned around. Its face was as wide as a tub, and the golden bell on its neck rang loudly as it shook. Ling Chen walked forwards, putting his weapons away and slowly raised his right hand with the Lunar Scourge. If the Lucky Cat did try to escape past him, he would have to use it at the right moment.

Whenever it is approached by any living being, the Lucky Cat's first instinct was always to run. However, facing Ling Chen, it's fur was bristled. Just like the first time, it did not immediately try to get away. Whether it was because it did not want to give up whatever it had been digging, or it did not have the guts to run past ling Chen, it simply stood there glaring at Ling Chen. Ling Chen continued to press on forwards, getting closer and closer to the Lucky Cat.

"Meowmeowmeowmeow!"

Ling Chen's approach caused the Lucky Cat to emit a series of frightened sounds. There was nowhere to run behind it, but it also did not have the courage to try to slip past Ling Chen. It opened its paws, and something appeared between its two paws. With an

angry ‘meow’, it threw the item towards Ling Chen.

It turned out that the fat cat was not weak at all. Although he was still forty to fifty metres away, Ling Chen saw a yellow thing flying towards him… it was shaped like a pineapple, was the same colour as a pineapple, and had leaves similar to that of a pineapple…

Wait… that was a pineapple!!

At the same time, Xiao Hui’s ‘Eyes of the Holy Spirit’ transmitted information regarding the pineapple into Ling Chen’s mind.

[Furious Pineapple]: A demonic and explosive pineapple. Its favourite phrase is, “Don’t think that pineapples are so easy to mess with!”

Effect 1: [Pineapple Grenade]: after being thrown, when it hits the ground, it will explode, causing strong vibrations. It has a 100% chance to stun everything within 50 metres for at least 5 seconds. It does not cause any damage. After exploding the pineapple will disappear. If the Furious Pineapple is caught before it hits the ground, its explosion can be prevented.

After reading this, Ling Chen’s eyes widened…

If this pineapple hit the ground, everything within 50 metres would be stunned!!

Holy crap!

Although he had originally been planning to dodge the pineapple, he could only rush towards it, his gaze fixed on it. He reached out with his hands and snatched it out of the air, gripping it firmly with his hands...

The pineapple did not explode, allowing Ling Chen to momentarily exhale a breath of relief. It seemed that the Lucky Cat was hiding many precious things on its body-even a pineapple that it had casually tossed out had such an effect. If this pineapple was thrown out during a group battle, the effects would be terrifying.

Having caught the pineapple and kept it from exploding, Ling Chen became the owner of the pineapple. He quickly put the pineapple into his bag. Seeing that the pineapple grenade had been caught, the Lucky Cat jumped up and down in fury. The Lucky Cat once again opened its paws, and a large pineapple simultaneously appeared in each paw. It furiously launched the two pineapples towards Ling Chen.

As soon as the two pineapples left the Lucky Cat's paws, Ling Chen had already grasped the trajectory and speed at which they were flying. He immediately charged forwards, but his sights were not set on the pineapples, but rather on the Lucky Cat. As he passed through the gap between the two pineapples, his hands shot out, grabbing the two pineapples and throwing them into his bag.

As someone who could dodge even bullets at a close distance,

how could he not manage against two large pineapples.

“Meow!!!!” The Lucky Cat began to panic. Its paws blurred, as it threw out another three pineapples. This time, the fat cat learnt its lesson. It did not throw out the three pineapples simultaneously, but threw them out one after the other, at different speeds and trajectories. Ling Chen glanced at the three pineapples, and after determining that they would all reach where he was standing, decided not to move at all. His heart was full of contempt for the Lucky Cat, “This fat cat must be stupid. If it threw one down at its feet, I wouldn’t be able to intercept it no matter what.”

As he thought, he casually caught the first pineapple in his right hand, then caught the second pineapple with his left hand. As he caught the second pineapple, he deposited the first pineapple into his bag, then stretched out his right hand towards the third pineapple... however, just as his hand was about to come into contact with the third pineapple, he felt that something was not right. For some reason, this pineapple seemed much larger than the previous ones...

[Berserk Pineapple]: A berserk and violent pineapple, after it is thrown out it will explode as soon as it touches any physical matter. After exploding, it will cause vibrations, having a 100% chance to stun everything within 100 metres for at least 10 seconds. It does not cause any damage. After exploding the pineapple will disappear.

Ling Chen: “Goddamn! @#￥%……”

Boom!!!!!

The moment his finger came into contact with the Berserk Pineapple, an ear-splitting explosion rang out. The vibrations passed through Ling Chen's body, and his mind became blank. Even Xi Ling, who was hovering beside him, crashed to the ground.

Goddamnit... I've been had by this fat cat!! This was the last thought that passed through Ling Chen's mind before he temporarily lost consciousness.

After a short while, when the stun effect ended, there was only an empty cave in front of Ling Chen. The Lucky Cat was long gone, and Xi Ling rose up from the ground, giving an angry cry. Being a Heaven's End grade pet, anything that could stun Xi Ling was definitely not ordinary.

"I was too careless!" Ling Chen regretfully said as he covered his face with his hands. Lucky Cats had never been caught by any player before, so why did he expect to catch one with such ease?

However, it was not as if he had not benefitted from this. Ling Chen opened his bag and looked at the five large pineapples... these were super weapons that had 100% AOE stuns! Although the Lucky Cat got away, these five pineapples were extremely useful.

Moreover, it seemed that the Furious Pineapples had two effects. At the time, he only had time to look at the first one. He picked up

a pineapple at looked at its second effect:

> [Furious Pineapple]: .....
>
> Effect 2: [Boroboromi]: If one holds this pineapple and silently chants “Boroboromi”, the user can transform into a large pineapple. No creature of any level or grade will be able to determine your true identity and form. The effects last for 10 minutes, after which the pineapple will disappear.

Ling Chen: ⊙﹏⊙b

Alright, this second effect was pretty... interesting.

Ling Chen stuffed the pineapple back into his bag and checked his amount of gold out of habit. All of a sudden, his eyes widened, and his face slowly went from white, to red, to green, to black... a blood-curdling scream subsequently rang out, causing the entire cave and tunnel to tremble,

“My gold!!!!!!!!!!!”

Chapter 147 - Forest Of Bones (1)

Before, Ling Chen had sold large amounts of elementary strength crystals to lease a prime area in the Azure Dragon City, but still had hundreds of thousands of gold left over. Adding on the Tiger Heart Cores that he sold, he should have millions of gold.

However, the amount of gold he had was displayed as a big, round.... 0.

Ling Chen was furious. He wished that he was able to sprout a pair of wings, so that he could catch the Lucky Cat then cut it up and boil it... there was only one possibility for losing his gold. The single possibility was that the Lucky Cat had used its skill “Lucky Hand” to steal all of his money!

After being hit by the explosion from the Berserk Pineapple, he had been stunned for 10 seconds. In the space of 10 seconds, the Lucky Cat definitely had enough time to casually walk by from his side, as well as take away all of his gold.

However, in the midst of his fury, he also felt a bit relieved. If the Lucky Cat had chosen to use [True Lucky Hand] instead of [Lucky Hand], then... he would not have anything left! Not only would he have 0 gold, but all of his items would have been taken away. The description of the [True Lucky Hand] stated that it could take away everything on the target’s body, maybe that even included weapons and equipment!

Having experienced this skill, a wave of fear washed over Ling

Chen. Just having his gold stolen almost caused Ling Chen to explode from anger; if all of his items and equipment had been stolen... it would drive him crazy! Perhaps this would be even more cruel than killing a person until they were at LVo again.

Seeing his amount of gold being at ‘o’ again, Ling Chen could not help but think that if he had this move, Lucky Hand, even if he was at LVo, any person would tread carefully around him. Lucky Hand was definitely the most terrifying and cruel skill he had ever seen in his entire life.

However, this was only something he could dream about.

The Lucky Cat had been digging at something before, so it should have been some kind of ore or metal. However, when Ling Chen looked at Xiao Hui, he saw that Xiao Hui was wagging his tail with a nonchalant look on his face. This relaxed behaviour from Xiao Hui clearly indicated that there were no treasures or dangers around. Regardless, Ling Chen stubbornly walked forwards to have a look. What he saw was a large, empty hole.

Ling Chen raised his head and wordless shouted in his mind, “You damn Lucky Cat! You better pray that I don’t meet you again!”

Ling Chen cursed the Lucky Cat in his mind, then wandered around in the cave to see if there was anything left. After coming out, he walked along the mountain path, where he found a second Red Crystal Grass. Ling Chen concluded that the Red Crystal Grass primarily grew close to mountains or other rocky areas. As he followed the mountain path, countless wild monsters appeared,

but were all slain by Xi Ling. After another 10 minutes, he finally found a third Red Crystal Grass.

"Ding... you have successfully collected three 'Red Crystal Grass', and have completed [Collect Red Crystal Grass] Quest. You can now advance to the Mayor's residence to collect your reward."

"Finally done!" Having collected the third Red Crystal Grass, Ling Chen took out a Teleport Scroll and returned to Azure Dragon City. He was not too interested in the rewards of this Quest. After all, Silver equipment meant almost nothing to him who had two Celestial grade equipment, and the 80SP was simply insignificant to his SP requirements of thousands or tens of thousands of SP. The only reason he had even bothered to complete this Quest was so he could proceed on to the next two Quests.

Ling Chen arrived at the Mayor's residence and gave the three Red Crystal Grass to the guards.

"Ding... you have successfully completed the Quest [Collect Red Crystal Grass], Rewards: [Starry Robe], SP+80, Fame+80. You can attempt this Quest two more times."

[Starry Robe]: Type: Upper Garment, Grade: Silver, Equipment Requirements: Any Magic-related profession LV15 or above. A robe that was blessed by the Fairies and is embroidered with sparkling stars. Attributes: Defense+15, All Magic Resistance +5%, Spirit+7, Constitution+4, restores 1 mana every second.

The reward of the second Quest was a Silver grade Magician Robe. Because it could be used by any “Magic-related profession”, Shui Ruo would be able to use it as soon as she reached LV15. Ling Chen was just about to use his communication device to ask Shui Ruo if they had completed the Ogre Extermination Quest a second time, but decided against it. It was possible that they were completely focused at the moment, and him calling them could distract them.

“In that case, might as well keep the ball rolling and go see what the Forest of Bones is hiding.”

Ling Chen opened the Quest Page. The Forest of Bones quest directly transported the challengers to the Quest location. After looking through the details a few times, Ling Chen decided to directly go there.

The Forest of Bones was towards the South-East of the Azure Dragon City, and was very close to the sea. After being enveloped in a white light, Ling Chen appeared in the Forest of Bones. Before he was even able to have a good look at his surroundings, a dark and evil air swept towards him.

This miasma was comparable to that of the Ghastly Grounds, that he had just recently been to!

This was the entrance of the Forest of Bones. Looking around, although this was a “Forest”, Ling Chen could not see any grasses, only rocks. There was not a trace of life in this Forest of Bones. All

that could be seen was literally a forest of white bones!

Some of the bones were lying horizontal on the ground, some were upright and some were slanted. Some were intact, some were shattered. Some were even ten or so metres long… the ground was completely covered with bones as far as the eye could see.

Ling Chen was momentarily shocked. If all of these white bones were real, then how many creatures had died in order to create this horrendous Forest of Bones? Moreover, those bones that were ten or so metres long-what sort of creature did they come from? At least, they definitely were not human bones.

Ling Chen knew that he definitely was not the only player here. When he had arrived, there were already many players who were standing at the entrance. The reason was because players could be directly teleported to the site of the Quest, rather than walking to the location like in the second Quest. As such, there were many players crowded around the entrance, but with very few people brave enough to enter.

“The Skyfall Dynasty sent fifty elite twelve-man teams in, but not a single one could last more than 10 minutes!”

“Inside, there are many different types of Skeleton monsters… they’re all at least LV20! There are white bones everywhere inside, so it’s very easy to be ambushed by the skeleton monsters. This Quest definitely can’t be completed by any player of the current stage of the game.”

“Nonsense! Since this Quest appeared, it’s definitely possible to clear! Don’t forget, all you have to do is reach the heart of the forest to complete the Quest, and you don’t have to kill anything-if you see anything, just run!”

“… Holy shit!! The three elite teams from the Yan Huang Alliance have also failed!”

“……”

The entrance to the Forest of Bones was unceasingly erupting with new information. Every player could only attempt the Quest three times, and the death penalties of losing a level still applied if one died in the Quest. However, the Forest of Bones Quest was different to the first two Quests-as soon as a player completed this Quest, it would be closed to all other players. Even if another player reached the heart of the forest after the Quest was completed, they would not receive the rewards for the Quest. As such, players were all worried that the Quest would be completed by someone else first, closing the Quest off to them.

However, up until now, the mighty teams of both the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty were unable to even last for 10 minutes. Let alone the centre region, they were not even able to pass through the outer regions.

As such, the number of players who were brave enough to enter grew smaller and smaller. However, there were still many players struggling to decide whether they should enter or not.

Inside, there were many skeleton monsters, and were all LV20 or above... however, with Xi Ling present, Ling Chen could handle LV30 monsters easily, let alone LV20 monsters. He did not waste any time, and directly walked in, despite the many curious stares.

“What’s going on? Did that guy just enter by himself? Could he be attempting this Quest by himself?”

“What a joke. He’s obviously going to die.”

Ling Chen entering by himself caused many players to speak in condescension and derision. However, none of the people knew... the person who just entered was the player whose name had resounded across the whole world, Ling Tian!

“Ding... you have entered the dangerous region [Forest of Bones].”

Although it was still day time, the dark miasma in the forest made it seem extremely gloomy and oppressive. Gusts of freezing cold wind occasionally blew past. The wind smelt of rotten flesh, and carried the sound of ghostly and bloodcurdling cries.

The Forest of Bones was entirely constructed from bones; even the trees were shaped out of bones! Looking forwards, there was nothing but bones, white bones. The ground was covered so thoroughly that there was not even a hint of green or yellow on the ground, and even the sky looked white from the light reflected from all of the white bones.

The atmosphere in this place made Ling Chen feel extremely uncomfortable. He called out Xi Ling and Xiao Hui, and gripped the Soaring Cloud spear and Zephyr Blade in his hands, then slowly walked forwards.

Ling Chen knew that his capabilities were far superior to other players, and he even had Xi Ling's terrifying strength. As such, although the environment was quite horrifying, it was in the end just a challenge for normal players, so it should not be too hard for him.

What he did not expect... was that what he was about to face was the cruellest and most challenging battle he had faced since he had entered the Mystic Moon world.

Chapter 148 - Forest Of Bones (2)

Ling Chen opened the map of the Forgotten Continent. At the location of the Forest of Bones was a big white patch that was fairly large. Even if he directly ran to the heart of the forest without stopping, it would take him at least two hours. However, this Quest had a time limit of three hours. The Forest of Bones was also filled with danger, and the multitudes of bones had a disorientating effect that made it easy to get lost. Just walking to the heart of the forest was a massive challenge, let alone facing any monsters or traps.

Regarding the Forest of Bones, there was a short description:

> [Forest of Bones]: Ten thousand years ago, the catastrophe "Shura's Devastation" plunged the Forgotten Continent into chaos. The creatures in the Forgotten Continent were massacred such that only 10% survived. Blood and bones covered the ground, a truly horrible sight to behold. After the Shura was vanquished, in order to clean up the Forgotten Continent, the bones of all the creatures that had died were transported by the Moon God Clan into one place-which became the "Forest of Bones'. There are countless bones in the Forest, which release a deathly miasma, causing vegetation to be unable to grow in the area. All creatures that enter this Forest of Bones have perished, becoming part of the Forest.

Shura's Devastation... it was once again the Shura's Devastation. Ling Chen closed the map and looked forwards. The name "Shura" had long since been forgotten by mankind. After all, ten thousand

years had passed. However, the effects he left on the Forgotten Continent were still present to this date.

Being surrounded by white bones, it was difficult to navigate around without becoming lost. Ling Chen thought for a while, then said, “Xiao Hui, lead the way... directly towards the heart of this forest.”

If it was navigation skills, there was no one superior to Xiao Hui.

Without any complaint, Xiao Hui ran in front of Ling Chen and led him and Xi Ling forwards. There were no paths in the Forest of Bones; every step was taken upon countless bones. Walking on these bones was not comfortable at all. Due to Xiao Hui’s light and nimble body, he was able to move with ease, but the same could not be said for Ling Chen, who was much larger. It would be even harder for Ling Chen to move around if he was using the Cloud Stepping Mare, so he decided to go by foot. The unsteady footing from the bones caused Ling Chen to advance much slower than he normally would, and he began to worry whether he would be able to reach his destination in three hours.

After walking for about 100 metres, Xiao Hui suddenly stopped walking and gave a low bark. Ling Chen stopped as well, and looked around his surroundings, readying his weapons.

A gust of dark and evil wind blew past, accompanied by creaking and clacking sounds. At this moment, the skulls around Ling Chen began to emit an eerie green glow from their eye sockets. Subsequently, the skulls began to float upwards, followed by various other types of bones. They began to combine together to

create a complete skeleton.

Ling Chen: “!!!!”

[Skeleton Soldier]: Type: Undead, Level: 20, HP: 800. A type of skeleton that is controlled by a mysterious power. It does not have any consciousness of sentience, and will unceasingly attack living beings nearby. Its body is very durable and hard to damage.

Abilities: Very high Defence, negates 40% of Darkness Damage.

Attack Skills: [Claw]: Uses its claws to attack a single target. The attack speed is very slow, but the damage is very high.

All of a sudden, thirty or so skeletons appeared around Ling Chen, all making creaking and clacking sounds as they rushed towards him. Being suddenly surrounded by many higher-levelled skeletons, it would be difficult for a normal twelve-man team to even run. However, these skeletons were nothing to Ling Chen. He looked at the Skeleton Soldiers, then sent two “Ling Tian Bursts” towards the nearest three Skeleton Soldiers.

Bambambam!!

-829, -818, -830.

The sound of the first Ling Tian Burst hitting the skeletons sounded like it had hit solid rocks. After being hit by the first Ling Tian Burst, the three Skeleton Soldiers were instantly killed. However, the damage numbers that floated above their heads caused Ling Chen to be extremely shocked. With his current attack power, only hitting around 800 damage meant that these Skeleton Soldiers had incredibly high defence! For players still around LV10 with their significantly worse equipment, they would not be able to deal any damage to these skeletons at all!

That was Ling Chen's only opportunity to personally attack. Afterwards, fire began to rain down on the Skeleton Soldiers, creating a small sea of fire. Within the fire, terrifying damage numbers rose above the skeletons.

-31878, -31878, -31878, -31878, -31878……

The skeletons had extremely sturdy bodies, and had huge physical defence. However, apart from Darkness, they had no resistance against any magical attack, especially fire. This was because all undead creatures were incredibly weak towards fire. As such, Xi Ling's flames caused double damage to the skeletons. Ling Chen looked at the damage numbers in the 30,000s in admiration and envy. A LV13 attack pet that could deal tens of thousands of damage… this was a bit too big of a bug.

With this pet present, he as the owner would not have any problems in this Quest.

After a wave of Wild Flames, the Skeleton Soldiers had all been wiped out, and became scattered bones on the ground again. Apart from the bones, there was nothing else left, not even a single coin. As such, there were no ‘corpses’ for Xiao Hui to swallow and refine.

As the Quest had a time limit of three hours, Ling Chen did not stop and continued to walk behind Xiao Hui. On the way, many groups of Skeleton Soldiers appeared, but before they had time to even fully form, they were always destroyed by Xi Ling. These Skeleton Soldiers were designed to slow down the progress of normal players. Even if it was Ling Chen, it would cost him a lot of time to kill every wave of skeletons. However, with Xi Ling, he did not even pay attention to these skeletons.

After half an hour, a system announcement sounded in Ling Chen’s ear.

“Ding… you have entered the second district. Please proceed with care.”

There were even more bones here and the miasma was even worse. Ling Chen stopped for a moment, looked at his surroundings then began to walk forwards quickly. However, after talking a few steps, a sense of foreboding hit him, and he instinctively jumped to the side.

Slash!!

The bones underneath his feet split apart as a metre-long bone

spike erupted out of the ground.

“Chatterchatterchatter…”

Ghostly laughter sounded in Ling Chen’s ear. He looked up, and saw many floating shadows dressed in white cloaks. Their white skulls were exposed and were holding black sickles.

[Ghost Skeleton]: Type: Undead, Level: 20, HP: 700. A type of undead created from the evil air mixing with the skeleton body. It has the horrifying ability to take away a life in a split second.

Abilities: Negates 40% of Darkness Damage, attacks have a 1% chance to instantly kill the target with normal attacks.

Attack skill: [Deathly Bone Spike]: Summon bone spikes to attack the target from any direction, dealing magic damage. Being hit by the bone spike has a 2% chance of instant death.

The skeletons in the second district were also LV20 monsters, but were evidently much more terrifying and powerful than those in the first district. No matter if it was the instant death passive skill, or their floating ability, they were much harder to deal with than the Skeleton Soldiers.

“Chatter chatter chatter… heheheh….”

The Ghostly Skeletons let out their creepy laughs again, and swung their scythes towards him. In just a moment, there were more than ten scythes swinging towards him from all directions. Ling Chen jumped and somersaulted in various directions, dodging the scythes. He called out in a low voice, “Xi Ling.”

Hearing his call, Xi Ling unleased a wave of Wild Flames. Not only could the Wild Flames burn on the ground, but they could also be controlled to stay in the air. Being covered in the Wild Flames, the Ghost Skeletons in the air were all incinerated. The ten or so Ghost Skeletons dropped down from the air and became a pile of bones. Their black sickles also disappeared.

Ling Chen let out a breath of relief. Suddenly, the ghostly laughter came ringing again. Ling Chen abruptly looked up. In the air, there were another twenty or so shadows hovering in the air. The place where they had appeared was right where Xi Ling was.

Although Xi Ling had extraordinary attack power, her Defence and HP were both extremely low. If she was attacked by a large mob of monsters, she would be in grave danger. Normally, when she was destroying monsters on the ground, Ling Chen was not concerned at all. However, these Ghost Skeletons were able to fly, and had long ranged attacks...

“Xi Ling, get out of there immediately!”

By the time Ling Chen had called out towards Xi Ling, many black sickles were already raised, slicing towards Xi Ling’s body. Xi Ling turned, giving a loud cry, and unleashed a large fireball towards the Ghost Skeletons. Wild Flames had a five second

cooldown, so she had used one of her basic attacks. However, despite the fact that it was a basic attack, it still had a 5 metres AOE.

-15180, -15180, -15180。

The three Ghost Skeletons closest to Xi Ling were instantly incinerated. The remaining Ghost Skeletons seemed to fully realise just how powerful Xi Ling was, and decided to shoot bone spikes at her. Xi Ling spread her wings, then agilely dodged every bone spike. As soon as the five second cooldown for Wild Flames had passed, another wave of Wild Flames burst forth, wiping out the remaining Ghost Skeletons.

Chapter 149 - Nine Suns Rebirth

The Ghost Skeletons were much more troublesome to deal with than the normal Skeleton Soldiers. After Xi Ling destroyed the second wave of Ghost Skeletons, Ling Chen did not dare to linger any longer, and pressed forwards as fast as he could. The goal was to reach the heart of the forest; if he could avoid it, he would not engage in any battles with monsters anymore.

With Xiao Hui leading the way, Ling Chen did not lose his way at all, and followed a path straight towards the heart of the forest. Although the Ghost Skeletons could float, their speed was incredibly slow. Thus, whenever a wave of Ghost Skeletons appeared, it was not too hard for Ling Chen to shake them off. At the present time, Ling Chen had only covered about ½ of the distance to the heart of the forest. This Quest was truly a bit too cruel.

Just as Ling Chen was about to leave the second district, a mass of white smoke rose in front of Ling Chen, causing him to abruptly stop. A sense of danger came rushing at him... inside the smoke, a creature that looked similar to the Ghost Skeleton, but was ten times larger and wearing a grey cloak appeared. Ling Chen frowned, and took a step back.

“Hahahaha~~~”

The arrogant and booming laughter was extremely unpleasant. The giant skeleton turned in the smoke, and a giant black scythe appeared in its hand. It then abruptly vanished, then appeared high up in the sky.

[Soul Reaper]: Type: Undead, Level: 20, Grade: Lord, HP: 200,000. A giant skeleton containing large amounts of darkness energy. Although it cannot physically attack, it can greatly disturb a living creature's spirit, allowing it to steal the target's life in a split second.

Abilities: Can float up to 10 metres high in the air, 50% resistance to Darkness attacks. Immune to Confusion, Sleep and Instant Death statuses.

Attack skills:

[Undead Teleportation]: Soul Reaper can blink to a location on the ground or in the air. The maximum distance is 5 metres, and has a cooldown of 3 seconds before it can be used again.

[Ghostly Echo]: Unleashes a ghostly echo, causing Undead monsters within a 30 metre radius to increase their Magic Attack Power and speed by 20%. It also causes the Magic Attack Power and speed of all living creatures within 30metres to decrease by 20%. The effects last for 30 seconds. Cooldown: 60 seconds.

[Soul Curse]: Using sounds filled with darkness energy, attacks the target's soul. It causes a single target to have a 100% chance of falling into the Sleep status for at least 10 seconds. Cooldown: 10 seconds.

[Soul Reap]: Uses undead power to attempt to steal a single target's life. Does no damage, but has a 30% chance to instantly kill the target. Cooldown: 10 seconds.

Covering such a large area, how would it be possible for the Forest of Bones to not have at least a Boss of the Lord grade? The gigantic skeleton with such a domineering aura in front of him was actually a Lord grade Undead monster! Although it did not have any physical attacks, it could buff its allies and debuff its enemies within a wide area. Moreover, it had a 100% chance to cause target to fall into the Sleep status, as well as a 30% chance to cause instant death!

It had to be immediately taken care of!

By the time Ling Chen had taken out his weapons, he found that the Soul Reaper was already floating 10 metres in the air. With this sort of distance, it was very difficult for him to hit it!

"Chatterchatter... hahahah..."

Ghostly laughter sounded out from around him. In just a moment, Ghost Skeletons began to appear one by one, slowly blocking out the sky. Soon, there were more than one hundred Ghost Skeletons in the sky!

Ling Chen remained calm. If he was completely surrounded by these Ghost Skeletons, it would be very difficult for him to escape, given that there was also the Lord Boss Soul Reaper. Moreover,

these Ghost Skeletons had all appeared around Xi Ling, putting her in a very dangerous position.

"Xi Ling!! Immediately destroy them!!"

As Ling Chen shouted, Xi Ling was already unleashing a wave of Wild Flames. Within the flames, many Ghost Skeletons nearby were incinerated without even having the chance to attack. The Soul Reaper was also caught in the flames. After giving a pitiful cry, a "31,378" damage figure rose above its head.

The Soul Reaper was at once enraged, and its hatred was transferred from Ling Chen to Xi Ling. It gave a roar, and used its [Ghostly Echo] skill. Instantly, the nearby Ghost Skeletons burst into action, charging straight towards Xi Ling.

These Ghost Skeletons were all floating at least 10 metres high in the air, so Ling Chen could do nothing about them. Moreover, though he wanted to send Xi Ling back to the Pet Dimension, this was not possible, as pets could not be recalled while in battle. Thus, Ling Chen could only leave things to Xi Ling. Although she could not immediately use Wild Flames again, her normal fire attacks were still incredibly terrifying to these Ghost Skeletons. As she attacked, the number of surrounding Ghost Skeletons began to slowly diminish.

After flapping her wings twice, two fireballs caused ten or so nearby Ghost Skeletons to be burnt to crisp. Afterwards, Xi Ling gave a piercing cry and a red ray of light shot down from the sky, and precisely entered the Soul Reaper's body.

Red Laser!

-83,490!

A damage number that nearly hit the hundred thousands reduced the Soul Reaper's HP to less than half, causing it to let out another cry of rage. Under its cloak, its eyes glowed with a horrifying green light. A cluster of black fog gathered on its black scythe, and turned into a ball of darkness energy the size of a small fist. At this moment, Xi Ling's cooldown for Wild Flames had also expired. She flapped her wings, and a large wave of flames burst forth, enveloping the Soul Reader and the remaining Ghost Skeletons... at the same time, the ball of darkness energy shot towards Xi Ling.

With Xiao Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit, the information regarding the ball of darkness energy was transmitted to Ling Chen's mind. He immediately yelled, "Xi Ling, dodge it!"

The crimson flames enveloped the twenty or so Ghost Skeletons in the sky, destroying them instantly. It once again reduced by the Soul Reaper's HP by more than 30,000. However, the ball of darkness passed through the flames, heading straight towards Xi Ling. Although the speed of the ball of darkness was not fast, Xi Ling had just finished releasing the Wild Flames, and could not move momentarily. Even if she heard Ling Chen's shout, she had no way to dodge the attack, and was hit directly by the ball of darkness.

That ball of darkness was the Soul Reaper's most terrifying skill-

[Soul Reap], a move that had a 30% chance to instantly kill the target!

After Xi Ling had become a pet, she had not gained any resistance to any elements other than fire. Ling Chen could only watch as Xi Ling was hit by the Soul Reaper's skill, and prayed that Xi Ling's luck wasn't that bad. However, what resulted, was what he did not want to see the most.

After hitting Xi Ling, the ball of darkness energy exploded, and a grey fog spread over Xi Ling's body.

"Ding... your pet "Xi Ling" has been affected by the 'instant death' status, and is now dead."

Ling Chen: "!!" (No way!! After being hit once?!!)

After Xi Ling's last Wild Flames attack, a mass of bones rained down from the sky. Out of the hundred or so skeletons in the sky, only a Soul Reaper with ½ of its HP remaining was left. Xi Ling's body, covered by a dark grey light, also plummeted down from the sky. While falling, a crimson flame began to burn on her body. Within the flames, her HP, which had been reduced to '0', slowly began to rise. Her body then became a red ray of light and returned to Ling Chen's Pet Dimension.

"Ding... your pet "Xi Ling's" 'Nine Suns Rebirth' has activated, and has been revived without any penalty. However, it cannot be summoned within the next hour."

Although Xi Ling had very low Defence and HP, she had a powerful reviving skill-the Nine Suns Rebirth. This was an unbelievable skill that could allow her to revive an unlimited number of times. However, this was not as good as it sounded, as every time Xi Ling revived, she would not be able to fight for at least one hour.

Ling Chen looked up and stared at the Soul Reaper... Xi Ling, have a good rest. This is also good; I can't always be relying on you.

The rest of this Forest of Bones Quest, I'll rely on my own power!

The Soul Reaper now had around 50,000 HP. Without any allies, its power was reduced significantly, as its "Ghostly Echo" would not be as effective. Thus, the only way it could kill Ling Chen was through the instant death skill "Soul Reap". As it hovered in the air, it let out eerie cries. Once the cooldown expired, a ball of darkness, similar to the one that had killed Xi Ling, once again appeared in its hands, and shot towards Ling Chen.

Although the 'Soul Reap' attack was able to hit Xi Ling, its speed was far from enough to hit Ling Chen. Despite this, Ling Chen did not even bother looking at it, and did not dodge, allowing the ball of darkness to hit him. If it was the [Soul Curse] skill that had a 100% chance to put him in the Sleep status, he would have dodged it, but the "Soul Reap" skill was useless on him. This was because his Lunar Scourge was fitted with a Darkness Crystal (Undead Crystal) from the Ghastly Grounds, which made him immune to Darkness, Curse and Instant Death status effects. [TLN: See Chapter 98]

Bang!

The ball of darkness exploded, and the grey light scattered, but Ling Chen was not affected at all. Ling Chen did not want to waste any time, and said in a low voice, “Alright, time for me to attack.”

He turned and raised his left hand, and used Soaring Cloud’s skill, [Shooting Soaring Cloud], sending the spear flying towards the Soul Reaper. With ten metres between them, as well as the spear’s speed of a meteor and Ling Chen’s precise aim, the Soul Reaper had no chance to dodge.

“Get down here!!”

Peng! -2,415!

As expected, Soaring Cloud pierced through the Soul Reaper, causing the Soul Reaper to fall down from the sky. Ling Chen charged forwards, and before it had even reached the ground, “Soul Sacrifice” was already activated. With his attack sharply raised, Ling Chen then activated “Moon Shadow”, locking the Soul Reaper’s body in place. He caught the Soaring Cloud spear as it fell from the Soul Reaper’s mouth, and continuously used “Ling Tian Slash”.

-7035, -7421, -7022, -14062……

The Soul Reaper’s Defence was far inferior to even the normal Skeleton Soldiers. Under Ling Chen’s enhanced attacks from both

weapons, its HP had been completely cleared out before Moon Shadow's effect expired. The corpse hit the ground, and became a pile of bones.

Chapter 150 - Ancient Dragon Skeleton

"Ding... you have successfully killed the LV20 Lord Boss 'Soul Reaper', SP+200, Fame+200."

Ling Chen's most powerful skill was without a doubt "Soul Sacrifice". Once it was activated, although he was put at risk, it would allow him to quickly send powerful enemies to the abyss of death. With the effects from Soul Sacrifice, the Soul Reaper's remaining 50,000 HP was cleared out by Ling Chen within a few seconds. Following its death, its grey cloak dropped to the ground.

This was the first spoils of war Ling Chen had received since entering the Forest of Bones. Ling Chen did not walk towards it, but rather waited until the effects of Soul Sacrifice expired, then went ahead to pick it up.

[Ghost Cloak]: Type: Cloak, Grade: Silver, Equipment Requirements: Any profession above LV20. A cloak that has been infected with Darkness and Death elements, and continuously emits a dark aura. Stats: Defense+20, HP+100, Agility+10, Darkness resistance+10%.

Although Cloaks were a normal type of equipment, they were the rarest type of normal equipment. The Equipment Store did not even have any Pale White Cloaks. This was the first Cloak Ling Chen had obtained in the Mystic Moon world. Because of his 'Item Manipulation Technique', if he could level up one more time, he would be able to equip this Cloak. [TLN: See Chapter 48 if you

don’t remember what this is].

After the effects of Soul Sacrifice ended, Ling Chen’s HP returned to full HP and he looked at the remaining time, then quickly continued walking.

“Ding… you have entered the Third District, please proceed with care.”

A bit more than an hour had passed. Ling Chen took out his map, and saw that he was about halfway to the heart of the forest. He was definitely the first player in all of China to reach this point. It was obvious that the obstacles that he would face were going to be even greater. The reason why he was able to advance so quickly in the first half was because of Xi Ling. However, now that Xi Ling couldn’t battle for another hour, Ling Chen would have to depend on his own power to complete the last half of the journey.

The Third District in front of him was much sparser compared to the Second District, and there were not as many physical obstacles blocking his way. In such a dangerous location, most people would advance cautiously and carefully, in order to not be taken by surprise by any dangers. However, Ling Chen decided to rush on ahead and ignore any dangers that came his way. Even if any skeletons appeared, his speed allowed him to quickly leave them behind. After all, the goal of this Quest was to reach the heart of the forest, as opposed to kill skeletons. As such, the key factor for this third Quest was not attack power or defence abilities, but rather speed!

After entering the Third District for a minute, the first skeleton

wave came forth. Before the bones had time to assemble themselves into skeletons, Ling Chen rushed towards them, and unleashed two “Ling Tian Bursts” towards them.

Bambambambam…

Although these skeletons had strong defences, Ling Chen’s attack power was insanely strong. The skeletons that were still forming were instantly killed, clearing the way for Ling Chen. After clearing the skeletons in front of him, Ling Chen did not even pay attention to the other skeletons as he rushed on ahead. With the Wind Chaser Stone and Wind Riding Boots [TLN: Chapters 78-79], Ling Chen’s speed, even without a mount, reached 132. Normal skeletons had no hope of catching up to him. Adding on his incredibly agile body, obstacles that gave normal people headaches were nothing to him. In no time, the skeletons were left far, far behind by him.

With Xiao Hui leading the way, Ling Chen was not at all worried about getting lost.

Using the same method, Ling Chen quickly left behind four waves of Skeleton Soldiers. After passing through about half of the Third District, dots of eerie green light appeared… they were the eyes of many wolf-shaped skeletons. They seemed to be waiting for Ling Chen. All of the glowing green eyes were fixed on Ling Chen, and the wolves suddenly began to charge at him at a terrifying speed.

Ling Chen stopped walking and looked at these wolf-shaped skeletons.

[Wolf Skeleton]: Type: Undead, Level: LV20, HP: 800. A-wolf shaped skeleton controlled by a mysterious power. It has an agile body and ferocious attack power. Its sharp claws can easily cut through a living being's body.

Abilities: Very high Speed, reduces Darkness attacks by 40%.

Attack Skills: [Claw Stab]: Uses claws to stab at its target's body. It has a high chance of triggering critical and piercing attacks.

Watching the Skeleton Wolves charge towards him. Ling Chen immediately knew that their Movement Speed was far superior to his. It was completely impossible to outrun them like how he outran the Skeleton Soldiers. His only option was to wipe them out. Ling Chen took a step back and swept across them with his eyes... twenty of them in total.

Good!

Ling Chen held the Soaring Cloud spear in his left hand and Zephyr Blade in his right hand, and shot forwards towards them. Both hands released Ling Tian Bursts, resulting in two arcs of light, one white and one green, flying out, hitting the nearest seven Skeleton Wolves in the five metres in front of him.

Bambambambambambambambam...

-908, -911, -913……

The AOE of one Ling Tian Burst was already quite frightening, let alone two. As a barrage of slamming sounds sounded out, seven Skeleton Wolves were knocked flying, clearing the area around Ling Chen. Another wave of Skeleton Wolves rushed up closing in on Ling Chen. He took a step back and once again sent out two Ling Tian Bursts, killing all the Skeleton Wolves within five metres around him. Without waiting for the remaining Skeleton Wolves to come forwards, Ling Chen charged towards them, and used another two precise Ling Tian Bursts, killing the remaining Skeleton Wolves. With the Sagittarius Orbs, all of his attacks were guaranteed to hit, and if they hit, they were guaranteed to kill.

The 20 Wolf Skeletons posed no threat to Ling Chen at all, and did not even slow him down by much. In just a few seconds, these Wolf Skeletons had been destroyed like blocks of tofu. The skeletons that appeared in the Forest of Bones were indeed quite terrifying; players of the current stage of the game definitely would not be able to deal with them at all. However, even without Xi Ling, Ling Chen was still able to confidently deal with them.

The Third District was much more difficult to deal with than the other Districts. Not only were there Skeleton Soldiers, but also Wolf Skeletons, Tiger Skeletons, Bear Skeletons, which were all LV20. Despite there being more and more variations and types of skeletons, the levels of the monsters did not rise.

After half an hour, Ling Chen had finally passed through the Third District.

“Ding… you have entered the Fourth District, please proceed with care.”

“Ding… continuing forwards, you will reach the heart of the forest. The heart of the Forest of Bones contains unimaginable danger, it is recommended that you do not proceed.”

There were much less bones in the Fourth District than in previous Districts. As one walked deeper into the Forest of Bones, there were less and less bones on the ground. Ling Chen checked the Quest timer, and saw that he still had a bit more than an hour. If there were not any mishaps, he should be able to reach the heart of the forest and investigate what’s going on in there in time.

Xiao Hui was always energetically running in front of Ling Chen, guiding him. Since the beginning of the Quest, none of the skeletons attacked him because of his special ability to negate any hatred or ill will of other creatures towards himself. After walking forwards for a while in the Fourth District, Xiao Hui stopped walking. Just as Ling Chen began to wonder what was going on, he suddenly lifted his nose, and the sharp horn on his forehead began to flash with a grey light. He then quickly turned his body, and ran towards the right.

What had he discovered… Ling Chen did not hesitate, and followed after him. Xiao Hui’s horn glowing with light meant that he had found some type of treasure. This place of death, filled with skeletons, could it really be hiding some sort of treasure?

Xiao Hui ran for a long time, and stopped in front of an oddly shaped, five to six-metre-high skeleton. He wagged his tail, staring at the skeleton, and sent information regarding the skeleton to Ling Chen.

> [Ancient Dragon Skeleton]: The skeleton of a Void Dragon. After Dragons of the Dragon Clan pass away, their corpses are taken back to the Dragon Clan. However, this Void Dragon's skeleton was mixed with the millions of bones, and thus was not noticed by the Dragon Clan. After remaining in the Forest of Bones for ten thousand years and being tainted by the darkness of the forest, it has become incredibly hard. Even a small piece is enough to easily pierce through steel, and is an incomparable forging material.

This... was a Dragon's skeleton? Ling Chen looked up at the enormous skeleton, his heart full of shock.

Dragons were the apex existences in the Forgotten Continent's Beast Clan, this was something every living creature was clear about. Any part of a Dragon's Body, whether it was a Dragon's blood, whiskers, scales, bones, meat, were all priceless treasures. However, Dragons were extremely powerful, and there were barely any people who had the strength or courage to go and kill a Dragon. Moreover, the Dragon Clan would always retrieve the corpses of dead Dragons, and definitely would not allow the corpses to fall into anyone else's hands.

Yet, right in front of him, was an Ancient Dragon Skeleton!

Chapter 151 - White Bone Pendant

All of the items Xiao Hui had found were all exquisite items. Standing in front of the enormous dragon skeleton, Ling Chen reached out with his hand. The feeling of the skeleton was icy cold and incredibly rigid and tough. He tried to see if he could put the skeleton into his bag... unexpectedly, he was successful. This was probably only because it did not have an owner, and was not a fixed part of the environment. However, because it was incredibly large, it took up a whole twenty spaces in his bag.

“If I can use this dragon skeleton to make weapons and other equipment, I’m sure they’d have extraordinary stats.” Ling Chen thought. If he brought this giant skeleton to the Azure Dragon City Blacksmith, he was sure to be very shocked. However, if the Dragon Clan found out that humans were using Dragon bones to create equipment, there was the possibility of their retaliation.

Putting the Dragon skeleton away, Ling Chen once again looked at the time and said in a low voice, “Xiao Hui, let’s go.”

The Fourth District in the Forest of Bones was exceptionally quiet. After walking for half an hour, Ling Chen did not encounter a single skeleton. This caused him to be both shocked and highly alert. Because there were even less bones in the area in front of him, his speed was even faster than when travelling through the Third District. As he neared the end of the Fourth District, he took out the map, and found that he was less than three kilometres from the heart of the forest.

The Quest should be completed as soon as he reached the centre

of the forest. In that case, might as well press forwards and directly charge over there!

Ling Chen breathed in, and began to run at his top speed. After running for about a minute, his footsteps stopped. In front of him, countless sharp bones were stabbed into the ground. This vast plain of bone-thorns completely blocked the path going forwards. If one stepped onto these bones, they were sure to be impaled and lose their life. There were no gaps in these bone-thorns, except in one place-a place where two gigantic skeletons were standing.

The two giant skeletons were enormous, being at least 10 metres tall each. These two skeletons, like small scale mountains, blocked the only safe path through these bone-thorns. They each held an incredibly large and sharp bone, measuring at least five or six metres long. As Ling Chen walked nearer, their dark eye sockets lit up with a pale green glow, as if they were opening their eyes. The skeletons began to raise their hands carrying the large bones.

[Colossal Skeleton]: Type: Undead, Level: 20, Grade: Lord, HP: 23,000. Giant skeletons controlled by a mysterious power. They have no consciousness, and can only move slowly. However, they have almost indestructible bodies and terrifying destructive power. Do not allow yourself to be hit by their attacks no matter what.

Passive Abilities: Defence and Attack are very high, negates 40% of Darkness Damage.

Attack Skills: [Stomp]: Uses the skeleton’s foot to stomp on

the target. If hit, the target will receive a large amount of damage and will be stunned for 1-2 seconds. The sheer weight of the skeleton's foot also causes tremors in the ground. Though the tremors do not do damage, it is very easy for the target to lose their balance or become stunned. Before activating, this skill has a very obvious set-up action.

[Giant Bone Bombardment]: Uses the bone in its hand to strike the ground, causing large amounts of damage to everything within five metres, and has a 100% chance to stun for 2 seconds. It also has a chance for the target to be knocked back or knocked down. Before activating, this skill has a very obvious set-up action.

These two giant skeletons were twin LV20 Lord bosses!

The Colossal Skeletons only had two Attack Skills, but both dealt great damage and had large AOEs. However, the Colossal Skeletons had one significant weakness, which was that they moved very slowly. Enemies with slow movements posed little to no threat to Ling Chen, because even if they had high attack power, it would still be almost impossible to hit him. However, he needed to be wary of both skeletons attacking at once.

Boom!

The footsteps of the two Colossal Skeletons created deafening booms, causing the ground to shake. With just a few steps, they were already close to Ling Chen. Their enormous bodies released an invisible sense of pressure. They lifted their feet, and furiously

stomped towards him.

It turned out that the set-up actions were indeed very obvious. Ling Chen easily dodged the attacks, and before the skeletons could react in time, he sent two “Ling Tian Slashes” towards their feet.

Bambam!

-483, -479.

Two red damage numbers floated from the two Colossal Skeletons’ feet, causing Ling Chen to stare in disbelief.

Right now, his base Physical Attack Power was 754, and with the “Heaven Wind Technique”, even without a crit, a Ling Tian Slash should be able to deal near 2,000 damage.

However, each slash did less than 500 damage to each of the skeletons!

These two Colossal Skeletons’ defence could actually negate so much of his Physical Attack Power!! With this sort of defence power, no normal melee player under LV30 would be able to break through its defence at all!

After his initial shock, Ling Chen immediately calmed down. Physical defence and Attack were the two Colossal Skeleton’s greatest strengths. Thus, the easiest way to defeat them was to use Magic Attacks. If Xi Ling was here, all she would have to do would

be to flap her wings, and they'd be instantly destroyed.

"This little bit of defence is nothing... I won't waste a single second on you guys!!"

Ling Chen didn't want to waste any time on these monsters. There were only three hours to complete the Quest in total, and a bit more than two hours had already passed. While the time he had left grew smaller and smaller, there were more and more variables appearing. He continuously dodged the two Colossal Skeletons' attacks, and stood in between the two skeletons. Light suddenly burst forth from his body.

"Soul Sacrifice!"

After activating Soul Sacrifice, Ling Chen's base Physical Attack Power reached 3,000, and simultaneously, a red light burst forth on his body.

"Battle Soul Possession!"

"Die... Four Corners Star Formation!!"

With the Zephyr Blade in his left hand, he released the battle energy, which turned into a four cornered formation, covering the two Colossal Skeletons. In the next moment, the battle energy exploded.

Boom~~~

The two Colossal Skeletons were knocked down from the tremors of the Four Corners Star Formation, and a red damage number and a yellow damage number respectively floated above their heads:

-23189, -45998

At the same time as they fell down, the HP of the two Colossal Skeletons immediately emptied. Although they had extremely strong defence, with a forbidden technique like Soul Sacrifice, ripping apart the defence was extremely easy. At his peak condition with all his buffs, he insta-killed these two Colossal Skeletons. Even without Xi Ling, these two LV20 Lord Bosses proved no threat to him whatsoever.

“Ding... you have successfully killed two LV20 Lord Bosses “Colossal Skeleton”, SP+400, Fame Points+400.”

“Ding... your pet “Crimson Spirit” has levelled up, and is now LV14...”

To the current Lin Chen, LV20 Lord Bosses were no challenge at all anymore. Appearing before him was the same as giving him free EXP and SP. Although Xi Ling could not temporarily battle, she could still receive EXP. Killing these two Lord Bosses allowed her to level up to LV14, only 2 levels under Ling Chen.

Adding on the free 400 SP from the two Colossal Skeletons, Ling Chen now had 2080 SP. This was enough to level up Ling Tian Slash and Ling Tian Burst many times, but was still quite far from

being able to level up what he truly wanted, Heaven Wind Technique and Item Manipulation Technique. After thinking for a while, he decided to save the SP. Heaven Wind Technique, Item Manipulation Technique and War God Technique, these were all incredibly strong skills. However, the amount of SP required to level them up... was enormous. They were only inferior to the forbidden skills Soul Sacrifice and Battle Soul Possession. Soul Sacrifice needed an astounding 50,000 SP to level up, so Ling Chen could only rely on Xiao Hui's "Holy Spirit's Gift" to increase its level.

Ling Chen had never received any gold from these skeletons. However, as the two Colossal Skeletons died, they unexpectedly dropped two pieces of equipment.

[White Bone Chain]: Type: Lunar Chain, Grade: Silver: Equipment Requirements: None. A lunar chain made from giant's bones. It can equip any grade of energy stones, but cannot equip energy orbs. Maximum number of energy stones: 3.

[White Bone Pendant]: Type: Necklace, Grade: Silver, Equipment Requirements: None. A necklace made out of giant's bones, which will occasionally release darkness aura. Stats: Critical chance+7%.

One was a Silver Lunar Chain, and the other was a pure crit chance increase necklace!

High grade Lunar Chains were incredibly rare, and a Silver Lunar Chain would be worth almost an entire city. It was far more valuable than any other Silver equipment. However, this White Bone Pendant was even more shocking. Although it only had one stat, but it increased one's crit chance by a whole 7%, and had no Equipment Requirements. Although this necklace was only a Silver grade equipment, even a LV100 player would desire after it.

This White Bone Pendant was also the first necklace type equipment Ling Chen had found. After all, necklace type equipment were incredibly rare. He immediately put on the necklace, and opened up his Stats Page. With the necklace, his crit chance was now a shocking 30%! This meant that every three or four strikes, there would usually be at least one crit!

Chapter 152 - Skeleton Army

Stepping over the two Colossal Skeletons' bodies, and walking on the safe path through the area of bone-thorns, Ling Chen walked out of the Fourth District. After exiting the Fourth District, small mountains of fragmented bones appeared before Ling Chen.

"Ding... you have entered the danger zone 'Ten Thousand Bones Ruins'".

Ten Thousand Bones Ruins? Ling Chen stopped walking, and looked at the ruins around him made of countless shattered bones. The wind howled in his ears, like the voice of a demon. A strong rotting smell filled the area, causing one to feel nauseous. Luckily, Ling Chen had long since been accustomed to this sort of smell. Although there was nothing around him, he did not believe this place to just be some sort of simple ruins.

Opening the map, Ling Chen saw that he was very, very close to the heart of the Forest of Bones, being only 2 kilometres away. This sparse 'Ten Thousand Bones Ruins' was evidently the last obstacle. There was definitely some sort of danger hidden here... this was revealed through Xiao Hui's actions-Xiao Hui, who had been calmly leading the way, suddenly stopped moving.

More than two hours had passed since he entered the Forest of Bones, and there was very little time left. Even if there was danger ahead, he still needed to advance as quickly as possible.

"Xiao Hui, let's go!"

Gripping Soaring Cloud and the Zephyr Blade in his hands, Ling Chen rushed forwards. He raised his awareness, and soon he had passed the first ruins. At this time, a terrifying scene began to unfold...

In just a moment, the originally peaceful area suddenly began to rumble with movement, and the countless bones on the ground began to rise and dance in the air, and assembled into different types of skeletons... these included Skeleton Soldiers, Skeleton Wolves, Ghost Skeletons, Skeleton Archers... however, the formation, as well as number of skeletons was greatly superior to those he had seen before.

As the fragmented bones assembled themselves, waves and waves of skeletons appeared... tens... hundreds... thousands... soon, Ling Chen could not see the ground anymore, only a gigantic army of skeletons that stretched as far as his eyes could see.

Ling Chen took a step back, and gulped.

These skeletons were all normal skeletons without grades, and it was incredibly easy for Ling Chen to defeat tens, or even hundreds. However, there were probably tens of thousands of skeletons in this skeleton army in front of him. It was rumoured that it was possible for an army of ants to take down an elephant... this was even more so for the skeletons, which were far superior to 'ants'. Although his physical attack power was quite high, his HP was not that much higher than an ordinary player's... if he was hit by the attacks of even 1% of this army, he would definitely be killed.

Was this some kind of joke? How could a normal player defeat an army of skeletons like this? Let alone LV10-LV15 players, even LV30 or LV40 players would not be able to survive against such a massive army. The masses of skeletons began to move towards him like a flood.

Ling Chen's body felt numb... he had worked so hard to reach this point, so he was very unwilling to turn and run away. Looking at the fast approaching Skeleton Wolves, Ling Chen's beating heart gradually calmed down...this was definitely the final obstacle before the heart of the forest. There was only one way to pass through this obstacle!

Ling Chen deeply breathed, and raised Soaring Cloud and the Zephyr Blade. The only way was to face this army head on, and rush through it while making a path for himself. However, there were two things necessary in order to accomplish this... the first was to be faster than the skeletons, otherwise he'd be overwhelmed by skeletons chasing him from the back. The second was that every time, he needed to instantly kill the skeletons in front of him, otherwise he would be trapped within the army of skeletons.

Out of these skeletons, the only type that was faster than him, and only by a slight amount, were the Skeleton Wolves. However, under these circumstances, he simply had no other choices.

Charge!!

Ling Chen's eyes flashed with a cold light as he rushed forwards towards the Skeleton Wolves. He slashed with his right hand,

releasing an arc of energy that covered a 5 metre area.

Bambambambam...

There were simply too many Skeleton Wolves clustered together. With this one strike, Ling Chen had instantly killed seven Skeleton Wolves. He continued to rush forwards, the Soaring Cloud in his right hand releasing another Ling Tian Burst and killing another wave of Skeleton Wolves. By this time, Ling Chen had already charged into the skeleton army. He gritted his teeth, and used his fastest speed to rush forwards, his hands furiously sending out Ling Tian Bursts, with Xiao Hui running behind him. Usually, when he fought monsters, he would usually use both weapons simultaneously, so as to strike the largest area possible. However, right now, he alternately attacked with his two hands-left, right, left right. His Movement Speed was 120, and if he attacked with both hands simultaneously, he would be able to attack approximately every 0.8 seconds, but if he attacked with both hands alternately, he would be able to release a Ling Tian Burst every 0.5 seconds. Under such ruthless attacks, the skeletons were not able to attack him at all.

Moreover, because there were so many skeletons clustered together, the Skeleton Soldiers that he had left behind not only could not catch up to him, but blocked off the Skeleton Wolves from catching up to him, reducing Ling Chen's worries. He was extremely focused, his hands attacking alternately in a steady rhythm. As he steadily advanced, he would occasionally drink a potion to recover some MP. As Ling Tian Burst did not use too much Mana, and he had an upper limit of 470MP, as well as large amounts of Mana Potions, he was not worried in the slightest about running out of Mana.

Fifty metres... Eighty metres... One hundred metres...

Like an incomparably sharp knife, Ling Chen had stabbed into the skeleton army, and not a single skeleton had been able to hit him. If he only had one weapon, he definitely would not be able to accomplish such a feat.

In just moments, Ling Chen had charged into the centre of the skeleton army. The number of skeletons that had died under his hands were far too many to be counted. The enormous skeleton army in front of Ling Chen was almost like a useless decoration.

Alright, if he continued on like this, he would be able to escape from this skeleton army very soon... Ling Chen's hands and feet did not stop moving. He knew that if he stopped for even half a second, he would be finished. In the centre of the skeleton army, let alone pass through, it would be difficult for him to even survive.

Bambambambam...

Bam!!

What Ling Chen most dreaded had become a reality. In front of Ling Chen, there was actually a single skeleton that had not immediately died. Ling Chen could not react in time, and smashed into the skeleton that had not been immediately killed. At the same time, the skeleton's information was transmitted into his mind...

[Skeleton Captain]: Type: Undead, Level: LV20, Grade: One Star Elite, HP: 1,600...

Ling Chen: “Holy!#$%...”

Normally, Ling Chen would not even pay attention to One Star Elites. However, this One Star Elite with its 1,600 HP had not been instantly killed. Running into the skeleton had completely stopped Ling Chen’s momentum, putting him into a very dangerous position.

God freaking dammit...

“Four Corners Star Formation!!”

Raising the Zephyr Blade into the air, Ling Chen created a Four Corners Star Formation, which exploded and destroyed all the skeletons within 10 metres around him. However, this didn’t mean that he was safe from the danger. Because he had stopped, the Ghost Skeletons that he had shaken off were clustered in the air over his head, shooting deadly spikes towards him, which fell like rain. In front of him, hundreds of Skeleton Archers drew their bows, their arrows all pointing towards him. The hundreds of arrows simultaneously flew towards him. If he had not stopped, he would have shaken off the Ghost Skeletons before they could even attack, and would have been able to annihilate the Skeleton Archers before they could even draw their bows.

However, with hundreds of spikes falling down from above, and hundreds of arrows flying towards him from the front, he did not have anywhere to run. In the blink of an eye, the space he had cleared with the Four Corners Star Formation had been completely filled with skeletons again. Ling Chen had no choice but to raise his right hand, and a black light from the Lunar Scourge's Moon Shadow enveloped the surrounding 16 metres, freezing everything around him in place... including the hundreds of spikes and arrows flying towards him.

Chapter 153 - Burning Fire Array

Within Moon Shadow's AOE, all creatures had been locked in place. It was as if everything had been transported into a frozen world, where only Ling Chen could move. Outside the 16 metres radius, any skeletons, bone spikes or arrows that moved into contact with the edge of Moon Shadow's AOE became frozen. Ling Chen breathed deeply, then quickly moved past the bone spikes and arrows, took out his two weapons and destroyed all of the nearby skeletons. However, Moon Shadow's effects only lasted for 5 seconds. After 5 seconds, he would once again be surrounded by skeletons.

All he could do was to go all out... there was no way to retreat, all he could do was pray for a miracle!

Ling Chen gripped his two weapons tightly. Surrounded by this skeleton army, there was barely any hope for him.

3 seconds... 2 seconds... 1 second... when Moon Shadow's effects only had 1 second remaining, he was about to walk out, when he suddenly noticed some movement in the Pet Dimension. He abruptly stopped, and cried out in joy...

"Xi Ling!!"

Since Xi Ling's Nine Suns Rebirth activated, about one hour had passed. Ling Chen was finally able to call out Xi Ling again.

All of the pressure and tension he was feeling immediately

disappeared. His body relaxed, and as the effects of Moon Shadow ended, he yelled, “Xi Ling!”

A shrill cry rang out, and a crimson ball of fire shot out from Ling Chen’s body into the sky. The bone spikes and arrows that had been frozen in place all shot towards where Ling Chen was originally. However, 5 seconds was greatly sufficient for Ling Chen to move to a safe place. Although bone spikes and arrows were all clustered together, not a single one hit Ling Chen. On the other hand, the moment Xi Ling had appeared was the moment the skeletons’ nightmares began.

Whoosh...

The originally cold air suddenly became warm. A crimson wave of fire descended from the sky, reducing the Ghost Skeletons in the air to ashes. The 30 metres around Ling Chen was also completely engulfed in flames. All skeletons caught by the flames were instantly incinerated. The strength of the terrifying flames was enough to kill them ten times over.

Around Ling Chen, the air was filled with the smell of burning bones. Ling Chen looked around him at the army of skeletons. He looked at the Skeleton Archers that were once again drawing their bones, and went to destroy them, while yelling, “Xi Ling, Burning Fire Array!!”

Xi Ling complied, and gave a long cry. Her crimson body ignited with bright red flames, and began to fly in a ten or so metre circle. She began to fly faster and faster... as she flew, rootless fire began to rain down from her body, and collected into the circle she was

flying in. In just moments, a red fireball tens of metres long had been formed in the sky. It then burst apart, and scattered in all directions, raining down on everything within 200 metres.

The air became searing hot, and the pale white sky became dyed with red. The scattering rootless fire were like exploding bombs, which burst into pillars of fire. In just moments, a gigantic sea of flame had been created with Xi Ling in the centre, annihilating countless skeletons.

Within the fire, which was as terrifying as hell itself, the skeletons could not resist or retaliate at all, and were utterly destroyed. The skeletons that were far away and lucky enough to survive did not choose to wisely run away... they did not have any consciousness, and did not know what fear was. They continued to march towards Ling Chen, and walked straight into the Burning Fire Array, instantly dying.

Was this the power of the legendary forbidden skills... Ling Chen, who was also within the flames naturally did not take any damage, but just seeing the scene around him caused him to be deeply shaken. The Burning Fire Array covered an area of hundreds of metres. One could only imagine that if this was used in a Guild war with many players clustered together-it would be absolutely devastating.

“Ding... you have successfully killed 9 LV20 One Star Elite Skeleton Captains, SP+180, Fame Points+180.”

“Ding... you have successfully killed 4 Two Star Elite Skeleton Commanders, SP+160, Fame Points+160.”

“Ding… you have successfully killed 7 LV20 One Star Elite Giant Skeleton Wolves…”

“Ding… you have successfully killed 3 LV20 Three Star Elite…”

“Ding…”

……

……

“Ding… you have levelled up, now LV17, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5.”

“Ding… your pet “Holy Spirit Beast” has levelled up, now LV17, HP+200, MP+5, Defence+20.”

“Ding… your pet “Crimson Spirit” has levelled up, now LV15, HP+40, MP+1000, Physical Attack Power+10, Magic Attack Power+300.”

The Burning Fire Array exterminated countless skeletons, including masses of One Star, Two Star and Three Star Elites. Although the Burning Fire Array didn’t last for long, the aftermath of system announcements unceasingly rang in Ling Chen’s ears. At the same time, having destroyed so many LV20 monsters, Ling Chen’s LV16 EXP bar was completely full, and levelled up to LV17

with Xiao Hui. Xi Ling had levelled up to LV16, and only needed another 20% to rise to LV16.

As the system announcements stopped ringing out, Ling Chen opened up his Stats Page... his SP had grown to 4120 points! He had gained 2000SP from the skeleton army.

This was just ridiculous... Ling Chen was so excited that he began to grin uncontrollably. Before, this gigantic skeleton army had caused him to become numb with despair. However, seeing such a huge harvest, he wished that there were seven or eight more of these skeleton armies. From the amount of SP he received, he knew that the number of Elites in that army was extremely high.

With 4000 SP, he could raise the level of any skill except for Soul Sacrifice. However, Ling Chen resisted the urge to use them immediately, and instead closed his Stats Page and looked forwards. The Burning Fire Array was quickly disappearing, and the temperature began to fall. Within seconds, only embers and broken bones remained. There was not a single skeleton monster in sight.

Although he somewhat expected this, he still took in a breath of cold air. This skeleton army that had almost forced him into despair was momentarily wiped out by Xi Ling. Even Xiao Hui looked up at Xi Ling, his bright eyes full of admiration and respect.

“Xi Ling, that was simply incredible.” Ling Chen exclaimed. At the same time, he decided that apart from the girls in Heart’s Dream, absolutely no one could be allowed to know of Xi Ling’s power. Otherwise, things may get problematic for him and Xi Ling.

Also, Xi Ling was their trump card-if they were forced into a corner one day, Xi Ling would be able to turn the tables for them.

Being praised by Ling Chen, Xi Ling happily flapped her wings, then landed on his shoulder, and nuzzled against him.

Ling Chen smiled. He definitely would not forget the beautiful girl in red who had called him “big brother” and sacrificed herself for him on that day in the Lonely Spirit Ridge.

The skeleton army was quite obviously the final obstacle before the heart of the forest, and Ling Chen definitely could not think of anything that could be more terrifying than the massive army. He was now only about 1 kilometre away from the goal, and could almost complete the Quest.

“Xi Ling, Xiao Hui, let’s go!”

What doesn’t kill you makes you stronger, eh? Not only was this skeleton army not able to stop Ling Chen, but also gave him 2000 SP and 2000 Fame Points, and even helped him level up. Ling Chen pressed forwards, and quickly left the Ten Thousand Bones Ruins.

“Ding... you have reached the heart of the Forest of Bones.”

After passing through the Ten Thousand Bones Ruins, Ling Chen had finally arrived at the heart of the Forest of Bones. Standing on the ground covered in bones, Ling Chen’s expression changed as he looked forwards.

What he saw was completely out of his expectations. At the heart of the Forest of Bones was not some sort of super skeleton, nor was it a mountain of bones... rather, in front of his eyes... was a huge castle!

That's right, there was a huge castle in the middle of this Forest of Bones. It wasn't made of bricks and stone, but rather completely composed of white bones!

This castle was tens of metres high. The bones were all connected in some mysterious way, such that there was not a single gap in the walls of the castle. Looking at the castle made up of countless bones, one could not help but shudder.

What was up with this castle? Weren't there only skeletons here? Could it be that skeletons could build castles?

Ling Chen raised his left hand and turned on the camera feature on his bracelet, and took a photo of this castle. At the same time, a system announcement sounded in his years.

"Ding... you have reached the heart of the Forest of Bones, and have investigated the heart of the forest, completing the Quest [Forest of Bones]."

"Ding... you have successfully completed the Quest [Forest of Bones], and receive: [Wind Chaser Bandanna], [Purple Crystal Amour (Lower)], [Intermediate HP Crystal], SP+150, Fame Points+150, Luck+1, Comprehension+1."

Chapter 154 - Skeleton Castle

The system announcement caused Ling Chen to momentarily pause. The objective of the Forest of Bones Quest was to reach the heart of the forest, and then investigate what it was hiding. The Quest then required one to give the information to the Chief of Bodyguards, after which the Quest would be completed. However, the Quest had been given the completion status, and had even given him the rewards before he even left the forest. Could it be that reporting to the Chief of Bodyguards was optional?

Simultaneously, at the entrance of the Forest of Bones, the silhouettes of three people appeared. These three people did not just arrive, but rather were sent out from the Forest of Bones. Seeing these exiting players, the crowd gathered around the entrance were flabbergasted. They revealed expressions of shock, and unconsciously stepped back. Not a single person was brave enough to speak.

This was because every single person out of these three people were legendary figures in both China and the whole world. The person in the middle was the most powerful person in China in the virtual world, The Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance, Long Yun Tian. At his left was a person completely wrapped in a black cloak, even their eyes and hair. This sort of outfit would usually be laughed at by other people, and yet not a single person dared to laugh, or even make a sound. This was because there was only one legendary person who would walk at Long Tian Yun's right hand side, and use such an outfit...

Sword Emperor-Feng Xie Yu!

On Long Yun Tian's left hand side was a young male, who looked like he was not even 20 years old. His clothes were all flame red, and even his Magic Staff was crimson red, and would occasionally flash with a fiery light. His skin was white, but not pale, and he looked peerlessly handsome. His mouth held a relaxed smile, and his expression was calm and nonchalant. At a glance, it seemed like he was a carefree boy with little experience in the real world. However, almost every person in the virtual world knew of this person's name... he had an appearance that made him look even more attractive than some girls, and was thirty years of age in actuality. He had an elegant atmosphere, yet had a fiery arrogance and temper.

He was publicly recognised as the number 1 Mage in all of China... the President of the Yan Huang Alliance's Magic Alliance, and ranked number 4 on the Player Level Rankings- "Flame Emperor", Cang Yan!

The Yan Huang Alliance's Alliance Master and the two strongest figures in the Yan Huang Alliance had simultaneously appeared here. This was a piece of shocking information. Their reason for coming here was obvious, which was to be the first to complete the Quest, so as to avoid it being completed by other players first. The rewards of the Quest were simply too tempting, and even Long Tian Yun had personally come out on this Quest along with the Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor.

The result was obvious-they had also failed. Three hours ago, a twelve-man team had entered. Now, after three hours, the Quest's time limit had expired, and three people had been sent out.

Although they had not completed the Quest, but being able to stay in the Forest of Bones for three hours without dying was already an excellent result. It should be noted that before, many teams had confidently entered, but most had been wiped out within 10 minutes.

As expected from the Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor, being able to stay in the Forest of Bones for three hours without dying. If this Quest did not have a time limit, maybe they really would have been able to finish it.

Long Tian Yun did not get angry at all over not being able to complete the Quest. He looked behind him towards the Forest of Bones, and calmly said, “In three hours, with your combined power, we were able to get past the Second District and reach the halfway mark. Looks like the rumours were true, that this Quest is not possible to complete at the current stage of the game. Let’s come back after we’re all LV20. If you two aren’t able to complete this Quest, then it’s impossible for anyone to complete it, so we don’t have to worry about this Quest being stolen by anyone else. Let’s go back now-we only have three chances, so let’s try again after LV20.”

The Sword Emperor gave no reply, and the Flame Emperor slightly nodded his head, agreeing with what Long Tian Yun had just said. Just as they were about to leave, a system announcement suddenly rang out.
“Ding… China Region Announcement. The Mega Quest “Forest of Bones” has been completed. The successful player has already received the rewards, and the Quest is now closed. The Forest of Bones area has now been opened, any player can now freely enter.”

“Ding… China Region Announcement…”

“Ding… China Region Announcement…”

Long Tian Yun’s body and expression stiffened. He could not make a single sound, as if something was stuck in his throat.

He suddenly turned, and stared towards the Forest of Bones, his expression becoming extremely unsightly. Just a few seconds ago, he had confidently said that no one would be able to complete this Quest at this stage of the game. However, this announcement had struck him like a bolt of thunder.

There was actually someone who had completed this Quest!!

The Forest of Bones Quest could be attempted by every player three times, but could only be completed once. As soon as a player or group of players completed the Quest, it would be forever closed. Right now, only about half a day had passed since the Four Mega Quests were announced. When the announcement sounded out, countless players stopped what they were doing and held a dumbfounded look on their faces. This was especially so for the players who had rushed to complete the first two Quests, but had not even started the third Quest yet-they could hardly believe their ears. Even the Yan Huang Alliance’s elite team with the Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor was not able to complete the Quest.

The one who could not accept this the most was of course Long Tian Yun… he had just failed, and had confidently said that no one

would be able to complete the Quest anytime soon. Immediately after, someone had completed the Quest. With his position as the Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance, and flanked by the Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor, two of the strongest players, this news was not simply just a shock to him... rather, it was almost as if someone had slapped him across the face.

"Immediately investigate which team was it that completed the Quest!" Long Tian Yun barked as he shattered his teleport scroll and disappeared.

Heart of the Forest of Bones……

"Ding... you have successfully completed the three Mega Quests [Exterminate the Ogres], [Collect Red Crystal Grass] and [Forest of Bones], you can now challenge the Ultimate Quest, [Moon God Ruins].

Ling Chen naturally did not know of the huge commotion caused by the system announcement that the Forest of Bones Quest had been completed. The Forest of Bones was even more challenging than he had expected. If it wasn't for Xiao Hui's navigation and Xi Ling's destructive attacks, he too would not have been able to complete this Quest. However, because the Quest was so challenging, the rewards were very generous as well. Not only did he receive 150 SP and Fame Points, but also an extra point to both his Luck and Comprehension... as well as two Gold grade equipment! This sort of incredible rewards was enough for countless players to understand that this was an almost impossible Quest.

However, right now, with the Quest already completed, it became impossible for them to ever complete it.

Ling Chen took out the two Gold equipment and looked at their stats.

[Wind Chaser Bandanna]: Type: Headgear, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Any profession above LV20, with Luck above 5. A mysterious bandanna filled with wind element, wearing it allows one's body to become incredibly light. Stats: Defence+10, Spirit+10, Agility+10, Movement Speed+10, Wind Resistance+5%.

[Purple Crystal Amour (Lower)]: Type: Lower Armour, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Any melee profession above LV20. Leg bracers made of purple crystal. They are incredibly sturdy, and has strong Physical Defence. Stats: Defence+50, Strength+10, Constitution+10, Physical Damage to legs -20%, +20% resistance to Defence debuffs.

The stats of the two Gold grade equipment were not ordinary at all. Although the Purple Crystal Armour was only a lower armour, its defence was extremely high, almost comparable to that of a full body armour. As for the Wind Chaser Bandanna... Ling Chen had never seen a piece of headgear that could increase Movement Speed, and by a whole ten points!! This was more valuable to him than even 100 attack damage.

Ling Chen had already reached LV17, and with the Item Manipulation Technique, he could equip LV20 equipment. As such, he took out the Ghost Cloak he had found from before, and equipped all three pieces of equipment. With a cloak, as well as two Gold grade equipment, his stats once again greatly increased.

Apart from the two Gold grade equipment, he had also received an Intermediate Energy Crystal.

> [Intermediate HP Crystal]: Type: Energy Crystal, Grade: Intermediate, Attribute: Fire, Effect: HP+9%.

Equipping the Intermediate HP Crystal onto the Lunar Scourge, Ling Chen's HP was now over 1,000. Although it still could not compare to the HP of Shield Bearers, it was still greatly superior to other melee classes.

The Forest of Bones Quest had now been completed, and Ling Chen had received his rewards. A wise person who could control their greed would immediately depart after receiving their rewards. However, 99% of players' curiosity would get the better of them, tempting them to see what was inside this skeleton castle.
Of course, Ling Chen was not an exception.

In a forest with bones scattered all over the ground, it was highly unusual having a massive castle in the centre. There was definitely some sort of shocking secret in the castle. As such, anyone who saw this castle would want to go in to investigate.

This was also part of the reason why no one who had entered the Forest of Bones before had ever left alive. All of the monsters were at least LV20, and though there were many experts in the Azure Dragon City, anyone who had entered the heart of the forest had never left alive. This was why the Forest of Bones became one of the three forbidden areas in the Forbidden Continent.

Having walked all the way to the centre, Ling Chen was very clear about this. He gazed at the skeleton castle for a long time, and nevertheless decided to walk forwards towards it...

Chapter 155 - The Eerie Castle

Looking at his 4,270SP, Ling Chen thought for a while, then used 2,400SP to level up Heaven Wind Technique. A ray of light flashed, and the Heaven Wind Technique was levelled up to LV4.

[Heaven Wind Technique]: Current Level: LV4, Highest Level: LV10. SP to Upgrade to LV5: 3,600. Ancient battle technique, after practice it can greatly increase the ability to control any weapon. Effect: When using any weapon, damage dealt is increased by 20%. Effect does not stack with other weapon proficiency skills.

Ling Chen decided to save the remaining 1,870 SP, and walked towards the skeleton castle.

It was incredibly silent here. Apart from the sound of his footsteps and the patter of Xiao Hui's little feet, Ling Chen could not hear any other sounds, not even the whisper of the wind. Surrounded by countless bones, this was like a district of death, with its deathly silence.

Ling Chen walked to the castle's only entrance. There was a massive door, made of white bones of course, which was many metres wide and many metres tall. The door looked incredibly ghostly, and looked as if it could be opened with the gentlest touch. Ling Chen stopped in front of the giant door, and Xiao Hui's fur bristled, his mouth emitting a low growl. He then quickly ran in front of Ling Chen, warning him not to go inside.

Obviously, Xiao Hui felt that there was a great danger within this skeleton castle. His reaction caused Ling Chen to frown... Xiao Hui's reactions changed according to the level of danger. He had only seen Xiao Hui's fur bristle and stand up completely only once before... that was at Lonely Spirit Ridge, when they had met the terrifying War Demon Beast.

Xiao Hui's vocal warning also came in the form of a low growl... it seemed that he didn't want to make any loud noises so as to not alert the terrifying enemy inside of their presence.

In order to create this massive castle, countless bones had been used, resulting in a thick smell of death. This sort of castle belonged in a place like hell. What sort of person... or creature, or undead, created this castle?? Could it be that with the countless bones here, through the passage of time, they had somehow been merged together into a sentient super undead?

The only things able to survive in this sort of environment were perhaps the undead. How could a living creature be willing to stay in such a terrifying and deathly place?

Standing in front of the great doors, Ling Chen did not move for a long time. He intently listened for any noise within the castle... after ten minutes, he still did not hear anything. It was still as silent as before.
Could it be empty inside?

No way... Xiao Hui's reaction, as well as his own sense of danger

told him that there definitely was some sort of terrifying being inside the castle.

In that case, should he go in or not?

The multitudes of experts who had come here from Azure Dragon City definitely had not died on the way here. After all, the skeletons on the way here were all LV20. In that case, all those experts who had entered, but not exited, must had died in the central region of the forest. That meant that the reason for their deaths was...

The skeleton castle in front of him!

How terrifying the thing inside was, was quite obvious. All the super experts from Azure Dragon City who had entered had lost their lives. He himself was only a little LV17 player, and was bound to share their fate if he entered.

However, despite knowing this, Ling Chen's hand gradually moved towards the door and pressed against it. An icy coldness spread through his hand, and he stayed there for a few moments... he knew that there was great danger ahead, and that he probably would not have much of a chance if he entered. Most people at this point would make the wiser choice, which was to leave. However, if Ling Chen did this, he would no longer be Ling Chen.

He was the type of person who became more excited the more dangerous the situation was. In this life, he had wandered many times in the boundary between life and death, so many times that

he had already lost count. It was not one or two times, nor was it ten or twenty times, but rather hundreds, or even thousands of times. It was at that boundary between life and death he had become stronger and stronger each time. If he was someone who gave up when the situation seemed to difficult, he would not be where he was today, nor would he be much different from the other normal players.

Let's see what sort of secrets are hidden inside!!

He pushed forwards with the hand on the door. Although the door was enormous, he was able to easily open it by gently pushing with his hand. Amidst a deep rumbling sound, the door began to slowly open. The atmosphere inside was eerie and freezing cold. The air inside rushed out, causing Ling Chen's body temperature to fall by many degrees.

Ling Chen's eyes narrowed, looking into the castle. At the same time, he got out a pineapple and held it in his left hand... it was a "Furious Pineapple" he had taken from the Lucky Cat. He was not entirely rash when he had opened the door-if he really encountered an overwhelmingly powerful enemy, he would quickly throw the pineapple and then escape.

The door had fully opened, but it was incredibly dark inside, making it hard for Ling Chen to see. He could only see the white ground, and nothing else. He held his breath, then walked into the skeleton castle.

"Ding... you have entered into the danger zone [Eerie Castle].

As soon as he walked into the castle, a system announcement sounded in his hears. Ling Chen's awareness was raised to its peak, and he glanced around at him. It was very dark inside the castle, and the light from outside the castle's doors could allow him to see a maximum of 30 metres in front of him. After stopping for a short while, Ling Chen started to walk forwards again...

Boom!!

A heavy sound came from behind him, and light inside the castle became even dimmer. Ling Chen abruptly turned around, and found that the giant door had automatically closed, sealing off any chance of escape.

As his surroundings suddenly became dark, Ling Chen's heart leapt, and quickly ran towards the closed door. He tried to pull open the door will al his strength, but to no avail-the door was like a giant unmoving mountain.

Ling Chen gritted his teeth, and used both his hands to forcefully pull, then tried to push... no matter what he tried, the door did not even budge. However, he did not give up, and said in a low voice, "Xi Ling, try to destroy it."
Out of everyone present, Xi Ling was the only one who had a 'Destruction' element in her attacks. Xi Ling flapped her wings, and 'Red Laser' landed onto the door.

With a "poof", the thick red laser was stopped by the door, then extinguished. However, after the fire was extinguished, all that

remained was a very small burn mark on the door. It was practically non-existent.

"Let's try again!"

After the cooldown expired, another Red Laser was shot out by Xi Ling. No miracle appeared for Ling Chen, as yet another small burn mark was left behind. Ling Chen did not get Xi Ling to continue, so as to save her strength in case there was going to be a fight later. As Ling Chen calmed down, he took out a teleport scroll, and tried to shatter it...

"Ding... You are in a special locked map, and are unable to use a teleport scroll."

Ling Chen silently put the teleport scroll away. After all, he had completed expected this outcome. Right now, he had been completely trapped in this castle, and could only advance... unless he fulfilled some kind of special condition, or died, he would not be able to leave!

He could only advance and see what was ahead.

Ling Chen put away the Furious Pineapple and took out his two weapons. He slowly and carefully walked forwards. The Furious Pineapple was no longer of any use to him in this case-even if he could cause the enemy to be stunned for 5 seconds, he still would not be able to leave, and would only delay his death by 5 seconds.

Tap... tap... tap...

In this sealed environment, his footsteps sounded especially loud. Every step he took felt like he was walking on his own heart. The light from the tiny cracks in the walls only allowed him to see within 20 metres of himself. Although the castle was fifty or sixty metres high, it was only about 100 metres wide. Ling Chen carefully observed his surroundings as he walked. After walking for about fifty metres, there was still only the white ground and nothing else... after walking for another tens of steps, an incomplete skeleton appeared in front of him.

From the moment he saw the first skeleton, he began to see more and more strewn across the ground. Some were complete, and some were incomplete. In this Forest of Bones, Ling Chen had seen far too many skeletons. It could be said that the most worthless things in this forest were skeletons. However, apart from skeletons, there were many... corpses!
That's right! They were rotting corpses!

Skeletons were the remainders of corpses that had completely rotted. The rotting corpses that had yet to become skeletons meant that... these corpses had not died too long ago! The skeletons from the Forest of Bones all came from the bones from ten thousand years ago, during the Shura's Devastation. That meant that these corpses weren't from that time... but rather, were the corpses of those who had died here! Based on the decomposition of the corpses, some had died not even one year ago!

Were these people who had also entered like himself, and then died here?

His heart began to tighten and beat faster. The appearance of these skeletons and corpses meant that the terrifying danger in this castle was very near, maybe even a few steps away.

However, being locked in this castle, his only choice was to advance.

In that case, let's go see what this castle is hiding!

He continued to walk forwards, one step... two steps... three steps...

"Crack!"

Ling Chen's right foot had stepped onto a bone, resulting in a cracking sound. Within his field of vision, there were hundreds of skeletons and rotting corpses. At this moment, Ling Chen's intuition caused him to suddenly raise his head.

In front of him, was the largest skeleton he had ever seen in his whole life...

The gigantic humanoid skeleton was sitting unmoving on a platform created from countless white bones. Although it was in a sitting position, it was still about 20 metres high. Ling Chen's gaze moved down, from its head, to its neck, to its chest, then fixed on its right knee.

Because on the giant skeleton's knee was a person!

When Ling Chen looked towards her, that person also moved... she turned around, and gradually opened her eyes.

What Ling Chen saw was a beautiful girl around twelve or thirteen. She had a pair of eyes that were completely black as night, without a single trace of the white sclera most people had.

Her long hair was jet black, and danced around her despite the lack of wind. Her jade white face, in contrast to her pitch black eyes, made her look as if she was some sort of demonic beauty. She was wearing a pure black dress, which revealed her slender legs, which dangled from the giant skeleton's knee. Within her two hands, she held a doll with long ears... it appeared to be a rabbit doll, but because it was so old, it was almost impossible to tell without looking at the long ears.

A... human... girl...

Ling Chen gaped at her. The contrast to what he had been expecting caused him to become bewildered, and was at a loss for words.

The young girl's face gradually turned to look at him, and her black eyes met his. Her eyes were usually black, and occasionally gave off a black glow. Looking into her eyes, Ling Chen felt that he was looking at some sort of boundless, pitch black dimension... in the deathly silence, the young girl's lips moved, and began to speak in a gentle and soft voice...

“Are… you… here… to… give… me… dolls…”

Ling Chen: “……”

Chapter 156 - Half Ghost Girl

Are you here... to give me dolls?

In a forest filled with bones and skeletons, as well as an incredibly eerie castle... the sentence the demonic beauty wearing a black dress had uttered was completely in contrast with the environment around her...

As if a gust of cold wind had blown past him, Ling Chen's body erupted with goose bumps, and his heart began to beat many times faster.

"Dolls?" Ling Chen could not help but repeat. He looked at the rabbit doll that the girl was holding, and his eyes narrowed. There was a castle in the heart of the Forest of Bones, with a young girl inside... was she the one controlling the skeletons? Was it her that turned this forest into a forbidden place of death... and was it her who had reduced all those people to skeletons and rotting corpses?

"You don't... have any dolls?" Seeing that Ling Chen wasn't answering, and that he wasn't taking out any dolls, the girl's soft voice held a hint of disappointment. The black light in her eyes grew stronger, and she floated up from the giant skeleton's knees. She began to descend to the ground, drawing nearer and nearer to Ling Chen. As she came closer, Ling Chen felt that the surrounding light became dimmer and dimmer...

"Then... you... become... a... skeleton doll..."

Her voice was soft and gentle, yet in Ling Chen's ears it sounded like gusts of terrifyingly evil wind.

Become... a skeleton doll...

These skeletons and corpses strewn across the ground were all her... skeleton dolls?!

"Little master! Quickly run!! Get as far away from her as possible!"

Qi Yue's voice suddenly appeared in Ling Chen's mind, shaking him out of his shock. He took a step back and asked, "What's with this girl..."

"Semi-spirit girl!" Qi Yue replied.

"Semi...spirit girl?" Ling Chen vacantly asked.

"This girl only has half a spirit... no! Less than half. Not only that, but she doesn't have a true body, sort of similar to me. Although I don't have a true body, because I reside in the Lunar Scourge, I can borrow the Lunar Scourge's power to temporarily create a body. However, this girl is much more pitiful than me, because at least I have a complete spirit. A long time ago, she must have taken a lot of damage, causing her body and half her spirit to be destroyed. She probably doesn't have any memories left of her life, only some personality traits." Qi Yue quickly explained.

“… So she doesn’t have a physical body, and only half a spirit… so why can I see her?”

“What you’re seeing isn’t her body… but rather, a projection! A projection that can be seen but not touched. As for why she is able to make a projection, I have no idea. However, this isn’t important. Right now, you need to get out of her field of vision, otherwise you’ll definitely die!”

Qi Yue’s voice was extremely serious. As the girl floated closer and closer, Ling Chen felt that the deathly aura became stronger and stronger. However, the castle’s only entrance and exit had been sealed, and he was unable to open it. There was no way to escape.

Semi-spirit girl… the girl didn’t have a body, so she wasn’t a living creature, but her half-spirit still had a bit of consciousness, so she wasn’t entirely an undead either… she was a half living, half dead phenomenon.
“This girl, why does she have a visible projection… she seems like she’s existed for a long, long time…” Qi Yue softly said to herself. She suddenly thought of something, “Before, at a certain place, there was a way to achieve such a result. That method was…”

“Awoooo!!!”

Xiao Hui stood in front of Ling Chen and let out a howl. At the same time, he transmitted information regarding the girl to Ling Chen.

[????]: Type: ????, Level: ????, Grade: ????, HP: ????. An abnormal girl residing in the castle at the heart of the Forest of Bones. She has an unknown history, and only has a damaged spirit and illusionary body. She is always holding a doll, as she holds an almost creepy love for dolls.

Passive Abilities: 1: With an illusionary body, physical attacks have no effect on her, neither do Darkness attacks. Immune to all status debuffs, and can freely float up to 100 metres in the air. 2: ????, 3: ????.

Attack Skills:

[Dark Spike]: Uses Darkness element to create a spike within 20 metres, and can direct the spike to stealthily stab through a single target. Upon being hit, the target has a 5% chance of instantly dying. Usage frequency: Very high.

[Darkness Lock]: Uses Darkness energy to surround the 20 metres around the target, causing the target to be locked by illusory chains. For 30 seconds, the target's Movement Speed, Attack Speed, Jumping Ability, Hit Rate, Evasion will be reduced by 30%. Usage frequency: Medium

[Underworld Lock]: Uses Darkness energy to surround the 20 metres around the target, locking all active skills of the target for 30 seconds. Usage frequency: Low.

[Sin Lock]: Uses Darkness energy to surround the 20 metres around the target, attacking the target's spirit, causing them to

release the hidden evil side in the hearts and enter the “Berserk” status for 10 seconds, attacking everything around them furiously for 10 seconds. Usage frequency Low.

[Soul Lock]: ????

Ultimate Skills:

[Eternal Eyes of Darkness]: ????

[Doll Bombs]: ????

The information from Xiao Hui all appeared in Ling Chen’s mind. It was very obvious that because the girl was much higher level, or because of her abnormal condition, Xiao Hui’s information was not complete. Her name, stats, most skills and strongest attacks were all unknown. Her description also mentioned that she did not have a physical body, only that she was a ‘semi-spirit girl’.

Why was this semi-spirit girl in such a place, what happened to her before? And also...

“She is always holding a doll, as she holds an almost creepy love for dolls.”

Ling Chen suddenly remembered the first sentence she had said to him...

“Did… you… come… to… give… me… dolls?”

“She probably doesn’t have any memories left of her life, only some personality traits…” was what Qi Yue had told him.

Personality traits… dolls…

This girl, she really was asking him for dolls! If she didn’t get any, she would turn him into a “skeleton doll”, or rather, kill him!

In that case, if he gave her a doll, would she reconsider turning him into a “skeleton doll”?

Ling Chen immediately went through his bag… in any world, dolls were very common objects. The Azure Dragon’s Toy Store had many different types of dolls, and could even customise dolls for customers. However, the market was aimed towards young girls… how could he, a man among men, go to buy this sort of thing and keep it on him… monsters definitely would not drop any either!

As he was desperately looking for dolls in his bag, the young girl had already floated down, and stared at him with her pitch black eyes…

“Turn… into a skeleton doll…”

She raised both hands, and the darkness began to gather around her body, devouring the light around her. A bead of cold sweat trickled down Ling Chen's face. Although he tightly gripped his weapons, he did not attack, as he was sure that this girl was incomparably scary, and that she could probably destroy him in a split second. However, in return, he would not be able to hit her with his physical attacks.

"Little sister, do you want dolls?" Ling Chen quickly asked. Although she only had half a spirit, she should be able to understand his words. Given her love of dolls, if he could tempt her with his words...

However, his plan completely failed. After speaking, the girl did not reply, but rather shot two rays of darkness towards him. Immediately, he felt as if his body had been crushed by something extremely heavy and extremely solid...

"Ding... you have been restricted by the "Darkness Lock", your Movement Speed, Attack Speed, Jumping Ability and Evasion have been lowered by 30% for 30 seconds, no effect on your Hit Rate.

"Ding... you have been restricted by the "Underworld Lock", you cannot use any active skills for 30 seconds."

Ling Chen: "....."

The Darkness Lock and Underworld Lock hit him so stealthily and unexpectedly that he did not have any chance to react to them. His body became incredibly heavy, and his skills were locked... his

physical attacks were useless on this girl, so a decrease to his attack speed didn't matter to him too much. However, the decrease to his Movement Speed and Jumping Ability pretty much put him one foot in the grave already.

Just as Ling Chen was still in shock, his sense of danger alerted him of something from above. By the time he had looked up, the Dark Spike shooting towards him was only half a metre away from him. Under normal circumstances, with his reaction time and agility, it would be easy for him to dodge this spike. However, he could only sluggishly move as he watched the spike stab into himself...

.....

It was over...

Countless experts had died here. This girl's casual attacks were probably enough to kill him countless times. It seemed that entering here, death was the inevitable outcome... what awaited him for his first death in this game...
After dying, his level would be reset to LV0...

As Ling Chen sighed, the Darkness Spike pierced into his body.

-820.

The number floating above Ling Chen caused him to suddenly open his eyes. Seeing that he didn't immediately die, he became

very shocked and confused.

He had only lost 820 HP... being hit by this girl's attack, he actually hadn't been killed!!

This was completely out of Ling Chen's expectations. He quickly thought... although his physical attacks were useless, perhaps magical attacks would still be of use. Based on her attacks, she was probably a LV30 Lord Boss. With this sort of strength, Xi Ling should be able to kill her easily!

"Xi Ling!!"

Ling Chen moved backwards as quickly as possible, and replenished his HP with a potion. Just as he shouted, Xi Ling shot out a Red Laser towards the girl. Simultaneously, Qi Yue also called out in his mind.

"Don't attack her!!!!!"

Qi Yue suddenly remembered that the girl was just a projection, but she shouted a bit too late. The Red Laser squarely hit the girl's body...

-90,750!

A gigantic damage number floated up into the air... with Xi Ling's current attack power, the Red Laser did about 45,000 base damage. This damage figure that was over 90,000 was obviously because of

elemental weakness double damage.

The Red Laser evidently hit the girl's body, but the red damage figure was not above the girl, but rather above the giant skeleton's body.

"Oh, shit..." Qi Yue muttered.

Rumblerumble...

Before Ling Chen knew what was happening, the ground began to tremble. It seemed as if the whole Eerie Castle was shaking. The one who was causing this was the gigantic 20-metre-tall skeleton sitting on the platform, which had just begun to move.

An ancient and eerie voice boomed out, attacking Ling Chen's mind.

"Who... dares... disturb... my... slumber..."

Chapter 157 - Spirit Sacrifice Contract

As the whole castle shook, fragments from the roof fell down, and the gigantic skeleton slowly stood up. Its two eyes light up with the same eerie green glow Ling Chen had seen in other skeletons.

Ling Chen's eyes opened wide, and he stood fixed on the spot out of shock. He stared at the enormous skeleton... it was around 30 metres tall, like a small mountain, and gave off a frightening pressure.

This gigantic skeleton wasn't just a decoration... but rather, another boss!!

It turned out that the danger he and Xiao Hui had both sensed did not come from the black clothed girl, but rather from this mega skeleton!! It... was truly the final boss of the Forest of Bones!

Just the exterior appearance of the 30-metre-tall skeleton was enough to scare most players into fainting, let alone fight with it.

It seemed that Xi Ling's attack from just then had woken it up... However, Xi Ling's attack had evidently landed on that girl's body, so why was it the giant skeleton that took damage?

As the giant skeleton stood up, Ling Chen felt a terrifying stare covering him. The stare was filled with hatred and killing intent. The skeleton raised its left arm, and after a flash of light, it was suddenly holding a gigantic black sword... the sword was around

20 metres long, and seemed like it could kill people just from scaring the wits out of them. It also raised its right hand, and the semi-spirit girl gently floated onto its right hand...

"Qi Yue, what is going on?" Ling Chen asked as he gritted his teeth. The aura this gigantic skeleton released was one of complete oppression. It was truly the most fearsome creature in this Forest of Bones. Of course, by now, Ling Chen had guessed that all the bodies in the castle were as a result of this skeleton.

"Spirit Sacrifice Contract." Qi Yue slowly said these few words.

"Spirit Sacrifice Contract? What's that?"

"It's a type of ancient technique that very few beings are able to use. It's a type of contract that forces another being to protect the user. The user forces the contract onto another living being or undead, and any damage suffered by the user is transferred onto the contracted being! This means, unless you kill the contracted being, the contractor will never die!"

Ling Chen: "!!!!"

Forcing another being to take the damage the user suffers! What a terrifying and forceful contract. Although this was called a 'contract', it was the most unfair contract Ling Chen had ever seen. This was because not only did the contracted being become a shield for the contractor, but did not receive any benefits at all.

“Because this is an extremely powerful technique, many people tried to find ways to use it. Of course, if it was used on a very powerful being, such as a Moon God, then one would pretty much never die. However, such a contract would not be so easily used. The ‘Spirit Sacrifice Contract’ only appeared in the Mystic Moon world a few times in the distant past, and then was never heard of again… I never thought that I would see that terrifying contract again here! It’s quite obvious that the semi-spirit girl cast the contract onto this gigantic skeleton, so all of the damage she takes is transferred to the skeleton.”

“The reason why I realised it was the Spirit Sacrifice Contract was because of the way the semi-spirit girl existed,” Qi Yue explained, “The Spirit Sacrifice Contract also has another special function, which is that user can use the contracted being’s life force and spirit to create an illusory body. The illusory body cannot be touched by anyone or anything except for the contracted being. Moreover, this contract can only be used by a person twice in their lifetime. After a contract is set up, neither the contractor nor the contracted being can cancel it. The only way to cancel the contract is for the contracted being to die. However, there’s a side effect if it’s the second time the contract is used.”

Ling Chen: “????”

“After the first contracted being dies, if the user uses the contract on another being for the second time, if that second contracted being dies, the contract will not simply be cancelled. Rather, both the contracted being and the contractor will die together! Thus, in order to kill this semi-spirit girl, you must first kill this gigantic skeleton! There are two possibilities after killing this skeleton: if it was the first time the girl used the Spirit Sacrifice Contract, then

her contract with the skeleton will be cancelled. If it was the second time, then as soon as the skeleton dies, the semi-spirit girl will die as well!”

Having lived for thousands of years, Qi Yue knew of many things that had been long forgotten by mankind. No more than perhaps five people in the Forgotten Continent presently knew of the “Spirit Sacrifice Contract”, as it only existed briefly back in ancient times.

The semi-spirit girl floated onto the gigantic skeleton’s right hand, and gently stood on its palm… Indeed, although her body was an illusory body, she could stand in the skeleton’s hand. When Ling Chen had first saw her, she was sitting on the skeleton’s knee.

As the girl settled onto its palm, the fingertips of the skeleton’s five fingers pressed together, securely protecting the girl in its hand. Its low and hellish voice boomed out, causing tremors in the air,

“Even… if… I… die… I… won’t… let… you… harm… the… person… I… am… protecting…”

“I…will… give… you… an… icy… death… with… the… sword… in… my… hand…”

“Listen…to…the…roar…of…hell…”

The skeleton’s enormous body, as well as its fearsome giant

sword, and its booming voice released a pressure that was as heavy as a mountain, attacking Ling Chen's spirit. Ling Chen's brows were furrowed, his teeth tightly gritted, as sweat dripped off his forehead. The pressure was even more suffocating than when he had fought the LV10 Celestial grade Giant Greedy Toad when he was just LV5.

"Don't stand there like an idiot, quickly run while it hasn't attacked yet!!"

With the length of its arm, as well as the length of its sword, who knew what was the attacking range for this colossal skeleton. Unless he had an incredibly high Movement Speed, it would be very difficult to dodge the skeleton's attack. Moreover, from the oppressive pressure, Ling Chen knew that if he was hit, the damage he would suffer would be enough to kill him tens of times. In this area of about 100 metres across, if the skeleton stood at the centre of the space, it would practically be able to hit him no matter where he ran... so what use was there in him running? Moreover, if he was hit by the semi-spirit girl's Darkness Lock or Underworld Lock, his Movement Speed would greatly decrease, and he would not be able to use any active skills.

However, hearing Qi Yue's reminder, he called out the Cloud Stepping Mare, and desperately tried to increase the distance between the giant skeleton and himself, so as to give him enough time to think of a plan of attack.

The only exit was sealed, so his only option was to kill this gigantic skeleton.

“Xi Ling, this time, we’re all depending on you!!” Ling Chen silently thought as he thought back to the damage figure exceeding 90,000. Although the pressure from the skeleton was overwhelming, that did not mean Ling Chen had given up. Since he had no other choices, he would give it his all to destroy this terrifying enemy.

“Xiao Hui, give us the information regarding this gigantic skeleton!”

Although his Movement Speed had been reduced by 30%, with the Cloud Stepping Mare’s speed, the distance between himself and the giant skeleton increased. Xiao Hui turned around, and a grey light flashed in his eyes. The information about the giant skeleton momentarily appeared in Ling Chen’s mind.

[Undying Will-Warring Palace Skeleton]: Type: Undead, Level: LV20, Grade: Heaven’s End, HP: 2,000,000. A gigantic skeleton that resides in the heart of the Forest of Bones, its history is unknown. Although it is a skeleton, but in order to protect its master, it still has a bit of consciousness that has not dissipated yet. The skeleton’s body is also filled with powerful energy.

Passive Abilities: Its body is almost indestructible, and its defence is incredibly high. Its attacking range is extremely large, and has very high attack power. Negates 50% of Darkness Damage, and is immune to all status effects except freeze, burn, and petrification, and is also immune to all stat debuffs.

Attack Skills:

[Earth Splitting Slash]: Uses its sword to slash at the ground, causing the ground to split. Knocks any target within 20 metres flying, and has a 15% chance to induce 3-5 seconds of stun. Usage frequency: High.

[Earth Shaking Stomp]: Uses its feet to stomp on the ground, causing severe tremors. Any targets within 50 metres will be knocked down. The tremors have a 90% chance to add 5 seconds of stun and 20% reduction to Movement Speed. This attack does no damage. Before activating, the user will raise its left or right foot high in the air. Usage frequency: Fairly high.

[Absolute Darkness]: Summons Darkness element to cover the entire area, devouring all light, causing the surrounding area of 100 metres to enter into an “Total Darkness” status. The user is not affected. Usage frequency: Low.

[Baleful Shield]: Creates an invisible shield reflecting 10% of all physical damage. Automatically activates when HP is lower than 50%, and automatically deactivates when HP is greater than 50%.

[Thundering Heavens and Shaking Earth]: The user releases its battle power, and swings in a destructive arc, destroying everything within 80 metres. The attack has a medium destruction effect. When activated, the attack will charge for 8 seconds, and after usage, the user will not be able to move for 15 seconds. The skill has a certain chance to activate when the user’s HP is less than 20%, and can only be used once per day.

Chapter 158 - Goodbye Nine Suns (1)

Undying Will, Warring Palace Skeleton-this was the name of the gigantic skeleton. The name probably had some sort of meaning, but it was lost on Ling Chen. Its level was unexpectedly low, being the same level as the other LV20 skeletons he had met on the way, but its grade was just as Ling Chen had expected...

Heaven's End!!

One grade above the Celestial grade, it was almost impossible for a player to defeat a monster of the Heaven's End grade at the same level.

Although it was only LV20, the power of a LV20 Heaven's End monster was something that even super experts could not deal with. This was evident through the masses of corpses and skeletons on the ground in this castle. Moreover, there was also the semi-spirit girl to take into account-although she did not have strong attacks, she had extremely powerful crowd control abilities!

This was the first Heaven's End Boss Ling Chen had encountered since entering the Mystic Moon world. With 2,000,000 HP, and having "incredibly high" Defence, without using Soul Sacrifice, maybe Ling Chen would not be even able to break through its defence. However, right now he had Xi Ling... as long as there was Xi Ling, there was still a sliver of hope against this terrifying skeleton.

One "Red Laser" from Xi Ling could take off about 90,000 HP.

That means that if Xi Ling hit it with the Red Laser about 20 times, she would be able to defeat this Heaven's End skeleton. 20 times... and if she used Wild Flames in between, it would be even faster.

However, the question was whether he would live long enough for Xi Ling to be able to use 20 or so Red Lasers.

"Qi Yue, what are the chances of us beating this skeleton?" Ling Chen shouted as he pulled away from the skeleton.

"Do you want to hear the truth?"

"....."

"It's impossible. Unless you die, you won't be able to leave either." Qi Yue straightforwardly replied.

"Then adding on Xi Ling?"

"My answer already accounted for Xi Ling and Xiao Hui. Although Xi Ling has extremely powerful attacks, but in this small area, it would be incredibly hard for her to survive against this skeleton. Unless Xi Ling can one shot it, you guys will be the ones to be one shotted."

Ling Chen did not say anything. The first action the Warring Palace Skeleton made was to confirm Qi Yue's words to be the truth.

It took a step forwards... in just one step, it had covered about 10 metres. It then took a second step... in just two short steps, it had covered half the distance to Ling Chen. Although the Warring Palace Skeleton did not move quickly at all, but every step covered a large distance. It was almost impossible for Ling Chen to outrun it.

A third step... and then a fourth step... after taking four steps forwards, the Warring Palace Skeleton stood in the centre of the castle, just as Ling Chen had expected. As long as it stood in the centre, it would be able to reach practically every corner in the corner without even moving. No matter how one tried to dodge, it would be incredibly difficult.

"Be...destroyed...and...fall...with...me...into...an...icy...hell..."

The Warring Palace Skeleton's voice once again boomed out like thunder, sending waves of vibrations through Ling Chen's body. It raised its left hand, and the giant sword it was holding flashed with a black light, then swung the sword downwards. Although it took a long time for the Warring Palace Skeleton to raise the sword, the speed at which the sword fell was incredibly fast. This was one of its basic skills- [Earth Splitting Slash]!

The Warring Palace Skeleton had a huge body, and had high Defence and Attack Power. However, its attacks were very simple and fairly slow. Apart from its ultimate attack, the Earth Splitting Slash was its only skill that could do damage. However, despite this, just having this one skill was already terrifying. This was because it had an AOE of 20 metres!

As the giant sword descended, Ling Chen instantaneously predicted where it would land, and immediately began to run in a different direction on the Cloud Stepping Mare. However, the sword's descent was too fast, and Ling Chen's Movement Speed had been greatly decreased. By the time the giant sword smashed into the ground, he would still be within the 20 metres AOE.

From the moment the giant sword began descending, there was only half a second until it would hit the ground. To run 20 metres in this amount of time was simply impossible. As the sword neared the ground, Ling Chen suddenly turned around, and raised his right hand...

"Moon Shadow!!"

The black light shot out and surrounded the 17 metres around him, including the Warring Palace Skeleton, causing it to be fixed in place.

Having a little breathing room, Ling Chen immediately shouted, "Xi Ling! Attack him!!"

As the Moon Shadow activated, Xi Ling already began her attack sequence, shooting a Red Laser into the Warring Palace Skeleton's chest.

-90,750!

As the bright flame hit the Warring Palace Skeleton, an enormous damage figure floated above it. Although it was a Heaven's End Boss, two attacks from Xi Ling wiped out about 10% of its HP.

After shooting the Red Laser, Xi Ling did not stop, and immediately cast a Wild Flames. The flames enveloped not only the Warring Palace Skeleton's body, but also the girl it was holding in its hands...

-36,300, -36,300.

Being hit by the Wild Flames, the damage to the semi-spirit girl was transferred to the Warring Palace Skeleton, causing another two damage numbers to float above it. However, Ling Chen did not celebrate at all... he had escaped from the Warring Palace Skeleton's first attack using Moon Shadow, so he had no idea how he would escape the second.

At this moment, his incredibly heavy body suddenly felt light again. Thirty seconds had passed, and the Darkness Lock and Underworld Lock had expired. He looked the frozen Warring Palace Skeleton, and decided that he would not depend on Xi Ling.

He rushed towards the Warring Palace Skeleton's right foot, as two layers of light appeared on his body...

"Soul Sacrifice!"

“Battle Soul Possession!”

5 seconds passed, and “Moon Shadow’s” effects ended. The Warring Palace Skeleton’s sword smashed into the ground, causing the surrounding area to shake. However, Ling Chen was not affected, as he had already rushed to its feet, and used his strongest attack...

“Four Corners Star Formation!!”

The berserk battle energy shot out of Ling Chen, forming a four cornered array. It then exploded, rushing towards the Warring Palace Skeleton’s right foot...

Boom!!!

-1.

The explosion from the Four Corners Star Formation rang in Ling Chen’s ears as he stood dumbfounded, looking at the pitiful number in the air.

He had activated Soul Sacrifice and Battle Soul Possession, then used his most powerful attack. However, it only caused 1 damage to this Warring Palace Skeleton.

This was because the attack had not been strong enough to break through the Warring Palace Skeleton’s Defence.

Ling Chen was completely shocked. He had originally thought that it might have been possible for him to break through its Defence even without Soul Sacrifice, but he had been incredibly wrong... with Soul Sacrifice, his base Physical Attack Power was above 3,000, and yet it had not broken through the Warring Palace Skeleton's Defence.

What incredible Defence! This giant skeleton's strength was not in its attack, but in its Defence, which caused all to despair! It was not afraid of physical attacks at all, but rather feared flames, which caused double damage to it.

Ling Chen quickly recovered from his shock, and speedily got away from the skeleton. He was still not willing to completely depend on Xi Ling.

However, the prerequisite was that he had to survive again in order to attack the giant skeleton again. Sitting on the Cloud Stepping Mare, Ling Chen commanded it to run to the area behind the Warring Palace Skeleton. The Warring Palace Skeleton turned around, and locked on to his position. It took a long time to pull its sword out of the ground, turn around, then raise its sword again. However, when the sword descended for the second time, Ling Chen found that the smell of death became stronger.

Ling Chen's reaction time, prediction ability and his agility were peerless. He could instantaneously predict where the sword was going to land, and thus move to avoid it...

However, in the half a second it took for the sword to hit the ground, he needed to predict where it would land, then move at least 10 metres to get out of the 20 metre AOE. Even if his prediction was flawless, his Movement Speed was something that he could not overcome. Thus, as he ran, he could only watch as the giant sword came closer and closer to the ground, as he became closer and closer to death...

What was terrifying about Heaven's End Bosses were not just their HP, Defence and Attack power, but also fear-inspiring AOE of their attacks. This was especially so for new players who were rather inexperienced in predicting attacks and finding the most efficient ways to dodge them-just the AOE of Heaven's End Bosses were enough to send them into despair.

Chapter 159 - Goodbye Nine Suns (2)

Time slowed down as Ling Chen watched the sword come closer and closer to the ground. He silently sighed in his heart.

In the end, he wasn't all powerful, and was not able to exceed his limits, as this was a game. Back then, he had fought a ferocious battle with the Giant Greedy Toad, and had won, but he was still unable to deal with the power of a Heaven's End Boss. He had avoided the first Earth Splitting Slash, but he wouldn't be able to dodge this second one. The moment the sword hit the ground would be the moment he died.

Caw~~~

At this moment, a ray of red light flew towards him... it was Xi Ling! Her Movement Speed was far superior to Ling Chen's and she knew what sort of situation he was in. She accelerated to her highest speed, and rammed into Ling Chen's chest.

Pets were unable to deal damage to their masters, so Xi Ling's body slam only caused Ling Chen to go flying, but did not do any damage. Immediately after he was knocked flying, an explosive boom sounded out, but Ling Chen was not affected, as he had been knocked out of the 20 metres radius by Xi Ling.

Ling Chen fell heavily onto the ground. Because of Xi Ling's body slam, he had narrowly avoided this god of death's sword. However, his mount had been hit, and Xi Ling was not able to make it out of the 20 metre radius either.

“Ding… your mount ‘Cloud Stepping Mare’ has died.”

With a neigh, the Cloud Stepping Mare had been blasted into the air, and instantly died. Although mounts did not receive any damage while there was someone riding on them, as soon as Ling Chen had been knocked off its back, its invincibility status had been removed. The one attack from the Heaven’s End Boss was enough to kill it over a hundred times.

After the Cloud Stepping Mare died, Ling Chen could simply buy another one, however…

“Ding… your pet ‘Crimson Spirit’ has died.”

“Xi Ling!!”

The explosive power of the sword hitting the ground knocked Xi Ling high up into the air, and she powerlessly fell down. With the Nine Suns Rebirth, Xi Ling would not truly die, but every time she used the Nine Suns Rebirth, she would not be able to fight for the next hour. Without Xi Ling, Ling Chen had lost his only hope against the Warring Palace Skeleton.

Xi Ling had 180 Movement Speed, and could fly in the air. Thus, even if it was in a restricted space, it would still be incredibly difficult for the Warring palace Skeleton to hit her. However, in order to save him, she had been mercilessly slain.

Xi Ling was not simply just a pet, and was not just a “beast” either. She was a being with an incredibly pure and beautiful heart. Back when they had first met, she had sacrificed herself for him. This time, she had once again sacrificed herself in order to protect him from this Warring Palace Skeleton. To Xi Ling, Ling Chen was not just her ‘master’, but also someone who she would give everything up for, someone who had restored her freedom that she had so desperately longed for.

The Xi Ling’s falling body ignited with bright red flames, and once again activated the Nine Suns Rebirth. As the fire burned brighter and brighter, she stopped falling, and hovered in the air.

“Ding... your pet “Xi Ling’s” ‘Nine Suns Rebirth’ has activated, and has been revived without any penalty. However, it cannot be summoned within the next hour.”

Seeing Xi Ling’s Nine Suns Rebirth activate, Ling Chen’s beating heart calmed down... Xi Ling, have a good rest. Leave the rest to me-no matter how hard it is, I will struggle to the end!!

One second... two seconds... a look of confusion suddenly appeared on Ling Chen’s face.

After the Nine Suns Rebirth activated, Xi Ling should have returned to the Pet Dimension. However, Xi Ling was still hovering in the air, her body covered in flames. The temperature of the surrounding began to gradually increase.

“Xi Ling?” Ling Chen called out worriedly. At this moment, the

Warring Palace Skeleton pulled its sword out of the ground, and once again raised it high in the air...

"Be...destroyed...and...fall...with...me...into...an...icy...hell..."

The Warring Palace Skeleton's slow, booming voice sounded like a deathly chant. As it once again raised its sword, the flames on Xi Ling's body suddenly erupted wildly, causing searing heat waves to roll outwards from her. Ling Chen stared at Xi Ling, and found that the flames on her body had changed from red, to a dazzling gold colour.

Ling Chen was shocked, "This... this is..."

"Arghh...Arghhhhhh!!"

The moment the golden flames had appeared, the Warring Palace Skeleton cried out, and retreated, as if it had seen some sort of terrifying monster.

The golden flames were incredibly hot, and covered every part of Xi Ling's body. As the flames burned, golden rings of light appeared around her body... there were 9 in total. The rings of light gradually began to rise, and became larger and larger... soon, the whole castle was filled with a rich, golden light.

"Arghhh.... Ahhh..."

The Warring Palace Skeleton only had a bit of its original spirit

left, and should not be displaying such fear. However, flames were its greatest enemy, and Xi Ling's rootless flames were its worst nightmare. All creatures of darkness instinctively feared these flames, and could not stand up to them at all. Facing Xi Ling's golden flames, the Warring Palace Skeleton hurriedly retreated, and pitifully cried out, ignoring Ling Chen completely.

It was not the first time Ling Chen had seen these golden flames and nine rings of light...

Memories flashed through his mind... Lonely Spirit Ridge... Golden light... Xi Ling's determination... War Demon Beast's terror... and the completely incinerated War Demon Beast...

This was the beginning of Xi Ling's ultimate skill-Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns!!

The nine golden rings of light rose up until they were at the ceiling of the castle. They hovered in the air just like nine golden suns. The light from these nine "suns" covered every inch of the castle, and completely wiped out any darkness. Even the gigantic Warring Palace Skeleton had been completely covered in light, turning it into a golden skeleton.

Back when Xi Ling had first used the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, she had destroyed the Mysterious God grade War Demon Beast, and had completely incinerated the entire Lonely Spirit Ridge. Now, Xi Ling was a pet, and was very low level, having a vastly lower level of strength than she had at the time. Despite this, if she released this terrifying skill, she would still be able to instantly kill this fearsome skeleton.

However, the current Xi Ling could not use the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns... unless... unless...

Nine suns giving off brilliant light, sufficient to easily kill the Warring Palace Skeleton, hung in the air, but Ling Chen did not feel the slightest amount of joy. Instead, his face was full of worry and anguish. He rushed up, and shouted, “Xi Ling!! Stop!! Don’t use the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, stop right now!!”

It was possible for the current Xi Ling to use the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, but at a cost... the cost of her life!

The last time she had used the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, she did so at the cost of her life force, and only revived by using Ling Chen’s life force as a base for her flames. However, she could only use that type of revival once. If she once again used up all of her life force... she would die a permanent death.

The Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns above them was using the remainder of Xi Ling’s life force to activate!!

“There’s no use stopping her. The moment she activated Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, her life force began to burn away. There’s no way to stop it now.” Qi Yue’s voice suddenly appeared in his mind.

Ling Chen: “!!!!”

The golden light intensified, causing Ling Chen's eyes to be filled with a sea of gold. The Warring Palace Skeleton's mournful cries also echoed around the castle. As for Ling Chen, he stood on the spot, unsure of what to do... he could not stop the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, nor could he prevent the side effects of the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns that he so dreaded.

To Ling Chen, he would rather die a hundred times than to see the current Xi Ling use Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, because he would forever lose Xi Ling after she used the skill.

At this moment, within the sea of gold, Ling Chen saw a red silhouette appear.

Chapter 160 - Goodbye, Master…

Within the sea of gold, Ling Chen saw a red silhouette appear. It was a young girl whose face was white as snow; whose eyes were clear as crystals. She wore a flame red princess-style dress, which covered her whole body. She looked at Ling Chen, and sweetly smiled, “Master, I might… have to leave you now.”

It was Xi Ling… in her human form. When activating the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, she could once again temporarily take her human form.

Ling Chen looked at her slightly red eyes, his voice hoarse, “Xi Ling… why are you being so stupid, why would you use the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns… don’t you know what the consequences are?”

Xi Ling continued to smile, but her eyes contained a hint of sadness, “I know I’m really dumb, and I know exactly what the consequences of activating Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns are. I know that even if Master dies, you’ll still be able to immediately revive… however, despite this, seeing Master about to die, I couldn’t help but activate these flames, because… this is the only way to save Master. Even if I know you’ll revive, I still don’t want to see you die…”

Ling Chen was speechless, “… Xi Ling, you…”

Xi Ling slightly shook her head, a cheerful smile once again appearing on her face, “Master must think I’m very dumb and

disobedient right?”

Ling Chen: “……”

Xi Ling’s tears were immediately evaporated by the burning flames, and her eyes gazed into his, “Master, did you know… from the day I was born, I was by myself. I didn’t know who my father was, I didn’t know was my mother was. I didn’t know how I was born, or even why I was born. I only know that the first memory I have of this world were of billowing flames and a colourless sky… up until today, I still have no idea who my parents are…”

Ling Chen: “…..”

“I was born into solitude, and grew up in solitude. I never had any friends or companions. They were all afraid of me, and would run away from me whenever they saw me. There was not a single person or creature that was willing to speak with me or play with me… gradually, I became used to just being by myself. I would even begin to avoid other people, animals, Fairies… day after day, year after year… at that time, there was no colour in my life. Every day was for the sake of living to the next day. I grew to know this world little by little in my solitude.”

“One day, I was attacked by the Demon Emperor and the ten ancient demon beasts. I was defeated, and was sealed by them. Afterwards, I lost all of my freedom. Every minute and every second I was imprisoned. When I closed my eyes, there was only a perpetual darkness; when I opened my eyes, there were only black threads and an icy cold wall. Just like this, time went by: one day, two days… one year, two years… ten years… one hundred years…

one thousand years... ten thousand years. Every second, every minute, the pain of not being able to move or speak at all just made me want to die. I even hated myself for being born... by that time, I had completely given up on freedom. Because I knew that no one would come to save me. I would be imprisoned for twenty thousand years, and then I would simply die. The me from back then longed for that day to quickly come."

Ling Chen's heart quivered. He had never known that the endlessly powerful Xi Ling had such a past. Xi Ling could no longer hold her smile, and her tears streamed down her face. She did not want to leave Ling Chen at all, but at the same time, she had no regrets either, "However, in my endless despair, what came to me wasn't death, but Master... you, who did not know me at all, did not hold any responsibility to me, charged in and inconceivably rescued me, and gave me back the freedom I had so longed for. Perhaps to other creatures, freedom is something very insignificant, as they have never been without it. However, to me, it was something I could only dream about. It was Master who gave me my freedom, who gave me a new life... from that moment onwards, I decided that I would do whatever I could in order to repay Master. I decided that I would use all of my power to protect Master. Even if I had to give up everything, even my life, I would not hesitate in the slightest.

"Afterwards, I followed Master wherever he went... maybe Master doesn't know, but becoming Master's pet wasn't a restriction or imprisonment, but rather something I desired... just as I told Master before that I wanted to follow Master forever, that was the absolute truth. Because of Master, I received my freedom, so I only wanted to do my best to protect Master. I didn't ever want to be by myself again... from then, I've explored human cities with Master, I've met so many people, I've learned so much. Having

someone to care for you, praise you and for you to rely on is such a wonderful feeling. Every second and minute with Master, I've experienced happiness that I've never even dared to dream to experience before. However, my time with Master was... so short... this time, I'm really going to... leave Master."

"Xi Ling..." Apart from calling out to her, Ling Chen was unable to say anything else. This being that had caused the War Demon Beast to be so terrified, it turned out that she had grown up in complete loneliness and solitude, being feared by countless other beings. Who knew what she truly desired was so simple and pure?

"However, that doesn't matter, it really doesn't matter..." Xi Ling's tears continued to flow as she shook her head, "Being able to stay with Master for this period of time, I'm already very content. Meeting Master was the greatest blessing in my whole life. Even if I know Master would revive, I still can't bear see all your hard work going to waste... so please forgive me for being stubborn... if, if Xi Ling can still live after this, I'll... I'll definitely always listen to Master in future..."

The golden light's intensity stopped increasing, and the nine 'golden suns' in the sky's light had already reached their limit. These nine 'golden suns' were far inferior to those that had appeared above Lonely Spirit Ridge, but from the terrifying amount of power they exuded, Ling Chen was absolutely sure they could instantly annihilate the Warring Palace Skeleton.

Ling Chen placed his hand on his chest, feeling a wave of deep sorrow. He had not been with Xi Ling for a very long time, but the connection between Xi Ling and himself was not so simple as

‘Master’ and ‘pet’. He would never forget why Xi Ling had become his pet in the first place, and definitely would not forget the way she had saved him when they had first met with the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns.

The reason he had taken in Xi Ling as a pet was to save her, so he could keep her by her side and protect this selfless and kind girl.

Back when he had released Xi Ling, he had done it on a whim, and did not expect anything from it. He would never have guessed that the beautiful bird would save his life over and over again, at the expense of hers. She was not some ordinary being, but rather a being that possessed rootless flames, a being that even the Demon Emperor and ten ancient demon beasts feared... while Ling Chen was just an insignificant player who had not even entered the Mystic Moon world for long.

Seeing Xi Ling’s face covered in tears, he wanted to say something, and yet nothing came out. The weeping Xi Ling began to smile again, and gradually came nearer... a small, soft body leapt into his. Xi Ling used all of her strength to hug him... this was the thing she wanted to do most since following him.

Xi Ling buried her head into his chest, and closed her golden eyes, enjoying this last moment of happiness... Ling Chen’s body slightly tensed, then tried to use his arms to hug her back, but his arms only met air... Xi Ling had already disappeared from his embrace, and a soft, gentle voice sounded out in his ears, “Goodbye... my Master...”

Boom!!!!!!

The nine golden suns in the air exploded, and golden flames consumed everything within the castle. The Warring Palace Skeleton's pitiful cries boomed out in fear.

With a great crash, the 'indestructible' castle had been easily demolished, and light from outside shone in. However, the golden flames rushed out of the remains of the castle, dispelling the dark clouds overhead and dying the entire sky gold...

2227500, -2227500。

The only person and thing that had not been affected by the golden flames was Ling Chen. He stood still as a statue, unable to move due to the shock. No matter how powerful Xi Ling's attack was, it would never hurt him.

-2,227,500, -2,227,500。

The moment the golden flames swept over the Warring Palace Skeleton, two enormous damage figures appeared over its head, reducing its incredible amount of HP instantly to 0. Its body slowly fell down, and heavily smashed into the ground. As for the semi-spirit girl, the damage she should have taken was transferred over to the Warring Palace Skeleton, and so was probably still alive... however, she was no long as terrifying as she had originally been to Ling Chen.

The Eerie Castle had been reduced to rubble, and all of the white bones that made up this castle had been completely incinerated,

unable to block Ling Chen’s way anymore.

Chapter 161 - Undying Will

After the last bone had been incinerated, the Eerie Castle no longer existed within the Forest of Bones. Even the bones on the ground had been completely destroyed, revealing black dirt that had not seen the light of day in ten thousand years. Although Xi Ling had limited the area of the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, the surrounding area within 1,000 metres had been completely razed to the ground.

No matter how terrifying flames were, they were bound to die out sooner or later. When the last piece of the Eerie Castle had disappeared, the nine golden suns in the sky finally completely disappeared, and the flames also began to extinguish. Without the dark clouds covering up the sky, Ling Chen's surroundings were no longer dark and gloomy.

A red silhouette began to drift downwards, seeming as light as cotton. Ling Chen walked forwards, and caught the drifting Xi Ling in her bird form in his hands.

Xi Ling's body was no longer covered in flames, and her body was only barely warm. Her body quivered in his hands, and she tried to raise her head, but was unable to do so. She was only able to make a few weak noises.

"Xi Ling..." Ling Chen bit his lips, and was only able to let out a helpless sigh. This result had been inevitable the moment Xi Ling had activated the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, and he could do nothing about it.

“Xi Ling, you have the power of the Golden Crow, and are able to make even the Demon Emperor and ten ancient demon beasts tremble. I, on the other hand, am only a human who has just entered into this world. In this world, millions of my own lives would not be as valuable as even one of your feathers, why would you do this for me...” Ling Chen absentmindedly muttered to himself.

In this life, the things he had experienced the most were pain and suffering; the least were warmth and joy. Before meeting Shui Ruo, his entire world had been icy cold, and he himself was cold and heartless, like a demon. Shui Ruo had changed his entire life, and he was willing to use his entire life to repay her. The warmth and kindness she had shown him that year was forever engraved into his memories. Apart from Shui Ruo and her parents who had taken him in, Ling Chen had never thought himself to owe anyone anything...

However, in this virtual world, this “beast” he had casually released had used her life to protect him again and again...

“Back then when I saved you, it was just something that I casually did, and never once expected you to do anything because of that... when you sacrificed yourself for me at Lonely Spirit Ridge, you did not owe me anything anymore... now, it’s only me who owes you; you did not have to save me like this at all.”

If he had not chosen to enter the Eerie Castle, none of this would have happened, and Xi Ling would still be alive... He had willingly accepted this sort of danger, even though he knew that he might face death-however, even if he did die, he would not regret it at all.

Despite this, looking at Xi Ling in his hands, he realised... right now, he was not by himself anymore. He now also had Xiao Hui and Xi Ling to think about-the choices he made would not only affect him, but also his companions.

Xi Ling could no longer reply to him, but if she could, her reply would definitely be, “I am completely willing...”

“For now, she won’t die.” Qi Yue’s sighing voice appeared in Ling Chen’s mind. She was also feeling very melancholic over Xi Ling’s choice. A powerful being possessing rootless flames giving up their life for a human was something that no one could ever accept.

“You mean...” Hearing what Qi Yue had just said, Ling Chen was extremely shocked.

“If she wasn’t your pet, she would have died immediately. You have to remember, this is her ‘second life’, and her life force is linked to yours. As long as she is near you, she can remain ‘alive’ from your life force... however, her current condition isn’t too far from being dead. Right now, she’s not able to move or fight. Even if she uses all of her strength to just survive, she won’t last for too long.” Qi Yue replied.

Ling Chen twisted his hands together, and asked, “Qi Yue, what I want to know is if there’s any way to rescue Xi Ling... you’ve lived for ten thousand years, so you must know things that other people don’t know. There has to be a way, right?”

Ling Chen did not receive an answer from Qi Yue... but neither

did she deny it.

Qi Yue's reaction caused Ling Chen to see a faint glimmer of hope. He hurriedly asked, "Qi Yue, do you really know of a way to save Xi Ling?"

Qi Yue remained silent, as if she didn't want to tell Ling Chen. After a few seconds, she replied, "You could say there is, but also isn't... because right now, to little master, there is indeed a way to save Xi Ling, but it's almost the same as not having one at all."

Qi Yue's meaning was very obvious-although there was a method of saving Xi Ling, it was so difficult as to be almost the same as not having that method.

"What method is it?! Quickly tell me! As long as I can rescue Xi Ling, even if it is as difficult as reaching up to the heavens, I still need to try!!" Ling Chen resolutely said.

"...Alright, since little master is so insistent, I'll tell you later. However, little master... don't you feel something is a bit weird?" Qi Yue suddenly said.

"Something... weird?" Ling Chen looked around him.

Most of the flames had already died down, and there were only little tongues of flame on the ground. Not too far away from him was the Warring Palace Skeleton on the ground. Although its body had somehow escaped being incinerated by the golden flames, it

was undoubtedly dead. Next to its gigantic body, Ling Chen saw the black-clothed semi-spirit girl…

“Please… don’t… die…”

“Don’t… die…”

As she cried, she spoke with a small, trembling voice that could cause anyone to feel sympathetic for her. This girl had been here for a long, long time, and this gigantic skeleton had been her only companion, and possibly her only family. Now that it had died, she had broken down… despite being a semi-spirit girl.

Right now, she was probably more devastated than Ling Chen who was about to lose Xi Ling… she was crying her heart out, and seemed to have forgotten about Ling Chen’s existence.

That girl……

Wait!!

Seeing the fallen skeleton, Ling Chen finally realised what the ‘something strange’ was…

The Warring Palace Skeleton had evidently been killed by Xi Ling, so why wasn’t there a system announcement saying that this Heaven’s End Boss had been killed? Moreover, there were no SP or Fame Points rewards, nor was there any EXP given.

What was going on? Could it be that there were no rewards for killing this skeleton at all?

“Please… don’t… die…”

“Please… don’t… die…”

“Don’t… die…”

Ling Chen looked at the girl, surprised. She didn’t have a body, and definitely should not have tears. However, Ling Chen clearly saw her teardrops falling onto the Warring Palace Skeleton’s body. She repeated those few words over and over again in her soft, but trembling and desperate voice.

“Please… don’t… die…”

“Don’t… die!!!!”

Her weak voice suddenly became louder, pierced into Ling Chen’s ears. As she let out that piercing cry, a thick, black smog rose up from her body…

What was that? Ling Chen began to have an uneasy feeling.

Boom…

The ground began to shake as an oppressive aura started to weigh down on Ling Chen's body and mind.

As the ground trembled, Ling Chen's eyes widened as he saw the Warring Palace Skeleton begin to move again. The arm holding the massive sword slowly rose up, and its upper body sat up. Its dark eye sockets once again lit up with an eerie green flame...

A sound that was not meant to be ever heard again sounded out in Ling Chen's ears.

"Even...if...I...die...I...will...not...let...you...harm...the...person... I...am...protecting..."

"All...of...you...fall...into...an...icy...hell..."

Ling Chen: "!!!!!!!"

Chapter 162 - The “Rising Back From The Dead” Of The Legends

Ling Chen saw the Warring Palace Skeleton, which should have been dead, slowly stand up... the only difference between its current condition and that of before was that it now had many burn marks on its body, but it had still stood up and still held that monstrous, gigantic sword.

“This... this is impossible...” Seeing this, Ling Chen was at a loss for words. He had clearly seen the amount of damage that the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns had dealt to it. That sort of damage was enough to instantly kill it twice... it had obviously died, so why was it able to stand up again!?

Its ‘death’ had been traded with Xi Ling’s life. Now, Xi Ling had lost her life, and yet it had stood up again, how was Ling Chen meant to accept this!

However, immediately, Ling Chen sensed that something was different. The mountain-like skeleton was very close to him, and the vibrations from its voice still shook his spirit, but the pressure was definitely not as a great as before-at least, it was not so overwhelming that Ling Chen couldn’t breathe.

While still wondering what was going on, Xiao Hui transmitted the information about the skeleton into his mind.

[Undying Will-Warring Palace Skeleton]: Type: Undead,

Level: LV20, Grade: Celestial, HP: 250,000. A gigantic skeleton that resides in the heart of the Forest of Bones, its history is unknown. Although it is a skeleton, but in order to protect its master, it still has a bit of consciousness that has not dissipated yet. The skeleton's body is also filled with powerful energy. Although it had been slain by the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, but its undying will caused its spirit to recover and revive. However, its power has been greatly decreased.

Passive Abilities: Fairly high Defence and high Attack Power. Its attacks also have large AOEs. Negates 50% of Darkness Damage, and is immune to all status effects except freeze, burn, and petrification, and is also immune to all stat debuffs.

Attack Skills:

[Earth Splitting Slash]: Uses its sword to slash at the ground, causing the ground to split. Knocks any target within 10 metres flying, and has a 10% chance to induce 2-4 seconds of stun. Usage frequency: High.

[Earth Shaking Stomp]: Uses its feet to stomp on the ground, causing severe tremors. Any targets within 30 metres will be knocked down. The tremors have a 70% chance to add 5 seconds of stun and 20% reduction to Movement Speed. This attack does no damage. Before activating, the user will raise its left or right foot high in the air. Usage frequency: Fairly high.

[Baleful Shield]: Creates an invisible shield reflecting 10% of all physical damage. Automatically activates when HP is lower than 50%, and automatically deactivates when HP is greater

than 50%.

[Thundering Heavens and Shaking Earth]: The user releases its battle power, and swings in a destructive arc, destroying everything within 50 metres. The attack has a slight destruction effect. When activated, the attack will charge for 10 seconds, and after usage, the user will not be able to move for 15 seconds. The skill has a certain chance to activate when the user's HP is less than 10%, and can only be used once per day.

.....

The skeleton before him was still the same Warring Palace Skeleton. Although it had been slain by the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, its persistence and the girl's calling caused it to use the last of its energy to revive. Although it was still the same level, its grade had dropped to Celestial.

All of the Warring Palace Skeleton's stats had greatly dropped after falling to Celestial grade. There were also many differences to its skills. Its skill "Absolute Darkness" had disappeared, and the Earth Splitting Slash and Earth Shaking Stomp had both become significantly weaker. The AOE of its only attacking skill apart from its ultimate, Earth Splitting Slash, had been reduced from 20 metres to only 10 metres!

Ling Chen was definitely able to deal with this sort of AOE!!

The Warring Palace Skeleton's revival caused the black-clothed

girl to smile. She then floated upwards onto its hand. With the semi-spirit girl in one hand, and the giant sword in the other, the Warring Palace Skeleton took its first step after being revived...

Boom!

Its steps still caused tremors on the ground, as it gradually neared Ling Chen. Ling Chen clasped the weak Xi Ling close to him, and narrowed his eyes... the Warring Palace Skeleton in front of him was no longer as scary, and was no longer impossible to defeat. Although his peak condition was not able to break through the Defence of the Heaven's End Warring Palace Skeleton, there should be no reason to not be able to break through the Defence of the Celestial grade Warring Palace Skeleton.

"Very good... are you giving me... a chance to avenge Xi Ling?" Ling Chen muttered in a low voice as he put away his weapons. He took a step back, and then used his fastest speed to escape. Right now to Ling Chen, there was nothing more important than Xi Ling's safety. What he needed to do right now was to find a safe place and save Xi Ling.

A single step from the Warring Palace Skeleton was equivalent to ten of Ling Chen's steps. Under normal circumstances, Ling Chen would not have been able to outrun it. However, after Ling Chen ran out from the area where the Eerie Castle had originally been, the Warring Palace Skeleton stopped chasing him.

Ling Chen exhaled in relief. After escaping from the Warring Palace Skeleton, he had not chosen to return back to town, but kept running until he reached the place where the skeleton army

had been. After the skeleton army had been completed annihilated by Xi Ling, it was completely peaceful here. Ling Chen carefully put Xi Ling down, then asked, “Qi Yue, immediately tell me how I can rescue Xi Ling.”

“Put her back in the Pet Dimension for now. After returning to the Pet Dimension, the speed at which her life is fading away will be reduced to the lowest rate, which can help her survive for a while longer.”

Ling Chen nodded, and put his hands on Xi Ling’s body, “Xi Ling, have a good rest… no matter what, I won’t let you die.”

Xi Ling turned into a ray of red light and returned into the Pet Dimension. In Mystic Moon, after creatures became pets, although their power would fall to that of a pet’s, but they would gain a special characteristic… which was that they could be revived after death (usually with penalties or costs). However, this right now could not save Xi Ling, but could only prevent her death for a little while longer.

“Since little master wants to know, I’ll just tell you. Although, after I tell you, perhaps little master will be even more disappointed.” Qi Yue slowly said.

Ling Chen: “…..”

“Although Xi Ling did not immediately die, and her life will only fade slowly in the Pet Dimension, she cannot hold on for too long. To my knowledge, there are only two ways to save her.”

“Two?”

“That’s right, two. One of the methods is to reignite the flames of her lifeforce, causing her to come back to life. However, because she has already used her special revival method before, reigniting the flames of her lifeforce will be incredibly difficult. Despite this, there is a way-not only will it reignite the flames of her lifeforce, but will even cause her flames to grow even stronger.”

Qi Yue’s explanation caused Ling Chen’s heart to start beating faster. He couldn’t hold it in anymore, and impatiently asked, “What method is it?!”

“The flames Xi Ling uses are rootless flames, which are the strongest flames in the world. The only flames that are strong enough to reignite Xi Ling’s rootless flames are the Flames of Life. There are only two beings that are able to release this sort of flame-the Golden Crow and the Vermillion Bird. The Golden Crow has already disappeared for a long time, so the only way is to find the Vermillion Bird, one of Mystic Moon’s guardian beasts.”

“Vermillion bird... Vermillion bird...” Ling Chen muttered this name, then asked, “So that means if I can find the Vermillion bird, then ask it to reignite the flames of Xi Ling’s lifeforce, then we’ll be able to save Xi Ling?”

Qi Yue replied steadily, “It’s just like that. Indeed, the Vermillion bird has that power, however... even if little master can find the Vermillion bird, it might not be willing to reignite the flames of Xi

Ling's lifeforce."

"Why is that?"

"Because in order to reignite the flames of Xi Ling's lifeforce, the Vermillion bird must use the flames of its own lifeforce. This means that after reviving Xi Ling, it will die and forever disappear. Moreover, the Vermillion bird must be willing. Even if little master can defeat the Vermillion bird, getting it to willingly give up its life would still be incredibly difficult."

Ling Chen: "....."

Ling Chen felt as if a bucket of cold water had been poured over him, extinguishing all of the hope he had.

The Vermillion bird was one of Mystic Moon's guardian beasts, and was only inferior to the five Saint Destroyer Beasts. Just finding it would be incredibly difficult for humans, and even if he did find it... could he really convince it to give up its life for a being that was completely unrelated to it, much less a player's pet?

Ling Chen unconsciously twisted his hands together, and closed his eyes. He exhaled, and asked, "What's the other method?"

Ling Chen's reaction was completely within Qi Yue's expectations. No one would think that such a method was even remotely possible. "The second method is even more difficult than the first method. The first method has a slight possibility, whereas

this is just a legend... little master, have you ever heard of the ‘rising back from the dead’ of the legends?”

“Rising back... from the dead?” Ling Chen was very surprised

“The second method is the ‘rising back from the dead’ of the legends. However, life and death are both two things that are fundamental to the balance and order of this world. Rising back from the dead is something that is going against the heavens, and thus is taboo. If it really happened, it would greatly affect the natural world and the law and order of the world. Thus, in theory, rising back from the dead is impossible, and should not exist anyways. However... in the ancient times, there was a legend... the legend said that as long as four ritual elements are gathered together, one will be able to produce the effects of ‘rising back from the dead’.”

“The four necessary ritual elements are... the blood of the Moon Goddesses, the soul of the Demon Emperor, the tears of a Shura, and... the Scourge of the Moon.”

Chapter 163 - Determination

“The Moon Goddesses represent utmost sanctity; the Demon Emperor represents utmost evil; Shura represents utmost hatred. The blood of Moon Goddesses, the soul of the Demon Emperor and the tears of a Shura combined with the Scourge of the Moon, or the Lunar Scourge, can produce an effect that can go against the heavens, change the natural laws and let a being rise from the dead. However, because this is something that goes against the heavens, as well as the natural laws, the probability of this being a reality is very small. As such, this legend might just be a legend, and has never actually been tried by anyone.”

“Moreover, even if this legend is true, finding and obtaining each of those ‘ritual elements’ is more difficult than even reaching up to the heavens. With how powerful the Moon God clan is, it is almost impossible to obtain the blood of the three Moon Goddesses. As for the Demon Emperor, he was vanquished almost ten thousand years ago, so how can one obtain his soul? And lastly, Shura’s tears... Shuras are the rarest beings, as they are not ‘born’, but rather ‘made’. Moreover, once a Shura appears, widespread catastrophes and massacres occur; who would be able to obtain the tears of a Shura? The reason I told little master about this legend was because the fourth element is in your hands... however, the current Lunar Scourge is not enough, as it needs at least twelve orbs.”

Compared to the near impossible first method, this second method was an even more difficult method that was based off a legend. Normally, only those who were crazy would believe that rising from the dead would be possible. After listening to Qi Yue talk, Ling Chen thought for a while, then asked, “How long do you think Xi Ling can hold out for?”

Xi Ling considered his question, then answered, “If she stays in the Pet Dimension, perhaps two months. If she is called out, then maybe three days.”

“Two months…” This came as a pleasant surprise to Ling Chen. After all, Xi Ling was a powerful being, so she wouldn’t die that easily.

“Good!” Ling Chen had already made a resolute decision “Then, as long as I can find the Vermillion bird within two months, then there’ll be hope!”

“…Realistically, there’s only a very small chance of that happening, doesn’t little master understand at all?” To most people, Ling Chen’s decision would have sounded like the rantings of a madman. To find the Vermillion bird within two months… being the sovereign of fire, the place where it resided would definitely be a place of extreme flames. Other beings definitely would not be able to survive in such a place. Thus, even if he could live to see the Vermillion bird, he would have to convince it to destroy itself in order to save Xi Ling… no matter from what perspective, this just sounded ridiculous.

“I know,” Ling Chen calmly replied, “However, in order to save me… Xi Ling sacrificed herself twice for me! Thus, I am determined to do anything to revive her, no matter how small the chances are! Since there is even a slight possibility for the Vermillion bird to save her, I will definitely find the Vermillion bird within two months! Qi Yue, you’ll help me right? With your knowledge, I’m sure you know where the Vermillion bird is!”

Qi Yue maintained her silence.

Although she had only known Ling Chen for a short period of time, she knew what sort of person he was. He would often do or say things that normal people definitely would not do, and as soon as he made a decision, he would not go back on his word. As such, she did not ask him to give up, but rather said in a soft voice, “Well, you’re my little master, and I completely belong to you. I’ll tell you everything you want to know, so, when do you want to go find the Vermillion bird?”

“Not right now.” Although he had made a crazy decision, that didn’t mean he was going to hot-headedly rush off in search of the Vermillion bird immediately. Being the sovereign of fire, just a tiny spark from it was enough to kill Ling Chen over a hundred times. If he wanted to find the Vermillion bird, as well as confront it, he would need to quickly raise his own power. Ling Chen turned around, and looked towards the heart of the Forest of Bones. His face darkened and said, “Right now, is time for Xi Ling’s revenge.”

Xi Ling’s power was, without a doubt, incredibly strong. Apart from super strong bosses, she would go around insta-killing everything. With Xi Ling farming for him, even with the “Heaven’s Jealousy” debuff, Ling Chen’s levelling speed was still many times faster than other peoples’. However, this had caused him to develop complacency, as well as dependency on Xi Ling. As such, even if he wasn’t able to truly save Xi Ling, he would at least rely only on himself.

Exactly like how he was about to now go and face that gigantic

skeleton by himself.

"Xiao Hui, let's go!"

Gripping Soaring Cloud and the Zephyr Blade in his hands, Ling Chen did not leave the Forest of Bones, but rather returned towards the direction of the Eerie Castle.

Not too long after, the Warring Palace Skeleton appeared in his line of sight. It was still within the boundaries of the Eerie Castle. When Ling Chen had escaped, it had not chased him out of the boundaries. Evidently, it was unwilling or unable to leave the boundary it had been guarding for such a long time.

"I will definitely… kill you!!!"

Ling Chen charged towards the Warring Palace Skeleton. The moment he entered the boundaries of the Eerie Castle, the Warring Palace Skeleton had become aware of his presence. It raised its sword, walked forwards, and sent a "Earth Splitting Slash" towards Ling Chen.

When it was still Heaven's End grade, even if Ling Chen was on his Cloud Stepping Mare, he would not be able to safely dodge it. However, the Earth Splitting Slash of the Celestial Warring Palace Skeleton only had an AOE of 10 metres rather than 20 metres. Thus, the AOE was a whole 4 times smaller!

Boom!!!

As the giant sword smashed into the ground, tremors rippled out and large stones were thrown into the air behind Ling Chen. The AOE of the Celestial grade Earth Splitting Slash was just small enough for Ling Chen to avoid. Although he had barely dodged it, he did not receive any damage.

The amount of time between each attack was fairly long. In those precious seconds, Ling Chen rushed to its feet and sent two “Ling Tian Bursts” towards its feet.

Bambam!!

The sound of the two Ling Tian bursts striking the skeleton’s feet sounded like they were hitting bedrock. The two damage numbers that resulted from the attacks also caused Ling Chen to frown. Although the Warring Palace Skeleton had fallen to Celestial grade, he was still unable to break through its Defence without using buffs.

“Soul Sacrifice!!”

With Soul Sacrifice, Ling Chen’s attack power considerably increased, and he once again sent two “Ling Tian Bursts” towards the Warring Palace Skeleton.

Boom!Boom!

-5040，-5051 !

The two sounds were completely different to those from before, and even caused the Warring Palace Skeleton's left foot to be pushed back by about one metre. His attacks with Soul Sacrifice had completely ripped open the Warring Palace Skeleton's Defence, and Ling Chen was able to immediately calculate its Defence from the damage figures... its tough body could block up to 1,000 base attack damage. That meant as long as Ling Chen's base attack power was above 1,000, he would be able to break through its Defence without using Soul Sacrifice.

This conclusion caused Ling Chen to understand that even though the skeleton was now Celestial grade, the current him still could not defeat it... although he had Soul Sacrifice, this giant skeleton had its Baleful Shield. It would automatically activate when the Warring Palace Skeleton's HP fell below 50%, and 10% of all physical damage would be reflected to him. Even if he could survive until he reduced the Warring Palace Skeleton's HP to 50%, he would not be able to break through its Defence without Soul Sacrifice, and if he did use it, his HP would be reduced to '1', and the reflected damage would immediately kill him.

The Warring Palace Skeleton's stare locked in on him. It raised its sword, and prepared to bring it down on him. Ling Chen looked up, worked out the sword's trajectory and prepared to dodge. However, at this moment, a black glow appeared around his body, and his entire body felt as if it had been weighed down by heavy weights.

"Ding... you have been restricted by the "Darkness Lock", your Movement Speed, Attack Speed, Jumping Ability and Evasion have been lowered by 30% for 30 seconds, no effect on your Hit Rate."

“Ding... you have been restricted by the “Underworld Lock”, you cannot use any active skills for 30 seconds.”

There wasn’t just the Warring Palace Skeleton, but also the semi-spirit girl!!

The semi-spirit girl’s Darkness Lock and Underworld Lock were all activated so stealthily that even Ling Chen did not notice until he had been restricted by both. By the time the sword was descending towards him, he had already determined that with how heavy his body felt and the decrease in his speed... it would be impossible for him to dodge this strike. He frowned, and raised his right hand.

“Moon Shadow!”

The black light of the Moon Shadow expanded out from Ling Chen, and covered himself and the giant sword, fixing it and the Warring Palace Skeleton in place. Ling Chen put away his weapons, and ran as fast as he could out of the boundaries of the Eerie Castle.

If Xi Ling was still able to battle, all it would take would be three Red Lasers to kill the Celestial grade Warring Palace Skeleton. Although its Baleful Shield could reflect physical attacks, it could do nothing against magic attacks. Without Xi Ling by his side, Ling Chen was forced to rely on himself to defeat it.

Standard hundreds of metres outside the Eerie Castle, Ling Chen

stared at the giant skeleton, and took out a teleport scroll while saying, “In not too long, I’ll be back. Next time I come here will be the time you die!”

After speaking, he shattered the scroll and left the Forest of Bones.

Chapter 164 - Official Beginning

There were two conditions Ling Chen needed to fulfil in order to defeat the Celestial grade Warring Palace Skeleton. The first was to be able to break through its Defence without Soul Sacrifice. The other was to either increase his own Movement Speed, or at least find a way to nullify the semi-spirit girl's Movement Speed debuff. If he did not have even one of these prerequisites, he would not be able to defeat the Warring Palace Skeleton.

Returning to Azure Dragon City, Ling Chen mulled over these two prerequisites. If he wanted to raise his base attack power to 1,000, without changing his equipment, he would need to be a least LV30. Moreover, compared to increasing attack power, increasing one's Movement Speed was much, much harder. Right now, with his Wind Chaser Stone, Wind Chaser Bandanna and Wind Riding Boots, his Movement Speed without a mount was 143, which was far above any other player's. If he wanted to raise his Movement Speed, it would be almost impossible.

In that case, he had to find a way to nullify Movement Speed debuffs.

He had spent too much time in the Forest of Bones, and needed to go take care of Ruo Ruo.

In the evening...

Ling Chen pushed a wheelchair with a smiling Ling Shui Ruo on it. The light from the sunset reflected a red glow onto her face,

causing her to look extraordinarily beautiful. Although she could now walk by herself, Ling Chen didn't want to tire her out too much, and still insisted on taking her out on her wheelchair.

"How are you, Uncle Li?"

Passing by the community's Police Station, Shui Ruo greeted the old uncle standing outside. Uncle Li immediately smilingly replied, "Good, good... taking a walk? You look much better today, haha."

Ling Shui Ruo's face was filled with a healthy red glow, but he did not dare to come close to her. Isrock, which had almost become a synonym for 'death', was no small matter. As such, Ling Chen and Ling Shui Ruo were known by every person in the community, but no one dared to approach them. Most families that had lived around them had already moved away, and no one wanted to rent the surrounding residences, much less buy them.

They all respected Ling Chen for being so loyal to his little sister with Isrock disease, but they could only do so from a distance. Most people were not even willing to get too close to Ling Chen, as they were not sure if he had been infected with the Isrock disease himself.

Ling Chen did not tell anyone about Ling Shui Ruo's recovery. Although people would continue to shun and avoid them, at least no one would come to disturb them. Otherwise, with how pretty Shui Ruo was, many men would try to approach her.

The cool breeze blew over the outskirts of the town...

This was a place where Ling Chen and Ling Shui Ruo often came. Green fields were sprawled as far as the eye could see, and only very rarely did other people come here. People were usually so engrossed in their real life work or in the virtual world that they rarely came out to appreciate the beauty of nature. Every time they came here, the pure air would make them forget about all the unpleasant things, and, facing the heavens and earth, they would silently pray... perhaps it was their prayers that caused the heavens to have pity on them, and granted them their desires.

This time was different to all the other times they had come together. This time, Shui Ruo had left her wheelchair behind, and walked hand in hand with Ling Chen on the soft grass... from the calm and elegant way she walked, no one would be able to guess that she had been diagnosed with one of the most terrifying diseases known to mankind. They walked for ten metres, a hundred metres, two hundred metres... Shui Ruo continued to walk steadily, and did not even get out of breath.

Shui Ruo's current condition caused Ling Chen to feel so happy that he felt his heart would burst.

At this moment, Shui Ruo suddenly let go of Ling Chen's hand. Ling Chen thought she was about to fall down, and hurriedly went to catch her. Instead, what he saw was her joyfully skipping forwards, and effortlessly ran a short distance. Under the glow of the setting sun, she raised both hands to her lips and shouted, "I, Ling Shui Ruo, want to be with big brother... forever and ever!"

No matter if it was in the past, or in the present, this was her

biggest dream.

Ling Chen smiled. Only in front of Shui Ruo would he show such a warm smile. He walked in front of Shui Ruo, and copied her actions. He faced the sunset and shouted, “I, Ling Chen.. want to be with Ruo Ruo forever and ever!!”

The wind carried their voices very, very far away. Under the sunset, their shadows were mingled together. Perhaps it was because the heavens did not want to see them separated that Shui Ruo was given a new chance at life.

“Ruo Ruo, of course I’ll be with you forever. This time, there’s nothing that can take you away from me. Before, my reason for living was for revenge. However, now, the reason I live is to see you living happily. Everything else is not necessary.”

The second day.

Ling Chen and Shui Ruo came together to the small house that belonged to Heart’s Dream. When they entered, Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su’Er and Mu Bing Yao were all there. As soon as they entered, they were surrounded by the other girls.

“Big brother Ling Tian, the person who completed the Forest of Bones Quest was you, wasn’t it? It was definitely you, right?” Xiao Qi impatiently asked. Although she was asking him, all of the girls’ eyes were clearly saying “apart from you, who else would it be”.

“We wanted to ask you immediately, but we were afraid that we’d be disturbing you.”

“It was indeed me.” Ling Chen replied. He was very aware that the Forest of Bones Quest could only be completed once, so he knew that him completing the Quest on the very day it was released was bound to cause great commotions.

“So it was you!” After hearing Ling Chen’s confirmation, Xiao Qi became very excited. She grabbed Ling Chen’s arm, and said proudly, “Did you know, yesterday my big brother told me that even the Yan Huang Alliance’s strongest twelve-man team led by Long Tian Yun, which even had the Sword Emperor and the Flame Emperor, was not able to complete the Quest! Big brother Ling Tian, you’re simply too amazing! You must be even more powerful than the Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor combined!”

Xiao Qi’s eyes sparkled as she gazed at Ling Chen in admiration. As the ‘Princess’ of the Battle Alliance, what she liked was different to most other girls. Since she was young, she had worshipped strong figures such as the Sword Emperor, who were like legends to her. But now, a person who was much, much stronger than the Sword Emperor was standing right in front of her, and had become her companion. She was simply bursting with happiness. Deep down in her heart, she began to secretly admire this man in front of her even more than her own big brother, whom she had looked up to for her whole life.

“Hmm, perhaps.” Ling Chen scratched his nose... He wouldn’t tell Xiao Qi that without Xi Ling’s help, he would not have been able to complete the Forest of Bones Quest either.

Yun Meng Xin followed up, “Yesterday when the Yan Huang Alliance had not been able to complete the Quest, many people saw the defeated team come out. Thus, most people concluded that at the current stage of the game, it was impossible to complete the Forest of Bones Quest. Afterwards, when the announcement sounded that someone had completed the Forest of Bones Quest, the Yan Huang Alliance…”

“The Yan Huang Alliance felt that their strongest team’s reputation had been tarnished, and was unable to remain calm?” Ling Chen finished, while coldly laughing.

Yun Meng Xin nodded her head, “From yesterday to today, the Yan Huang Alliance has been trying to investigate who was the one who completed the Forest of Bones Quest, and you were their primary suspect. Before, when your name appeared again and again in system announcements, the Yan Huang Alliance didn’t pay too much attention to you. After all, this is just the beginning stage of the game. However, yesterday, you completed a Quest that even their strongest team was not able to complete. If it really was you… then they would definitely keep their eyes on you.”

“As they wish.” If anyone found out that the Yan Huang Alliance was paying attention to them, they would either be filled with joy and pride, or shock. However, Ling Chen remained completely calm, and changed the topic, “How did the ‘Collect Red Crystal Grass’ Quest go?”

“That Quest was super hard!” Xiao Qi immediately said, “It took us ages to find the Forest District, and then we searched for

suuuuch a long time in the Forest District. Luckily, with big sister Bing Yao leading the way, we didn't run into any danger. After looking for a long time, we only found one. However, with more and more players going there, finding any will become even harder in future-who knows when we can finally find three."

"It took me a long time to find three as well... try looking around the mountains, there are probably more there." Ling Chen replied. The second Quest had been very frustrating, even for him... but what had been even more frustrating was that all of his money had been stolen by that damn Lucky Cat.

"Around the mountains?" Xiao Qi's eyes shone, and she immediately committed Ling Chen's advice to memory. She, as well as all of the other girls in Heart's Dream, all trusted Ling Chen immensely.

"There's something I also need to tell you," Yun Meng Xin said slowly, "Tomorrow, the Money Exchange System will be opened."

"Tomorrow?" Ling Chen was a bit shocked. This was somewhat earlier than he had expected.

"To be precise, it's tomorrow at 12:00AM. The conversion rate will be the same in every country, and in China it will be 1 Chinese Yuan = 1 Gold. The major banks are all getting ready for the exchange. When the time comes, everyone will have a Funds Card that will be bound to their identity, as well as their bank account, allowing easy and quick conversion of funds. As such, from tomorrow onwards, this game will truly 'begin'. With the inflow of gold, different powers will start to rise, and strong players will

become even stronger with their increased financial support. The levelling speed of players on average will increase as well." Yun Meng Xin said, her expression serious. Even if Heart's Dream had Ling Tian and Mu Bing Yao, without any funds, they would never be able to compete with the big powers.

Chapter 165 - Moonlight Treasure Box

The real starting point for Mystic Moon players would begin on the day when the exchange system between real life currency and in-game currency was officially established. This was a fact that all players couldn't deny. Starting tomorrow, a storm will soon rise and disrupt the everlasting calm of the "Mystic Moon" world.

"And so because of this, the two major guilds, Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty are both quickening their footsteps to obtain a Guild Creation Token. Their current focus is not training, but to find a strong BOSS monster as soon as possible in order to obtain guild creation tokens, or to purchase them from other players. At the starting stages of any virtual game world, the biggest contest is always for the ownership of the first guild because if someone obtains this first guild position, it will never change unless destroyed. Although first and second only differs by one rank, they are two completely different concepts. Therefore, the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty will strive as hard as they can to obtain this "first" position. It is no exaggeration to say that if some lucky player manages to obtain the first guild creation token now and sells it to either Yan Huang Alliance or Skyfall Dynasty, he would have enough profit to spend unsparingly for the rest of his life," Yun Meng Xin said slowly.

"Is it really that extreme?" Ling Chen tapped his chin.

"It definitely is!" Xiao Qi nodded firmly, "If you've ever played virtual games you would know how frightening the value of the first Guild Creation Token is, especially as the value of the second token is far off from the first token. Also, due to the fact that the guild leaderboard only shows ten names, the first ten Guild

Creation Token all have rather high values. After the tenth, the value of the tokens drops drastically."

"Is that so?" Ling Chen had never been involved in the establishment of guilds and alliances, hence his limited knowledge in the area. From Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi's description, this first token's value seemed to be higher than what he had imagined...a lot higher. He thought for a moment and suddenly said, "Hey guys, if we, Heart's Dream, became the first guild, what would happen?"

"Huh?" Several girls simultaneously exclaimed. This was something they had never thought about.

"It'll make our reputation skyrocket to the very top..." Yun Meng Xin said, but shook her head immediately after, "But even if it really is possible, we definitely cannot do this; to dare let our position be above of Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty while we don't have the actual ability. Although it's dazzling for a while, the result will definitely be..." she trailed off.

"We'll be destroyed by those major alliances and get replaced, right?" Ling Chen finished. Right now, Xing Meng's members only consisted of the few of them. It would literally be child's play if any of the alliances with easily a hundred, if not millions, of members were to destroy Heart's Dream right now. He had asked that question knowing that Yun Meng Xin would have that answer, which, in itself was irrefutable. Although his and Mu Bing Yao's individual abilities are strong, large forces like Yan Huang Alliance could easily destroy Heart's Dream if they wished. It would be impossible for them to be saved even if there were 100 copies of

him.

Xiao Qi lifted her face slightly, her expression full of yearning, “But if we really became the first guild, even if it was for just a day, or a moment, it’s still something that’ll make me lose sleep over excitement. Even if we were destroyed immediately, if it actually happens, we would still be remembered by all players for a long, long time. The only thing is, if Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty couldn’t find the token even when they have so many people, we have no chance of finding it before them. Oh yeah, big brother Ling Tian, why did you ask that question just then? Is it possible that...”

Ling Chen smiled and shook his head, “I was just saying. Okay, currency exchange opens tomorrow, Meng Xin should have lots of important things to prepare right? I also need to go challenge the final Mega Quest. Well, let’s not delay, call me if anything comes up.”

“Alright! Before we make preparations, we need to finish the quest for finding Red Crystal Grass first! Big brother Ling Tian, I’m cheering for you. You’re super powerful, so you can definitely finish the fourth Mega Quest! I have faith in you!” Xiao Qi proclaimed, waving her fist at him to cheer him on. After completing the Forest of Bones Quest, every player would try imagining just how messed up the fourth Mega Quest, whose difficulty level is labeled as “too high to be measured”, would be. But that’s all they would ever remain; just imaginings, since throughout the whole China, Ling Chen was the only person who can carry out this quest. One thing’s for sure, this quest was definitely messed up to the extreme.

“You can do it, big brother Ling Tian,” Su Er said to Ling Chen softly from her position next to Xiao Qi. She punctuated this encouragement by imitating Xiao Qi’s earlier actions.

Ling Chen gave Shui Ruo the Starry Robe from the Collect Red Crystal Grass Quest and the White Bone Chain from the Forest of Bones. “Ruo Ruo, you should stay with them today,” he told her, “and pay attention to safety. If anything happens, you must call me immediately, understood?”

“Okay big brother, you have to work hard as well!”

Yun Meng Xin and the girls went off to continue their unfinished second Mega Quest. Ling Chen walked out of the residential area and went on to the streets. Feeling his backpack, he clenched his jaw, depressed... All his gold coins were taken by the Lucky Cat back at the Forest Region, leaving him penniless. The monsters in Forest of Bones didn’t even drop a copper coin, hence the amount of money he had in his backpack since yesterday had been...0. The saddest thing was that he wouldn’t even be able to afford a potion.

“Should I go rustle up some money?” Ling Chen said to himself. However, without Xi Ling, he lacked one of the main constituents of his no-cost, no-risk, high-return money making machine. If he did all the work himself, not only would the efficiency be much lower than with Xi Ling, but he would also have to waste large amounts of time and energy...

Buying a mount was a must, and it had to be the best Cloud Stepping Mare. This way, he would have more of a chance when he once again challenged the Warring Palace Skeleton. It was also

absolutely crucial that he had a mount for the Moon God Ruins Quest, but a single Cloud Stepping Mare cost a whole 20,000 gold pieces...

After pondering for a while, he turned around and walked towards the Mayor's residence.

"Mr Mayor, I've lately been a bit short on gold coins, so would it be possible for you to lend me a few?" Ling Chen got straight to the point, "I'll return them within three days along with the interest!"

"Lend money?" The Azure Dragon's Mayor gave him a doubtful stare. Borrowing money from the dignified Azure Dragon's Mayor? This was the first time in his life that someone had asked him, "Alright," he conceded, "how much?"

"Um, one hundred thousand gold coins," Ling Chen didn't dare to say more.

"Damn! One hundred thousand?! My monthly salary is barely ten thousand gold coins. My son is also suffering from a serious illness at the moment, right when I need money the most..."

Ling Chen's mouth twitched, and immediately interrupted him, "Dear Mr Mayor, don't complain about poverty in front of me. You just took two million gold coins from me two days ago, two million! Don't you dare tell me you've already used it all up this quickly. I'm only borrowing one hundred thousand gold coins!"

“You have to know, the land I rent out to you doesn’t belong to me and those gold coins are all turned over to the higher authorities. It has absolutely nothing to do with me…”

“Alright,” Ling Chen grudgingly took out his lease contract, “I’ll borrow ten thousand gold coins from you and I promise to return twenty thousand within three days. This should be fine right? If you’re worried, I’ll leave my land lease here as collateral. It’s worth twenty thousand.”

Deep down, Ling Chen’s had already cursed the Lucky Cat one hundred and eight thousand times. If it wasn’t for the cat, he wouldn’t have had to go as far as to borrow money from the stingy Mayor.

“Borrow ten thousand and return twenty thousand within three days?” The Azure Dragon’s Mayor’s eyes suddenly lit up, becoming brighter than light bulbs. Seeing Ling Chen’s sincerity, he smiled and said, “Do you swear you’ll fulfill your promise?”

“Definitely.” Ling Chen vowed solemnly and nodded.

“Alright, then I’ll lend you two hundred thousand. Remember to return four hundred thousand within the next 3 days, hah! Come, come, hand over your land lease. Here’s the gold coins. Oh hehe, take it take it, there’s no need to be polite with me.”

Ling Chen was speechless.

Walking out of the Mayor's Residence, Ling Chen had successfully gained a loan of two hundred thousand gold coins, but he now also had a debt of four hundred thousand.

First he arrived at the mount shop and spent twenty thousand gold coins on a cloud-stepping mare. Then he went to the tool shop and replenished his supply of purple potions. Purple potions were considered luxury items at this stage and a single bottle cost five silver coins. One bottle is said to instantly replenish four hundred magic points. At this current stage, it is impossible for physical occupations' MP to reach 400, however Ling Chen is obviously an exception and his MP so far has graced 590.

After that, Ling Chen held up a map and after some searching, he finally found a toy store at the corner of the shopping street.

The toy store sold various styles and types of toys. Of course, this included all sorts of dolls and puppets that mainly appealed to younger female players. After all, men have no use for such feminine objects. After Ling Chen walked into the shop, many splendid things crossed his eyes. He walked straight to the section where they sold dolls.

Here, there were dolls in an array of colours, sizes and shapes. Ling Chen was dazzled by their variety. Price wise, the cheap ones cost only a few gold coins while the more expensive ones added up to several thousand gold coins. Who knew what special effect they had or what material these were made out of.

“Hello, dear player, may I ask what type of doll you seek?” Seeing Ling Chen looking at those dolls with such a serious expression, the beautiful sales woman came up and smiled.

The half spirit girl in white bones forest was hugging a bunny doll that was all worn out. Who knew from whence she found it. He thought for a while but he didn’t even know what types the girl liked so he just picked a few with relatively low prices. “This one, this one, and this one.”

“Alright, the total is one hundred and twenty gold coins.”

One beautiful puppet doll, one fox doll and one teddy bear. Ling Chen put them away in his back pack, preparing to leave. Unknowingly, he saw a little box placed in a glass cabinet in the middle of the toy shop. The little box was light silver and gave off such a warm glow that you couldn’t help but gaze at the light. Ling Chen’s gaze stayed on the little box for a while before asking, “What’s this little box?”

The sales woman smiled and said, “This is the prized treasure of our shop. It’s called “Moonlight Treasure Box””. When the box opens, it releases a ray of light as beautiful as the moon. Also, within the moon light lies a surprise!”

“Surprise?”

“Would you like me to show you, sir?” The sales woman said with a smile as she walked over and stood in front of the glass cabinet. She had, in fact, already shown it to many players, but

because of its price not being conventionally affordable, there has yet been a single player keen to purchasing it.

Ling Chen nodded without refusal.

Chapter 166 - The First Guild Creation Token

The box was gently opened by the beautiful sales woman. As she lifted the lid, soft, silver light spilled out. This light was so natural, it was as if it came from the full moon itself, not a trace of artificialness did it possess. The sales woman smiled, “Its beautiful radiance is intoxicating. Facing it, you will forget all your sadness and unhappiness. Mister, if you stand in front of it, you can see the world’s most beautiful picture within its gentle moonlight.”

After she finished, she moved away from the box.

See the world’s most beautiful picture? Ling Chen laughed, the moonlight box is beautiful indeed, but to him, the world’s most beautiful picture will only ever be Shui Ruo’s smile. He walked over, stood in front of the opened box, and casually looked over. The pale moonlight shone into his eyes and an image appeared, gradually becoming clearer and clearer… It was of a girl, blooming with a beautiful face, long curled eyelashes and a sweet, blessed smile.

“Ruo Ruo…” Ling Chen couldn’t help but whisper out loud. The image within the moonlight had turned out to be Shui Ruo’s smile.

After hearing what Ling Chen let out uncontrollably, the sales woman smiled, “I believe you must have seen the most beautiful picture. Am I right? According to legends, dwarves made the moonlight box with the purest moonlight-stone and the world’s only piece of heart-calling stone. Not only does it radiate the most beautiful moonlight, it also reflects the image of the person one loves and longs for the most. Therefore, to every single person, the

image they see in the moonlight box is the world's most beautiful image."

For Ling Chen, that was indeed the world's most beautiful and flawless picture.

"How many gold coins is this moonlight box?" Ling Chen asked. This moonlight box was certainly magical, much similar to the objects that appeared in fairy tales. A moonlight box like this couldn't be called a toy. If he could obtain it, it meant that even when Shui Ruo wasn't beside him, he would still be able to see her wherever and whenever.

Almost every player who had seen the mystical moonlight box before had felt a pressing urge to buy it and had immediately asked for its price. Ling Chen was no exception. The sales women didn't find this strange at all. She simply smiled and revealed its price, "There is only one moonlight box throughout the entire Mystic Moon Land. You could say that it's one of the most valuable treasures in the land. If you would like to buy it, sir, you'd have to pay five hundred thousand gold coins."

Five hundred thousand gold coins....

That's not just expensive, it's simply expensive.

Although, considering its magic, this price doesn't seem to be too much. Ling Chen believed that there must be countless players who wanted to purchase it, but because pretty much no one could take out five hundred thousand gold coins, no one had bought it so

far. After today it would be different, once the currency exchange system is established, those who wished to buy it would definitely rush here and purchase it.

Without another word, Ling Chen rushed out of the toy store and headed straight towards the Mayor's residence.

"Mr Mayor, lend me more money!"

"Are you still returning double the amount within three days?"

"That's right! Returning double within three days. My land lease I swapped for two million is still in your possession, I wouldn't forfeit that no matter what."

"Alright, alright, how much are you borrowing?"

"Five hundred thousand!"

"Deal! Take it, take it. Don't be polite with your brother. Remember to return 1.4 million within three days hah!"

Walking out of the castellan mansion, Ling Chen's debt had now risen to 1.4 million, and he would have to pay this off within three days. Although from his expression, he didn't seem too concerned. After getting five hundred thousand gold coins from the Azure Dragon's Mayor, Ling Chen quickly returned to the toy store and took out the five hundred thousand gold coins he just obtained.

“Here’s five hundred thousand. This moonlight box, I’m taking it.”

Spending so much money to buy a ‘toy’… this was the first time that Ling Chen did something like this. The money used to buy the toy was even obtained through usury. However there wasn’t the slightest hesitation or doubt when he made the payment. Five hundred thousand gold coins in exchange for seeing Shui Ruo’s smile anytime anywhere, this was simply the world’s most worthwhile bargain to him.

After selling the shop’s prized treasure, the beautiful saleswoman beamed, “Mister, congratulations on purchasing the world’s most beautiful treasure, I believe that you will never regret it. Also, because you spent over a hundred thousand at our shop, you have become our shop’s honorable platinum customer. If you shop at our store in the future, all merchandises will be 15% off, I’m looking forward to your next visit.”

Walking out of the toy store, Ling Chen held the moonlight box in his hands. He couldn’t help but to open the box again and again, and seeing Shui Ruo smiling in the gentle moonlight, he couldn’t help but smile as well. Ling Chen was so unwilling to move his sight from the box let alone close it and so focused he was at looking that he didn’t actually do so until his head bumped into the wall.

Ling Chen spent the whole morning walking around Azure Dragon City, ordering equipment and crystals at a consignment shop. Lastly, he arrived at the Central Auction House.

Not long after Ling Chen exited the Azure Dragon City Auction House, shocking news came out of the speakers, causing an instant uproar amongst all the players.

“Tomorrow at nine o’clock in the morning. Azure Dragon City Auction House will hold its first large-scale auction to all players……”

This news caught all the players’ attention, but didn’t cause as much commotion compared to what came next. The crucial news was the list of items that would be up for auctioning.

“This auction definitely won’t disappoint anyone and will auction off items that astonish you. High grade items that you dream of having as well as a Guild Creation Token will be up for auction……”

Guild Creation Token. Those 3 words were enough to cause a tidal wave.

This wasn’t news from an auction house set up by players, but Azure Dragon City’s Auction House, which meant it couldn’t possibly have any falseness. Tomorrow this auction house would put up the first Guild Creation Token for auction! This was the first news concerning Guild Creation Tokens that players had received so far.

That’s right, the first Guild Creation Token would soon appear……and at an auction no less!! If anyone could win this

Guild Creation Token, they would become China's first official guild in the Mystic Moon world!

The Guild Creation Token only dropped from BOSS with grades no lower than Lord level, the chance for a Guild Creation Token to come from a Lord Boss lower than LV20 was very little. Some players even thought it impossible to obtain a Guild Creation Token from a Lord Boss. As such, no one had even heard of a Guild Creation Token appearing, not even the Yan Huang Alliance or the Skyfall Dynasty. The Azure Dragon City Central Auction House was only open to players, which meant that this Guild Creation Token also came from a player... all the players could not imagine as to who would have had such heaven-defying luck as to obtain the first Guild Creation Token so quickly. Even an idiot would know that the first Guild Creation Token could fetch them an astronomical price. The big guilds were all fighting like rabid dogs over the first Guild Creation Token. For them, the fame from being the first official guild was a lot more important than money.

Countless players began speculating which master currently possessed the Guild Creation Token, and which force it would later belong to,

"This news is true?" after hearing the news, Long Tian Yun's expression completely changed, his eyes flashing.

"Absolutely true. This news is from the Central Auction House, it definitely wouldn't be fake. I believe that it won't be long before all players know."

"A Guild Creation Token appearing this fast, I actually did not

expect this.” Yun Tian Long squinted slightly. He supported his chin with hand and pondered for a while before saying in a low voice, “Do you know who put up that Guild Creation Token up for auction?”

“Don’t know. We tried asking, but the auction house does not reveal any information about the auctioneer.”

“This isn’t important at the moment.” Long Tian Yun’s expression became serious, “Tonight, the currency exchange system will be established, go do the preparations now. In tomorrow’s auction, we must win that Guild Creation Token…… Heh, I’d like to see who dares to fight over the first guild position with us.”

“Understood, we have already started preparing. On another note, the land east to the central square is in fact idle, it should be specially freed out by the system for players.”

Long Tian Yun nodded and said deeply, “Then, you should know how high the value for that land is, now go find and negotiate with the related NPCs. No matter how expensive it is, be sure to obtain the land.”

“This…… young master, I just asked about the ownership of that land before, and was told the land has been temporarily leased to a player. As to who, I was unable to find out.”

“En?” Long Tian Yun showed a surprised expression. After the surprised moment passed, his eyebrows dropped, “If it was

obtained by an NPC, it's not that strange, but if it's obtained by a player, that would be too abnormal. Right now gold coins are so scarce, that to get that land, even if it's a temporary rental, it would cost a lot of money. Who can possibly take down that piece of land……could it be the Skyfall Dynasty?"

"No, the Skyfall Dynasty can be ruled out, because they're also investigating who has that land. Also, I sent people to secretly check the top ten forces, there were no signs of them occupying that land."

Long Tian Yun pondered for a while, after some time, he waved, "Whoever the land belongs to, it'll be clear after the currency exchange system establishes. The person who has the land won't just leave it as it is and when the time comes, no matter what we have to do, we must obtain that piece of land. If we can occupy that position, we will have the perfect start in this world. But we'll put this matter aside temporarily. Right now we need to put all our energy into competing for the Guild Creation Token tomorrow. We must obtain it!"

"Understood, young master, I'll handle it right away."

In the quiet lobby, Long Tian Yun was the only person. He was sitting in a chair, fingers slowly knocking the cold hard table, making a "dok dok" knocking sound. He maintained the same motion for a long time and seemed to be thinking deeply about something.

"Looks like, someone wants to know what it feels like to step above us, Yan Huang Alliance." Long Tian Yun's eyes became slits,

his lips revealing a calm, yet sinister smile.

Next to him, a figure fully wrapped inside a cape stood unmovingly, just like a grey statue.

Chapter 167 - Moon God Ruins

After having lunch with Shui Ruo, Ling Chen prepared dinner for her and left it on the dining table. Following on from the momentum from the Forest of Bones, Ling Chen decided to immediately attempt the Moon God Ruins Quest. After starting the Quest, he had no idea how long it would take him.

Returning to the Mystic Moon world, Ling Chen looked over the description of the “Moon God Ruins” Quest again and again. He had originally wanted to find the Azure Dragon’s Mayor to ask for some extra information about the Moon God Ruins. However, after thinking about it, he decided against it. After all, the Moon God Ruins were another of the forbidden areas, so even if he asked, he wouldn’t get much out of it.

Ling Chen had experienced many dangers in the Forest of Bones, and had even lost Xi Ling. From the description of the Moon God Ruins, it had been made out to be vastly harder than the Forest of Bones. Ling Chen knew that the smartest choice was to wait until he was at a higher level with better equipment. Otherwise, going into this significantly harder Quest without Xi Ling would be equivalent to suicide.

However, if Ling Chen waited, he would no longer be Ling Chen. Being overly cautious and indecisive was not his style. At the same time, the greater the difficulty, the greater the rewards. If he completed the Quest after waiting for a long time, the rewards he would receive may not be any help to him anymore at that stage of the game.

The Moon God Ruins Quest was one that directly transported the challengers to the location of the Quest. After looking at the description one more time, he said in a low voice, “Xi Ling, wait for me to complete this Quest… afterwards, I’ll head to the Vermillion Bird City in the south to find the Vermillion bird!”

Afterwards, he selected the transport option, and after a white light flashed, the scenery around him changed.

“Ding… you have arrived in the danger zone ‘Moon God Ruins’”.

Moon God Ruins: Ten thousand years ago, a catastrophe called the “Shura’s Devastation” occurred. Because of mankind’s constant modernisation and updating of history, this event has long since been forgotten by the humans. However, the Moon God Clan will never forget this catastrophe. This is because in that event, thirty Moon Gods were slain by the Shura. After a tragic and horrifying battle, the Moon God Clan finally killed the Shura at the place the thirty Moon Gods had died at. However, because of the severity of the battle, the surrounding area was reduced to ruins. Afterwards, that place was called the “Moon God Ruins”, and the bodies of the Moon Gods that had been slain, as well as the Shura, were buried there. From then onwards, the Moon God Clan has never entered that place. Afterwards, sounds of mournful weeping often came from the Moon God Ruins, and it was rumoured that it was the spirits of the deceased Moon Gods that were making the sounds.

This was the description of the Moon God Ruins on the map Ling

Chen had bought from Qian Gun Gun.

The ground he was walking on was not stable or flat, making it difficult for Ling Chen to keep his balance. Before he could register his surroundings, a disgusting rotting odour blew into him, making him feel like throwing up. Luckily, he held his breath in time, and resisted the urge to throw up.

Moon God Ruins... it was indeed a place that had been completely and utterly ruined.

Although the area was quite spacious, it was unnaturally dark. Looking up, a thick layer of dark clouds covered the sky, creating an oppressive atmosphere. The ground was covered with clusters of grey and black vegetation, making it difficult to find even a single patch of uncovered, flat ground.

After a long time, Ling Chen finally began to become accustomed to the smell of this place, and his breathing became normal again. Although almost ten thousand years had passed, the aftermath of the intense battle still remained. The various ruins caused one to shudder imagining how fearsome the battle had been, as well as how incredibly powerful the Shura and the Moon Gods and Goddesses had been. Moreover, from the map, it seemed that the Moon God Ruins covered an area of hundreds of kilometres!

Indeed, hundreds of kilometres... it was not from a natural disaster, but rather one Shura and the four other strongest beings in the Mystic Moon world of that time.

It was evident how overwhelmingly powerful the power of a Saint Destroyer was.

“Xiao Hui.”

Ling Chen called out Xiao Hui, and began to walk through the Moon God Ruins.

The feeling of walking on the ground in the ruins was extremely unpleasant, but compared to the smell, it was almost negligible.

Ling Chen continued to walk forwards with Xiao Hui. After walking for ten or so minutes, all he could see was still only ruins, but now there were occasionally some bones scattered on the ground. These bones most likely belonged to the unfortunate creatures that had been caught in the crossfire of the battle. With such a large radius of destruction, the number of innocent beings that had died was simply immeasurable. The bones that had remained were extremely fragile-simply touching them would cause them to disintegrate into dust. After all, it was extremely hot and humid here-completely different to the Forest of Bones’ chilling atmosphere.

Mixed with the rotting stench in the humid wind, grey particles of sand were continuously blown into Ling Chen’s face as he continued to walk in this overcast expanse.

Ling Chen stopped walking, and looked behind him. No matter how hard he looked, he couldn’t see any difference between the landscape behind him and the landscape in front of him. No matter

if it was humans or animals, one would find themselves hopelessly lost in such an environment. Ling Chen took out his map, and reconfirmed his position, then started frowning...

What was going on...

After entering for such a long time, he had not seen any monsters, nor had he heard of any 'mournful crying'. Xiao Hui also had not shown behaviour that was indicative of danger. So what was the objective of this Quest?

He was now supposedly to the south of the centre of the Ruins. After having a look at the map, he put it away, and said "Xiao Hui, let's walk towards the north."

With Xiao Hui leading the way, Ling Chen was not worried at all about getting lost-Xiao Hui's performance in the Forest of Bones had been simply phenomenal. Xiao Hui led the way with Ling Chen following behind, and they advanced towards the north, slowly heading towards the centre of the Ruins.

No matter if he successfully completed the Quest or not, he could only enter the Ruins once. That meant that if Ling Chen left the map for any reason, it would count as him giving up on the Quest, and would not be given a second chance. As such, since he started the Quest, he would have to keep going until he completed it. After walking for another half an hour, something completely unexpected happened, resulting in Ling Chen suddenly stopping.

Normally, the Lunar Scourge on Ling Chen's wrist would be

disguised as a normal bracelet by Qi Yue's power. Only when he was using the Lunar Scourge's skills would it revert back to its normal appearance. However, the Lunar Scourge suddenly let out a faint black glow, then changed back to its true appearance. The Gemini Orb and Sagittarius Orb embedded in the second and ninth slots respectively also released their lights.

Ling Chen stood still, and raised his right hand, staring at the Lunar Scourge. At the same time, Qi Yue's voice sounded out in Ling Chen's mind, "Little master, where are we?"

Qi Yue's surprised, yet lazy voice made her sound like she had just woken up from a pleasant dream. Ling Chen immediately answered, "This is the Moon God Ruins... what's going on with the Lunar Scourge? Why is it suddenly glowing?"

"Moon God Ruins... the place where the Shura had fallen..." Qi Yue muttered to herself. Out of the four Quests, the last one was located at the Moon God Ruins, so she was not too surprised, "It's probably because the Lunar Scourge detected something."

"Detected something? Could it be another God Orb or... Saint orb?"

Surprisingly, Qi Yue rejected this idea, "Probably not. Sometimes when the Lunar Scourge is close to God Orbs or Saint Orbs, it will not react at all. Even if it did react, only the corresponding socket for the Orb close by would light up. To be honest, I don't know what the Lunar Scourge has detected either. Perhaps if you keep walking you'll find an answer."

Qi Yue was also curious as to why the Lunar Scourge was acting in such a way. As such, Ling Chen did not bother continuing asking any question, and continued to walk forwards with Xiao Hui leading the way. As he walked, he would occasionally look at the Lunar Scourge. He wasn't sure if he was imagining things, but every time he advanced a certain distance, it seemed that the Lunar Scourge would glow a little brighter.

Ling Chen had been sent to the Moon God Ruins by the system. As for how he would be sent out, that was not his main concern at the moment. The ruins in front of him seemed to stretch out forever, and without knowing it, Ling Chen found that he had already been walking for two hours.

Since he had entered the Moon God Ruins, he had not encountered a single monster, nor any other type of danger. In front of him were just dark and gloomy ruins.

Taking out his map, he found that he was very, very close to the centre of the Ruins, and the black glow on the Lunar Scourge became extremely intense.

It seemed that he had not been imagining things before. The closer he walked towards the centre, the more intense the light from the Lunar Scourge became. It was evident that he was getting closer and closer to the thing that the Lunar Scourge had detected.

"Why... is there demonic aura here?" Qi Yue's voice once again rang out in Ling Chen's mind.

Chapter 168 - Undead Moon God Representative

“Demonic Aura?” Ling Chen heard what Qi Yue said as he was walking. In this place where the bones were piled high like sand in a desert, the presence of such a dark aura was not unusual.

“Yup, and this demonic aura isn’t the usual kind of deathly aura released by the undead, but instead is…”

Wooo~~~~~

Ahh~~~~~wooo~~~~

The hot and humid air suddenly became cold, as the weeping wind howled into Ling Chen’s face. Xiao Hui stopped moving and stayed by his side, staring ahead at the endless ruins. Ling Chen also stopped and frowned as he looked on; the Lunar Scourge on his right hand was releasing an unusual dark glow.

This weeping, was it the cry described in the task?

The eerie sounds in the icy darkness made it seem as though a female ghost was crying, unsettling Ling Chen. He concluded that this wasn’t just a sound made by the wind, but indeed a woman’s cry.

There was someone… in the Moon God Ruins!?

He didn't have to wait around for long, as less than 30m in front of him, a fast moving figure was slowly appearing. It looked like a standard female zombie, with long legs and a shawl of dark hair that shrouded her face. Her infected body was completely black, with long white drapes covering her body and legs. Extending from her back were two black wings, one spread open, and the other broken in half.

The wind was becoming increasingly cold, and the weeping sound was getting closer and closer, now as if it was right beside him. At this point, he knew that the source of the cry was coming from this female creature, but he could not decipher whether she was a ghost or a person.

"Moon God Representative!?" Qi Yue exclaimed in bewilderment.

"What? Did you say she's..."

"The Moon God Representative can all use their power to fashion a pair of white wings. Although her wings are broken and filthy, those are definitely the wings of a Moon God Representative. You can tell from their shape. She must have been one of the Moon God Representatives that were killed during hard-fought victory against Shura. It's possible that this is what's left of her spirit; that's why it continues to stay in the Moon God Ruins..." She was talking about the Moon God, but then suddenly said: "Wait no! The Moon God Representative's powers are always imbued with Holy energy; even if there was some spirit residue after death, it would be so holy that it would not turn into a ghost. Furthermore, the body of the Moon God Representative before us seems to be

emanating a purely demonic aura…”

Ling Chen was at a loss as to what Qi Yue was saying, but he was in no mood to try and understand her right now. Before him was a weeping female ghost that was floating towards them. He could sense the danger rapidly approaching.

[Undead Moon God Representative]: Type: Demon, Undead, Level: 20, Grade: sub-Celestial, HP: 99999, This was one of the Moon God Representatives that died 10,000 years ago, in the most hard fought victory against Shura. Its body was not completed destroyed and was protected by the Moon God, so it never rotted away. 100 years ago, an unknown demon energy was poured into the dead body, transforming it into an undead puppet.

Passive Abilities:

1, Dark attack resistance 50%, immune to instant death, dark, curse, confusion, sleep, berserk, and poison and all stat debuffs.

2, There is a demonic aura surrounding the body. All non-dark creatures within 20m take 50 damage per second, Light element creatures take 100 damage per second.

3, There are still remnants of the Moon God Representative’s power, physical damage resistance 35%

Active Abilities:

[Voice of damnation]: Lets out a terrible weeping, causing all non-undead creatures within 30m to have a 100% chance to be “cursed” for 10 seconds. Physical Attack, Magic Attack, HP, evasion, critical strike and pierce rate are reduced. EXP gain, and SP gain are reduced to 50%, chance of critical hits and damage received increased by 50%, cast rate: once every 30 seconds.

[Demonic Toxic Gas]: Releases a poisonous mist in a 15m radius around a target area. Does not deal damage, but puts any target into a 10 second “poisoned” and “cursed” state. When poisoned, you lose 10% HP per second. Cast rate: high.

[Undead Moon God Representative Slash]: Targets up to 3 targets within 3m ahead of the Undead Moon God Representative. 5% chance of poisoning, 5% chance of cursing, 5% chance of suppression. Cast Rate: High.

[Undead Moon God Representative Dance]: Affects all targets within 30m of the Undead Moon God Representative, dealing great damage. Also has a 15% chance of instant death. Before casting, the body will be fly up and begin to dance, releasing the intense power of the Moon God. Extremely difficult to avoid. Cast Rate: low.

Sub-Celestial grade: the grade between Lord and Celestial. The Undead Moon God Representative before them could not compare to a real Moon God, but her passive and active abilities were still

frighteningly strong. When Ling Chen saw the information about her, Qi Yue had seen as well. What she suspected before was right, so she became even more cautious: “If it really has demon powers, could it be a demon from a certain clan, or just some demon that was unexpectedly hiding here that used demonic manipulation to reanimate the Moon God’s body to avoid being destroyed by her??”

Ling Chen didn’t think as much as Qi Yue; summoning his weapons, he was already fully alert and ready for combat. As the Undead Moon God Representative approached, red digital numbers appeared over his head. As long as he was within 20m of her, he would lose HP like this. A HP loss at this rate was still acceptable, but it did limit his combat prowess... that is, he was unable to use Soul Sacrifice, which stopped him from ending this battle quickly.

For a second, his eyes glimmered, and Ling Chen rushed forwards, closing in 10m towards her. The Undead Moon God Representative flicked her hair back, revealing a pale white face and letting out a shrill cry. Ling Chen’s ears went numb for a while, and his body stopped moving.

“Ding... you have been affected by curse, Magic attack, evasion, critical strike and pierce rate. EXP gain, SP gain are all decreased by 50%. Rate of taking a critical hit and taken damage increased by 50%, physical attack and hit rate unaffected.

Ling Chen’s occupation was War God, so he was unaffected by physical attack debuffs, and with the Sagittarius Orb on his body, any kind of hit rate reduction was also nullified. He was fortunate so, as the Undead Moon God Representative already had a 35%

resistance against physical attacks. A further 50% debuff would have greatly increased the difficulty of this battle.

After using the Voice of Damnation, the Undead Moon God Representative stopped, before she suddenly released a cloud demonic toxic gas, which flew towards Ling Chen. He took a step in the wrong direction, and so had to flip his entire body in order to narrowly avoid the surprise attack. Rushing forwards with 2 steps, he entered within the 5m range of Ling Tian Burst, and putting his hands together, he unleashed the attack.

-410, -408.

The Undead Moon God Representative's Defence was not ridiculous like the Warring Palace Skeleton. She was a sub-celestial super boss, but even if Defence wasn't her specialty, she was still much stronger than a level 20 Lord boss. With the 35% physical resistance, 2 hits from the Ling Tian Burst didn't even do more than 1000 damage.

The attack speed of the Undead Moon God Representative was relatively quick as well. Even after taking an attack, she didn't move back in the slightest, but continued to float like the wind. When Ling Chen was within 3m of recovering his Soaring Cloud, she fired the Undead Moon God Representative slash forwards.

When the Undead Moon God Representative was casting her slash, she raised her hand. This was an obvious warning to her attack, so even if he was close, he didn't need to be afraid. For when she raised her hand, Ling Chen would already know it was coming and could easily move out of the way. It would be easy to

dodge the attacks and then quickly run past, hitting her with Ling Tian Bursts on the way.

781, -780.

However, the effects of the curse were not just for decoration; of the 4 times Ling Chen attacked, he hadn't crit even once. Ling Chen didn't worry about this, as he had sufficient vision and the ground was effectively flat. So, in the absence of any interfering external factors, he could completely focus on relentlessly attacking his target without any thought. With the current conditions he was like a God.

The demonic toxic gas, Undead Moon God Representative Slash... the Undead Moon God Representative's weeping was always in the air, sometimes light, sometimes sharp. All kinds of attacks were launched at Ling Chen, but they all missed. Ling Chen was like a shadow, weaving past the Undead Moon God Representative, who was unleashing a storm of attacks. The Lunar Scourge on his right hand was releasing a dark glow that would have been dazzling to anyone who was watching.

783, -779, -786, -1261 (Pierce ignores Physical Defence, rather than pure Damage Reduction)

The HP of the Undead Moon God Representative was quickly decreasing, but her rapid attacks had not stopped. Other than the curse on Ling Chen which wasn't making much of a difference, she had not landed a single attack. Ling Chen's body was as fast as the wind, as he darted around her body. The Undead Moon God Representative's normal attack was limited to the area in front of

it, which Ling Chen dealt with best. He continually changed directions, attacking and moving quickly, occasionally taking a potion to refill drained HP. Eventually, the Undead Moon God Representative's HP was reduced to half.

780, -1562,

She was finally angry, rotating her body as the power of the Undead Moon God Representative began to take the form of grey swords, which she was ready to fire out around her. The range of the dance was a 30m radius, and when she started dancing, Ling Chen retreated as quickly as possible. In such a short period of time, he couldn't escape the danger zone; the swords were starting to be fired out behind him. He quickly turned around, looking at the swords that were rushing towards him, and unexpectedly decided to face the onslaught.

The swords flew close by Ling Chen's ears, body, and hair. He moved an uncountable number of times in a second, and emerged unscathed after all the of the swords were finally behind him. Two Ling Tian Slashes were cast on the Undead Moon Goddess who was still in the middle of her spell.

-780, -1562

Chapter 169 - Moon Goddess Light Dress

The Undead Moon God Representative had already used all of its spells at least once, yet there wasn't even a single mark on Ling Chen's clothes. Now that Ling Chen had seen all her skills, the whole process would be easier as she would just repeat the routine from before. Eventually, he would be able to completely deplete the Undead Moon God Representative's HP.

"ahwooooo!!"

The Undead Moon God Representative moved sideways like a ghost. Ling Chen was about to cast Ling Tian Slash, when he heard Xiao Hui's cry from the side. Feeling a chill within, he concentrated on quickly casting his attack before he sensed a dangerous wind approaching him from behind. Without a moment's hesitation, he quickly retracted his hands and turned his body to the side, quickly moving two body lengths to the right.

Hu...

A grey wind blew past Ling Chen, obviously aware of his position... this was one of the Undead Moon God Representative's abilities—Demonic Toxic Gas.
Are there more Undead Moon God Representatives!?

"Careful!"

The danger had not been averted; Qi Yue let out a cry of caution as another Demonic Toxic Gas cloud flew from the right, hitting

exactly where Ling Chen had just stopped moving. This time there was no way he could avoid it; it hit him squarely in the front, and a mass of grey gas expanded from the surface of his body.

"Ding... you have been poisoned, you will lose 10%HP per second for 10 seconds."

50, -50, -50, -105;

The moment he was hit by the Demonic Toxic Gas, he clearly understood his situation... other than the current Moon God Representative whom he had put to half HP, there were another two with the exact same appearance. They even had the same undead properties, the same long, covering hair and filthy, broken wings that fluttered behind them.

On the map, stronger bosses were less likely to appear. In the area surrounding Azure Dragon City, encountering a high level boss was incredibly rare and only a handful of players throughout all of China had seen a Celestial Boss. However, in these Moon God Ruins, 3 sub-Celestial bosses had appeared all at once!

These three undead Moon God Representatives surrounded Ling Chen, who stood in the middle of their formation. Despite his poisoning, he did not panic, but the seeing the damage values above his head made him furrow his brow.

In one second, 4 damage values would appear, making him lose 255HP per second! At this rate of HP loss, he would be dead within a minute. This was due to the poison, stacking with the passive

abilities of the three Undead Moon God Representative, which would each cause him to lose 50HP per second, totaling to a loss of 150HP per second.

If a player with low HP was standing here, there would be no need to even attack; they would run out of HP before they even got close.

Facing one Undead Moon God Representative had already been tough, let alone three.

Now finally understanding his own situation, Ling Chen didn't hesitate any longer. Glancing around, he noticed a gap through which he could escape, and quickly rushed towards it. Right now, he needed to stop his offensive strategy and leave the vicinity of the three Undead Moon God Representatives, otherwise, the damage over time would kill him.

Ling Chen's burst of speed could not be matched by anyone; the three Undead Moon God Representatives were about to coordinate their multi-directional attack, but for a moment there was a blur in their vision. Suddenly, they had lost their target. Two seconds had yet to pass, and Ling Chen had already reached the edge of the range of the three. He then took out a yellow potion to regain some of the HP that he had lost, then summoned the Cloud Stepping Mare and climbed on, rushing north as his HP continued to drop.

Instructing the Cloud Stepping Mare to further increase its movement speed, Ling Chen easily escaped the 20m range of the three Undead Moon God Representatives. All life draining effects disappeared except for the one from the Demonic Toxic Gas, but in

the end he barely survived with 26HP. As the cool down for the yellow potion just reset, he hurriedly gulped it down, gaining back some more of the lost HP. The mare continued to push ahead, leaving the three Undead Moon God Representatives further and further behind.

The Moon God Ruins were not particularly suitable for a mare to run on, because the ground was uneven and could easily cause it to trip. This was also the reason why Ling Chen had been walking up until now. Before this incident, if he had been riding the Cloud Stepping Mare up till now, he would have been able to easily escape the three Undead Moon God Representative's area of effect. Even though it had taken so much effort just to take one down to half HP, he would still happily face it; defeating a boss of this level, not to mention three of them, would yield a significant reward.

The poison had dissipated but Ling Chen had not slowed down, widening the gap between him and the three Undead Moon God Representatives. Over this time he had slowly restored his HP back to full, and while sitting on the Cloud Stepping Mare he looked back towards the three. Although they were chasing him together, they weren't aligned side by side; the one which he had taken down to half health was standing at the front, while the others followed in a row behind. Their attributes were completely different, but their movement speed was exactly the same, allowing them to maintain their formation as they were chasing him.

The distance between him and the three grew until it finally became greater than the farthest Undead Moon God Representative's aggro range. She stopped chasing him and began to aimlessly wander about. Ling Chen eyes narrowed, memorizing

this distance, and after a few seconds, the second Undead Moon God Representative also halted. Now there was only one that was still in pursuit, the one that appeared first.

Now, he slowed down, allowing the Undead Moon God Representative to get nearer and nearer. When he was close to the 30m distance, he suddenly jumped off the Cloud Stepping Mare, and retuned it, then rushed towards the Undead Moon God Representative.

780, -782, -779……

785, -3880 !

He could ignore her Voice of Damnation, but other than that, there were only three attacks she could use… the quickest attack she could cast was the Demonic Toxic Gas. When he was close she would use Undead Moon God Representative Slash, and for a long range attack she would use Undead Moon God Representative Dance. Before casting any of these attacks there was an obvious indicator which Ling Chen was already familiar with. While facing three of them would be impossible, facing one would be relatively stress free.

-780, -782, -779…

The damage values were like snowflakes dancing above the Undead Moon God Representative's head. Although she was fairly resistant towards physical damage, Ling Chen's base damage was not low. One cast also hit twice and even if she had 10,000HP, she

would not last long. Her HP was depleting quickly, from half to one third and quickly to one quarter… the two other Undead Moon God Representatives were far away wandering around carefree, completely oblivious to what was happening,

-785, -3880!

A magnificent purple critical hit damage value appeared, emptying the last bit of her HP. Hitting her with a final Ling Tian slash, she was launched back onto the cold floor of the ruins where she lay motionless. From the body, emerged a dark gas that quickly dissipated in the air. By the body, a set of white, faintly glowing clothes appeared, greatly contrasting her dirty body and the grey ground.

“Ding… you have successfully defeated a level 20 sub-celestial boss ‘Undead Moon God Representative, SP increased +800, Fame +800.”

The article of clothing was exceptionally luxurious and good looking; it even felt amazingly silky, like a young girl’s skin. This piece of clothing was hard to rank amongst the 7 occupations. It was not unlike something a fairy would wear; clean and pure, floating through the clouds.

[Moon Goddess Light Dress]: Type: cosmetic whole body garment (Upper body + lower body). Equip Requirements: A pure heart. A beautiful outer garment that the Moon God Clan wears. It has been blessed by the Goddess of Order and seems to have a mysterious protective power. Occasionally, this would

be graciously given to someone on the Continent, someone whose heart was pure and innocent.

Effect: When worn, immune to all debuffs.

After reading its properties, Ling Chen was deeply surprised: these turned out to be… the clothes that Moon Gods wore!

This was not some conventional armor, but a cosmetic one that was worn over normal equipment. Cosmetic equips were generally for the beauty of female players, as once worn, they could completely cover any ugly heavy armor while not affecting its properties. Cosmetic equips could be customized at the tailor to their personal specifications and could also be made there. They do not affect your attributes at all though; they were for the sake of beauty. However there were some legends in the world that speak of cosmetic equips with an additional effect, but other than Ling Chen, no one had ever seen one of these before.

But now, here it was right before him in his hands… this Moon God's dress did not only add any old effect, what it added was an immunity to all debuffs!

There was only one condition… it required someone to be of pure heart.

Although the Undead Moon God Representative had only dropped this item, it was something that he was greatly pleased with. The cosmetic equip's effect was so powerful that it made it

priceless. Ling Chen had also decided who its first owner would be... naturally, he chose Ruo Ruo.

He looked around, seeing the other two Undead Moon God Representatives in the distance. Ling Chen became visibly eager... they could drop something like the Moon Goddess Light Dress.

Chapter 170 - Moon God Hairpin

The Lunar Scourge had been constantly releasing a dark glow; and in its current state, looked like an all-consuming abyss that grew bigger and deeper. It was getting closer to something, but what exactly?

After examining the Lunar Scourge, Ling Chen focused his attention and rushed towards the second Undead Moon God Representative, entering her aggro range. Alerted, the Undead Moon God Representative began to move towards him, which prompted Ling Chen to back up and lead her far away in order to evade her attacks and retaliate with both weapons.

And in twenty minutes, the body of the Undead Moon God Representative laid in front of Ling Chen.

“Ding... You have successfully defeated a level 20 Sub-Celestial boss ‘Undead Moon God Representative’, SP increased +800, Fame +800.”

With his abilities and equipment, taking down a single Lord boss was no problem; taking down a Super Boss between the Lord and Celestial grades was also relatively easy for him. When his abilities and equipment have been upgraded, Ling Chen’s strength would have been on par with a Celestial Boss.

The Undead Moon God Representative dropped an item upon its death, but its Moon God Light dress wasn’t the item that Ling Chen was looking for, but rather a small shiny item. He stepped

forward to pick it up, holding it in his palm. Bearing the resemblance of an exquisite hairpin covered in pearls, it emanated a small warm radiance into his hand.

> [Moon God Hairpin]: One of the many beautiful hairpins symbolic of the Moon Gods, and worn by every Moon God Representative. Moon God Representatives face severe punishments upon losing the hairpin, and thus do everything in their power to ensure that it is not lost to any other being. Within it contains a little amount of Moon God power, which allows the wearer to bypass the forbidden area around the Moon God Palace.

"Eh?" The item description came as a surprise to Ling Chen. Like the Moon God Light Dress, the hairpin belonged to the Moon Gods. But the Light Dress could be given to another with a pure heart whereas the hairpin could not be passed on. The Moon God Clan would definitely punish anyone who was found to be in possession of a hairpin. What was more interesting however, was its ability to allow the wearer to bypass the forbidden area which led to the Moon God Palace! It was imperative that this kind of item must not fall into the hands of other beings.

Should a human from the Forgotten Continent somehow acquire such an item, he probably would have taken it to be a holy item of worship. There was no way he would take it to the Moon Palace, even if he did have a hundred times more courage than he had already. The Moon Palace was a holy land that held Mystic Moon's strongest clan – the most revered in all of Mystic Moon. It was not a place that could be accessed by ordinary people. And even with

the Moon God Hairpin, an ordinary person would barely have enough strength to get near the palace. There wasn't a difference between entering and suicide when Moon Gods were all True Gods or Demigods.

Anyone who possessed the Moon God Hairpin only needed common sense to realise that it is a potential time bomb, and should be immediately returned to the body of the Moon God Representative. But Ling Chen kept it anyway, putting it in his bag. He then turned around, and rushed to attack the last Moon God Representative. "Aren't you worried that you might get discovered by the Moon God Clan?" Qi Yue asked.

"Of course I'm worried," replied Ling Chen, "but throwing it away will be show that I'm afraid of them. Now that I have it, it's better to keep it on me. Who knows, maybe I'll use it one day."

Qi Yue laughed. "As time passes Young Master, I find myself taking a liking to your personality more and more. But the young master need not worry about carrying the hairpin – your great storage space would make it hard for it to be detected, even by a Moon God." The incredible softness of her voice was so relaxing it caused Ling Chen to almost get hit by one of the Representative's attacks.

After taking care of the previous two Representatives, the third one was a piece of cake. Altogether, they awarded Ling Chen 2400SP and the peacefulness in the surrounding area was restored. Even though the weeping disappeared with the triumph of slaying the three Moon God Representatives, Ling Chen had still not completed the quest to investigate the source of the weeping.

Although a sub-celestial boss dropping an item was lucky enough, Ling Chen felt slightly down at the lack of any items dropped by the third Undead Moon God Representative. He turned his attention back to the Lunar Scourge. It was still reacting, but to what? Just as he was going to continue moving ahead, he turned around and caught sight of a dull metallic luster. The luster was not weak enough to be an illusion or a reflection, and upon further searching, Ling Chen found a cold key near the body of a Moon God Representative.

The key was of a dark colour and rusted. After falling onto the ground it easily blended into the colour of the ruins.

> [Old Key]: The Old Key is very old. It contains the power of the Moon God Clan and is unable to be destroyed by the forces of nature, preserving its state even now. It may be used to unlock the 7th shrine at the Moon God Palace, the “Water Celestial Shrine”.

Could it be that the Moon God Representative that lives in the 7^{th} shrine, the “Water Celestial Shrine”, is the Water Celestial God Representative? The Moon God Light Dress, the Moon God Hairpin, the Old Key – these items were originally held by Moon God Representatives. Every Moon God Representative could be a god of the humans, and their power, self-evident, could sustain them even ten thousand years after death. Obtaining their items were an extremely difficult task and yet, Ling Chen was able to acquire three of them.

Wasting no more time thinking about it, Ling Chen continued to push ahead, looking forward to battling more Undead Moon God Representatives so that he could gain a large amount of SP and valuable items.

In his half hour trek, Ling Chen didn't encounter a single moving creature. He took out his map and discovered that he was already close to the exact center of the area.

The dark glow coming from the Lunar Scourge was reaching an extreme point of darkness, covering half of Ling Chen's right hand with a pitch black colour.

"Do you know what it's reacting to now?" He asked.

"Nope," Qi Yue answered. "This is my first time seeing the Lunar Scourge reacting in such an aggressive manner. The Lunar Scourge has a sense of familiarity, so perhaps that's what it's reacting to. What's more..." There was a slight hesitation before she continued, "the Lunar Scourge seems to be calling something."

Ling Chen was taken by surprise. "Calling what?"

The sound of weeping rang aloud, and Ling Chen immediately looked up. A grey silhouette aimlessly floated about within his line of sight – another Undead Moon God Representative!

Ling Chen readied his weapons, took a deep breath, and rushed

towards it. The wandering Representative suddenly stopped in its tracks and rushed towards him, letting out a long, shrilling cry. Ling Chen suddenly slowed down. He was outside the normal aggro range, but how did this particular Representative notice him from an even further distance?

His eyes widened, and a chilly wind blew past him. In a mere few moments, the Undead Moon God Representative had closed the distance between them by half. Her dark hair and stained white dress – she looked like the previous three Undead Moon God Representatives except for one small detail: the wings on her back. They were not broken, but instead still seemed to be perfectly fine. The colour of her wings were also pitch black in comparison to the wings of the other Representatives which were only a dark shade.

> [Dark Undead Moon God Representative]: Type: Dark, Undead, Level: 30, Grade: Celestial. More information cannot be detected. Passive abilities and Active Abilities cannot be detected.

Chapter 171 - Demon's Laughter

The information that Xiao hui transmitted turned the joy Ling Chen felt at finding the Undead Moon God Representative to one of shock-indeed, this was an Undead Moon God Representative, but she was completely different to the three from before. The one in front of him right now was a LV30 Celestial Boss! It was much more powerful than the three from before combined together by many times!

-200, -200……

Ling Chen immediately stopped walking, but the damage figures above his head caused him to stare in dismay. She also had the demonic aura that the other Moon God Representatives had, but the damage over time was 4 times greater! Moreover, the AOE was a whole thirty metres!

Ling Chen definitely could not sustain this sort of HP loss. This meant that against this Dark Undead Moon God Representative, he had no chance of winning. Without a second thought, Ling Chen turned around and ran. However, the Dark Undead Moon God pursued him like a howling gale, and despite Ling Chen running at his full speed, the distance between them shrank to five metres. Suddenly, a sense of danger rushed at him from behind, causing him to instinctively jump up. A few rays of black light streaked through the area where Ling Chen’s body had just been. This was the Dark Undead Moon God Representative’s Undead Moon God Slash. However, no matter if it was attack speed or the range, they were both at least double that of the other Moon God Representatives’ from before. LV30 Celestial Bosses were simply incomparable to LV20 Celestial Bosses.

After jumping up, Ling Chen hit the ground rolling and called out the Cloud Stepping Mare simultaneously. Before he even regained his footing, he once again jumped up, and sat onto the Cloud Stepping Mare's back, and sped away.

-200,-200……

Even with a large increase to his Movement Speed, he could tell that he had not left the Undead Moon God Representative behind. The damage figures did not stop appearing over his head, so he hurriedly drank a yellow potion, recovering his HP. However, with such a rate of HP loss, even if he used the yellow potions at the right time every time, he would only be able to last for twenty or so seconds.

He turned around and looked at the Dark Undead Moon God Representative, and found that even with the Cloud Stepping Mare, their Movement Speeds were about equal. Thus, even if she couldn't catch up to him, he would still lose HP from her demonic aura. At this moment, he saw the Dark Undead Moon God Representative's abdomen slightly contract.

This was one of the Undead Moon God Representative's skills- Demonic Toxic Gas' set-up action!

Crap!

The biggest disadvantage for riding a mount was that although one's Movement Speed increased, one would not be as agile. After

all, one could never control a mount as well as they controlled their own body. Although the Demonic Toxic Gas didn't have any on-hit damage, it would apply the poison status to him. With the HP loss of 200 HP per second, then adding on a poison status, he would definitely die in seconds. Moreover, the poison was bound to be also a lot stronger than those of the Undead Moon God Representatives from before.

The Demonic Toxic Gas was the fastest attack skill that the Undead Moon God Representatives had. Ling Chen didn't even have time to think as he used both hands to propel himself off the Cloud Stepping Mare's back, and as he was falling, used his feet to kick off from the Cloud Stepping Mare's sides...

Woosh...

By kicking away from the Cloud Stepping Mare, Ling Chen was able to fall quite a distance away. Moments later, the Cloud Stepping Mare was hit by the Demonic Toxic Gas and died immediately.

"Ding... your mount 'Cloud Stepping Mare' has died."

It turned out that this Dark Undead Moon God Representative's Demonic Toxic Gas even applied on-hit damage, instantly killing the Cloud Stepping Mare!

Ling Chen, who was still on the ground, didn't even have time to mourn the loss of his 20,000 gold coins as he flipped his body up and quickly raised his right hand.

“Moon Shadow!”

An incredibly dark light burst out from the Lunar Scourge, covering the Dark Undead Moon God Representative and fixing it in place.

While the Undead Moon God Representative had been frozen, Ling Chen quickly glanced at his HP, then ran as fast as he could. He hoped that he would be able to get out of its aggro range before the 5 seconds ended. However, her aggro range was 70 metres. It was almost impossible to run that far in just 5 seconds.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds……

Ling Chen finally ran out of the AOE of the demonic aura, and his HP did not continue to drop anymore. This caused him to give a small sigh of relief. Immediately, he drank another yellow potion, causing his almost depleted HP bar to recover. However, after two seconds, the Moon Shadow’s effects would disappear, and he simply couldn’t think of a way to get rid of the Dark Undead Moon God Representative in the remaining time.

“Awoo…awoo!!!!!!”

While thinking, sounds of howling came from his side. This sound greatly surprised Ling Chen, and he almost walked into Xiao Hui, who had suddenly stopped.

Of course, this sound had come from Xiao Hui.

“Xiao Hui, what’s wrong?”

Ling Chen also stopped walking. Just as he asked Xiao Hui, his eyes widened.

“Awoo!!!”

“Awooo!!!!!!”

Xiao Hui’s four limbs were extremely straight and tensed up, and his claws dug deeply into the ground. His whole body arched up, and his grey fur was standing up completely, looking like strands of needles. He furiously gnashed together his teeth, and his eyes had a vicious look in them as he continued to howl.

Ling Chen realised, Xiao Hui’s behaviour indicated that a terrifying danger was coming nearer… no, was already near!

Moon Shadow’s effects disappeared, and the Dark Undead Moon God Representative began to charge at him again. Ling Chen turned around, but did not take any action. This was because a dark light shot down from the sky, and landed squarely onto the Dark Undead Moon God Representative’s body.

Bang!!!!

The dark light exploded on the Dark Undead Moon God Representative's body, and then disappeared as a black fog. After the black fog disappeared, the Dark Undead Moon God Representatives stopped moving, as if it was a puppet that had stopped. A dark and cruel laughter that sounded like it came from hell boomed down from above...

"Heheheheh... Heheheh..."

The sky suddenly darkened, and the wind stopped blowing. Apart from the hellish laughter, everything in the area was silent and still. Only the Lunar Scourge on Ling Chen's right hand shone with a piercing dark light. An aura so terrifying that it felt as if it was cutting through his bones descended from the sky like a mountain. Cold sweat burst forth across Ling Chen's whole body.

This... this is...

Ling Chen's teeth started to involuntarily chatter, and his body began to sway like a blade of grass in the wind. Under such overwhelming pressure, this was his body's natural reaction. Ling Chen slowly raised his head, and looked up at the sky... in the sky, a dark cloud was slowly moving, and released a demonic laughter.

This sort of pressure, this sort of aura, this trembling, this scenery, it all seemed so familiar...

It reminded Ling Chen of that time in Lonely Spirit Ridge when the War Demon Beast had appeared... no, it was even more terrifying than that time.

Could it… Could it be……

“I knew it! I thought of it as a possibility, but I never thought they would have the guts to come to this place… this place’s demonic aura, as well as the demonic energy controlling those Undead Moon God Representatives all came from it! One of the ten ancient demon beasts… with the strongest control over darkness, the Shadow Demon Beast!”

Ling Chen: “!!!!”

Before Qi Yue had called out, Ling Chen had already guessed this. This sort of terrifying feeling and aura was indeed that of one of the ten ancient demon beasts!

So it was hiding here!! A Mysterious God level demon beast!

“Heheheh… hahaha… What do I see here… hahahah…” The Shadow Demon Beast’s laughter was incredibly excited and arrogant, as if it had seen something it had desired for a long time, “That light just then, was the Moon Shadow only the Lunar Scourge has… that’s right… it’s the Lunar Scourge. It’s the Lunar Scourge that my Demon Clan has searched for unceasingly, hahaha… hahaha!!”

This voice caused Ling Chen’s heart to sink even further.

“It’s… over!”

It wasn't just Ling Chen's heart that sunk, but also Qi Yue's. This was because the scenario that they were dreading the most, only ten or so days after the Lunar Scourge had come into Ling Chen's possession, was occurring right before their eyes.

Before, in order to escape from the Dark Undead Moon God Representative, Ling Chen was forced to use "Moon Shadow." At that time, this Shadow Demon Beast must have been secretly observing Ling Chen. As one of the ten ancient demon beasts, how would it not recognise that item that everyone knew about back then, and how would it not know about its unique light and unique skills.

The Lunar Scourge had been exposed.

Ling Chen was very clear about the consequences of the Lunar Scourge being exposed. The Shadow Demon Beast's excited and arrogant laughter already told him the answer... knowing that he possessed the Lunar Scourge, the Shadow Demon Beast would risk everything to take it away from him. This meant that as long as he didn't hand over the Lunar Scourge, he would forever be pursued by the Shadow Demon Beast... no, all of the demon beasts! The Shadow Demon Beast was sure to tell all the other demon beasts about this information. What was even more terrifying was that if the Moon God Clan found out about it too, he would no longer be able to exist in this Mystic Moon world.

Thinking to here, Ling Chen, who had maintained his calm in the face of this overwhelming danger, felt droplets of cold sweat roll down his forehead.

Chapter 172 - Shura (1)

“What… do I do…”

Every single one of the ten ancient demon beasts were existences that all humans in the Forgotten Continent feared and could not stand up against. The Mysterious God grade was only one grade away from the highest Saint Destroyer grade. Ling Chen had almost been crushed just by the War Demon Beast’s pressure, and this Shadow Demon Beast in front of him was even stronger than the War Demon Beast.

At the Lonely Spirit Ridge, Xi Ling had made a terrible sacrifice in order to save him and destroy the War Demon Beast. However, Xi Ling definitely could not even come out right now, much less fight. Right now he was in the Shadow Demon Beast’s territory. There was nothing that would come to save him… being killed by the Shadow Demon Beast was something he could accept. After all, he didn’t even stand half a chance against a monster of the Mysterious God grade. However, the situation he was facing right now was even worse than death.

“I have already activated the spiritual mark Tao Tie left on you [TLN: See Chapter 47 if you don’t remember]. This way, it should be able to sense that you are in danger. However… this entire area is controlled by the Shadow Demon Beast. The signal might not be able to be transferred out to Tao Tie… plus, even if he does receive the signal, because of all the demonic energy here, it would be hard for him to find us quickly… but this is the only option we have. Otherwise, we’re completely finished.”

Back then, when Tao Tie had entrusted them with Xiao Hui, it had left a spiritual mark on him. If Ling Chen was ever in danger, if he activated the spiritual mark, Tao Tie would be able to sense it and come to his aid. Indeed, this was his last hope.

"Will Tao Tie be able to defeat the Shadow Demon Beast?"

"Since they're both Mysterious God grade, it'll be hard for one to defeat the other. Although Tao Tie is able to defeat the Shadow Demon Beast, it definitely won't be able to destroy it. As long as the Shadow Demon Beast isn't destroyed, it will definitely tell the other demon beasts about the Lunar Scourge. The Lunar Scourge is something that the demon beasts have dreamed of obtaining for millennia. They strongly believe that if they can obtain the Lunar Scourge, they can revive their Demon Emperor, once again returning to power! This time, we've really met some bad luck." Qi Yue's voice held a solemnness that Ling Chen had never heard before. The one who should be panicking the most about the Lunar Scourge being exposed should be her. Before all the God and Saint Orbs were found, this was the situation she least wanted to encounter. What they were facing right now was equivalent to a terrifying nightmare for her.

"Try to stall for as much time as possible before Tao Tie gets here. I already told it that the Lunar Scourge has been discovered by the Shadow Demon Beast, so it should be here soon." Qi Yue sighed. Even if Tao Tie could immediately arrive, it still wouldn't be able to go back in time to prevent the Shadow Demon Beast finding out about the Lunar Scourge.

Stalling for time... perhaps, that was the last sliver of hope...

Ling Chen slowly raised his head, and looked at the dark cloud in the sky, and spluttered out three words, “Shadow... Demon... Beast!”

“Heheheheh...”

The frightening laughter paused for a second, then became even wilder, “HAHAHAHA! I never thought after hiding away for ten thousand years, you tiny little human would be able to call out my royal name. Turns out my name hasn’t be entirely forgotten, hahaha... that’s right, I’m one of the ten ancient demon beasts that serve the Demon Emperor. Being able to see me is the greatest glory in your entire life, hahahahaha, then, who are you?”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“Heheheh, it doesn’t matter if you don’t want to say. I have no interest towards you. I’m just very glad that I didn’t destroy you as soon as you entered. Otherwise, I would have missed out on a very big opportunity. Heheh, human, since you know my glorious name, you should know that trying to retaliate or run away is completely pointless. I’ve already said that I have no interest towards you, and I can’t even be bothered attacking you. That’s the only reason you’re still alive. Now, be good and give me the Lunar Scourge. This way, I can spare you from dying and will send you safely out of here. Do you understand?”

The pressure from the Shadow Demon Beast made it harder and harder for Ling Chen to breath, and there was not a single inch of

his body that was not covered in cold sweat. Indeed, what the Shadow Demon Beast was after was the Lunar Scourge. However, it was impossible for him to give the Shadow Demon Beast the Lunar Scourge. After all, it was as if it was part of his body-even he had no way of taking it off, and even if he was killed, there was no way for it to drop from his body.

However, there were a few things that the Shadow Demon Beast had said that were absolutely true. These were that it only wanted the Lunar Scourge, and was not interested towards Ling Chen at all. In order to obtain the Lunar Scourge, it probably wouldn't immediately kill Ling Chen. Even the Dark Undead Moon God Representative from before had been stopped by it. This was because the Shadow Demon Beast believed that the drop rate for the Lunar Scourge dropping from Ling Chen was probably very small, and they would probably have to kill him more than ten times, which was much more troublesome than getting him to hand it over himself. Moreover, in order repeatedly kill him, it would have to go into human territory, which would arouse the attention of the Moon God Clan.

Ling Chen was sure that at least for now, he was safe. However, this didn't mean he could relax, considering the consequences of the Lunar Scourge being exposed.

What should he do...

Seeing no reaction from Ling Chen, the Shadow Demon Beast's voice became colder, "What, didn't you understand what I was saying? Immediately give me the Lunar Scourge. That way, I'll spare you from dying. Otherwise, I'll let you experience the most

painful death, and then turn you into a puppet, so that you won't even be able to rest in peace!!"

The demon beasts all had vicious and cruel personalities, and did not have much patience either. The Shadow Demon Beast began to fiercely threaten Ling Chen. Ling Chen exhaled, and slowly said, "Shadow Demon Beast, although I truly want to give you the Lunar Scourge in exchange for my life this isn't possible. Haven't you heard that once the Lunar Scourge chooses a master, it would bond onto the master's body, and cannot be taken off?" Ling Chen raised his right hand, which had the Lunar Scourge tightly attached to it, "Even I don't have a way to take it off."

Woosh...

In the deathly silence, a gust of cold wind started to blow, causing the dark cloud to move. Within the cold wind, a dark ray of light shot down and landed in front of Ling Chen, then condensed into a swirling dark fog.

"That's the Shadow Demon Beast! The Shadow Demon Beast doesn't have a fixed shape; it uses darkness energy to freely change its body's shape. This dark fog is the Shadow Demon Beast." Qi Yue Quickly explained.

The moment the Shadow Demon Beast in front of Ling Chen, a system announcement sounded out in his ears.

"Ding... you have investigated the origin of the mournful weeping. Having completed the core part of the "Moon God Ruins"

Quest, you can now return to Azure Dragon City and report to the Azure Dragon's Mayor, after which you will have completed the Moon God Ruins Quest."

Ling Chen felt veins beginning to bulge out of his forehead. So the core part of the Moon God Ruins Quest was to find the Shadow Demon Beast! This was simply too outrageous. With the strength of players at the current stage of the game, no matter how many came, they would all die! Wasn't this just a death trap!? No wonder the Quest Warning had things like:

"All who enter shall die."

"If you would like to die, please accept this Quest."

So those weren't to just scare players, but rather the freaking truth!

However, regardless, being able to complete the Quest was a great comfort.

The swirling dark fog filled with the scent of death slowly drew near to him. The terrifying voice came out of the fog, "Heheheh, tiny human, you reminded me of something. You're right; once the Lunar Scourge has chosen a master, no one is able to take it off from the master... unless the master is dead!!"

Ling Chen frowned, and his right hand clenched, his gaze turning cold.

“So, go die!!”

As the Shadow Demon Beast ferociously howled, the dark fog that was about ten metres away from Ling Chen began to expand, and a deathly aura began to surge towards Ling Chen from all around him. At this moment, Ling Chen stretched out his right hand, and a black light erupted from the Lunar Scourge.

“Moon… Shadow!!”

Although the darkness energy released by the Shadow Demon Beast was incredibly pure and powerful, it could never compare to that of the Lunar Scourge. Under the Moon Shadow, even the Shadow Demon Beast was frozen in place, unable to make even a sound.

In the five seconds, Ling Chen gritted his teeth and furiously ran towards the north.

In this world, there were still some things that Moon Shadow was not able to freeze in place. One of these things was creatures’ aura. Although the Shadow Demon Beast had been fixed in place, Ling Chen was still affected by its aura, and thus was still in its aggro range. In this sort of condition, Ling Chen was not able to use a teleport scroll. As for escaping the Shadow Demon Beast’s detection in merely five seconds, that was simply impossible.

“Qi Yue, do you have any other ideas!!”

While running, Ling Chen loudly shouted.

Qi Yue despondently sighed, “Right now, little master has no chance against the Shadow Demon Beast. Any method would not be able to make up for the difference in your power.”

The five seconds passed very quickly, and after the Shadow Demon Beast became unfrozen, it furiously shouted, “You actually want to resist against me, I’ll let you… experience the most painful torture before you die!”

Once again, death was right behind him. If the Shadow Demon Beast wanted to kill him, even if he was 1,000 metres away, it still would be incredibly easy for it to kill him. Ling Chen clenched his fists and gritted his teeth and looked back. His eyes widened saw the dark fog expand to ten or so metres in height.

Poof!!

Underneath his feet, he was suddenly tripped by something hard. Ling Chen, who was running at his full speed, did not have time to react, and fell to the ground. He quickly flipped his body over, and found that the gigantic swirling dark fog was already less than ten metres away from him.

He actually thought he could escape from the Shadow Demon Beast… he was too naïve… Ling Chen self-mockingly laughed. He took out the Soaring Cloud spear and Zephyr Blade and gripped them in his hands. It was impossible for him to defeat the Shadow

Demon Beast, so he might as well at least hit it before he died.

“Tiny human, you actually wanted to try to escape from me, what a joke. Since I can obtain the Lunar Scourge after killing you... die!!”

The gigantic dark fog rolled towards Ling Chen like a massive wave.

Ling Chen raised his hands, and stared at the giant wave rolling towards him... since he was going to die, he might as well go down with a decent fight... however, just as he raised his hands, his eyes flickered-the light from the Lunar Scourge, which had been shining intensely this entire time, suddenly subsided and completely disappeared.

At the same time, the sky suddenly darkened, and in just a moment, all light had been swallowed by the darkness. Ling Chen could not see a single thing in front of him.

Ling Chen: (What’s going on? What just happened?)

As the darkness descended, Ling Chen found that his breathing had stopped, and even his heart felt like it had stopped beating.

The Shadow Demon Beast’s attack hadn’t landed on him, and Ling Chen felt that he was still alive. However, it seemed as if time had stopped for him. Though he still could not breath, his heart started beating again. He could clearly hear his heart thumping so

loudly and violently that he was afraid that it might even burst.

Pressure... a sort of pressure that Ling Chen could not use words to describe covered the entire sky and land, completely overpowering the Shadow Demon Beast's own aura and pressure. This sort of pressure was stronger than the Shadow Demon Beast's by a thousand, if not ten thousand times... under this sort of pressure, Ling Chen felt that his body was being crushed. All light had been devoured, and the ground shook. Even space began to tremble, as if it was about to be torn.

"Who... Who is it... get... get out here..."

In the complete darkness, Ling Chen heard the Shadow Demon Beast's voice. Its trembling voice was filled with fear... because in front of this overwhelming pressure, its own demonic aura was just like a grain of sand in the sea. This sort of power could destroy it in just a split second...

Ling Chen believed this sort of power could destroy the sky, no, even space itself.

"Qi Yue... what... is going on!!" Ling Chen shouted in his mind.

When he received Qi Yue's reply, it almost sounded like a stranger's voice. This was before in her voice, there was an unprecedented trembling and shaking, "In this world, there is only one person who can release this sort of pressure....."

Boom!!!

A streak of purple lightning descended from the sky and crashed in front of Ling Chen. When the lightning disappeared, Ling Chen discovered that in front of him, was a person. Although his stature was similar to Ling Chen's, at first glance, he seemed like an incredibly tall and imposing mountain.

"....Shu...ra...!"

Chapter 173 - Shura (2)

Shura……

This word fell like lightning on Ling Chen’s heart.

“Who… has woken me…”

The heavy voice filled the entire sky and land, and every word fell like a giant stone on Ling Chen’s spirit. He was the Shura, and this was his voice.

Who had woken him…

“Lunar Scourge… so it was you…”

Lunar Scourge’s name being said by the Shura caused Ling Chen’s heart to shake. Was it the Lunar Scourge that woke up the Shura? Could it be that the brilliant black light from before was because it detected the Shura?

However, didn’t the Shura already die!? He was said to have been vanquished by the three Moon Goddesses ten thousand years ago! So why was he able to appear before Ling Chen?

“I have already died… and you, have become so weak. Since… you have woken me… then, let me do for you… one last thing…”

The Shura's voice was the heaviest voice Ling Chen ever heard in his entire life. Although it was only one voice, and was not that loud, yet it shook his heart as if millions of people were shouting at the same time. Every word he spoke would shake Ling Chen's entire body. As the Shura spoke his last word, the aura around them began to change.

A gale started to blow, and the air that was originally still became turbulent. A cruel and oppressive aura began to spread, as the smell of fresh blood began to envelope everything as well.

Another purple streak of lightning descended, and in the light that it gave off, Ling Chen saw the person standing in front of him looked as if he had just walked out of a pool of blood. He had blood red hair, a blood red face, blood red eyes, was wearing blood red armour, and his long sword was entirely dyed in red... all of those things were not naturally that colour-they had all been dyed into that colour by blood.

One man had exterminated 10% of all living creatures in the Forgotten Continent. The amount of blood he had been stained by could not be imagined by anyone. After being bathed in blood numerous times, every part of his body had already become permanently blood red.

"Shura... You are the Shura!!"

If Qi Yue was able to recognise the Shura, there was no reason for the Shadow Demon Beast not to. Ten thousand years ago, they had both existed. Most living creatures now had already forgotten about the Shura after such a long time, but the Shadow Demon

Beast that had existed since ten thousand years ago definitely would not forget about the terrifying Shura. By the time it had finally realised whose aura this was, it was filled with dread and fear.

The air was filled with the scent of fresh blood. Only the Shura's power would give off such a scent. The Shadow Demon Beast, in all its terror, found that the Shura's killing intent was squarely directed at it.

"Be destroyed, and become the last corpse under my sword."

What Ling Chen knew about the Shura was only a legend, whereas the Shadow Demon Beast had personally witnessed how frightening the Shura was. Those who had been locked down by the Shura's pressure had never escaped alive before. The Shura had already clearly died-the Shadow Demon Beast simply couldn't work out why he was able to appear here.

Could this all be a big nightmare!?

However, it would never know the answer to all of its questions. When the Shura's voice had appeared in its ears, it had already begun to feel itself falling towards the abyss of death.

"Ahhhhh!!!!"

It didn't beg for mercy, for the Shura was the most merciless creature in the entire world. Begging the Shura for mercy would be

incredibly stupid. Instead, it let out a howl and sent a cluster of dark fog towards the Shura, while it furiously fled in the opposite direction.

Boom!!

A third bolt of purple lightning streaked down from the sky. As the lightning lit up the area, Ling Chen saw the dark clouds covering the sky, as well as the Shura raising his right hand.

Clang!

A blood red crescent of energy flew out from the Shura's sword, and passed through the cluster of dark fog that the Shadow Demon Beast had sent out. The cluster of dark fog was wiped out like floodwaters washing over a little tongue of flame. In just a moment, the Shadow Demon Beast's full strength attack had been wiped out, and the blood red crescent of energy continued forwards, and slammed into the escaping Shadow Demon Beast.

"Arghhhhh!!!!!"

-9,980,000!!

The pitiful screaming could almost cause one's eardrums to burst, and Ling Chen clearly saw a gigantic damage figure float above the Shadow Demon Beast.

This was just a casual strike from the Shura... a casual strike had

completely annihilated the Shadow Demon Beast, and had caused millions of damage to a Mysterious God grade monster.

Boom!!

A fourth bolt of lightning descended, and once again lit up the area. Ling Chen found that the Shura had disappeared from in front of him, and instead, there was a beautiful blood red flower on top of where the Shadow Demon Beast had been.

“AHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!!”

A final, terrible scream caused the surrounding air to tremble.

“Shura’s Death Domain…” Qi Yue’s voice sounded in Ling Chen’s mind, “The Shadow Demon Beast has died.”

Only the echoes of the Shadow Demon Beast’s last cry remained, and even those gradually disappeared, resulting in silence once again. Ling Chen did not see clearly what the Shura had done, nor did he know how exactly he killed the Shadow Demon Beast, but what he did know was that the Shadow Demon Beast had been slain by the Shura.

At the Lonely Spirit Ridge, the War Demon Beast had been annihilated by Xi Ling’s Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, at the cost of Xi Ling’s own life. With how powerful the Shadow Demon Beast was, apart from the rare Saint Destroyer creatures, what else could destroy it? Moreover, even Saint Destroyer creatures would

find it difficult to quickly kill the Shadow Demon Beast.

However, against the Shura, it didn't even have the chance to retaliate before being completely destroyed.

Was he really the Shura...

So this was... the power of a Shura?

Ling Chen was incredibly in awe and shock of what had just happened. This was the greatest pressure he had ever experienced, as well as the most strength he had ever witnessed-and he wasn't even the target. The Shura had singlehandedly wiped out 10% of all living creatures in the Forgotten Continent, and was being that was feared by all other beings. He was a being that even the three highest Moon Goddesses had to work together to defeat-the 'strongest being', Shura!

After the Shadow Demon Beast had died, the berserk energy and scent of fresh blood began to quickly disappear from the air.

Slowly, the darkness also began to disperse, and Ling Chen found that he could gradually see again. The choking pressure from the Shura also quickly disappeared.

The purple bolts of lightning also stopped falling from the sky.

Did... the Shura leave?

When the Shura had appeared, all light had been swallowed; now after the Shura stopped using his power, the light had come back. This sort of terrifying power even gave him control over natural things like light and darkness. It was indeed a legendary power that exceeded all comprehension.

Despite hearing many stories about the Shura, Ling Chen finally truly began to understand why the Shura was so feared by all creatures.

“Qi Yue, didn’t the Shura die already?” Ling Chen closed his eyes, trying to calm his heart down.

“The Shura indeed did die, but he was woken up by the Lunar Scourge.” Qi Yue replied.

“What do you mean?”

“You’ll see soon… this was all out of my expectations. I never thought… no one thought that not only was the Lunar Scourge not destroyed, but even the Shura still had a remnant of his soul existing. However, what’s even better is that he killed the Shadow Demon Beast! With the Shadow Demon Beast dead, we don’t have to worry about the Lunar Scourge being exposed anymore. Plus, with the Lunar Scourge on your body, the Shura won’t harm you.”

Ling Chen went quiet for a bit, then asked, “Qi Yue, answer me honestly-was the Lunar Scourge’s previous owner the Shura? Was the ‘ancient item’ that caused him to enter the path of the Shura

the Lunar Scourge?”

“Yes.” Qi Yue replied.

Ling Chen: “……”

In just a moment, countless thoughts passed through Ling Chen’s mind. The legend of the Shura, as well as the things Tao Tie had told him that he had not completely understood, as well as the description of Heaven’s Wrath, “the way of the Shura, there is no return, determined to walk this path, heaven’s wrath you will suffer”, all suddenly began to make sense to Ling Chen.

Lunar Scourge… Shura…

In the silence, Ling Chen opened his eyes. In front of him was the exact same scenery he had seen before. All traces of the Shura had disappeared, as if all that had just happened had all been just a dream.

Ling Chen turned his head, and saw a person on his right. He was holding a long sword, his body covered in blood, He was standing still as a statue, looking at Ling Chen. The wind gently blew, but his hair and ripped clothes did not move at all.

Shura…

Ling Chen took a deep breath and walked towards him.

Before today, Ling Chen never would have thought that he would meet this most feared man in the entire Forgotten Continent, much less speak with him.

Ling Chen stood in front of the Shura, and the bloody scent on him almost made Ling Chen want to vomit. Despite the fact that he clearly knew that this man was the Shura who had supposedly died ten thousand years ago, he still asked, “Are you… the Shura?”

“No!”

Surprisingly, the man gave a negative answer.

The Shura spoke with an expressionless face. Though he was speaking, his lips did not move at all, “Shuras are arrogant and have cut off all emotional ties. Their reason for living is to kill and destroy; they would not speak with anyone, nor would they show mercy to anything. I used to be a Shura. However, right now, I am just the remnant of a soul woken up by the Lunar Scourge. However, I still have a little bit of the Shura’s power. After a short while, I will forever disappear from this world…”

Chapter 174 - Shura's Last Wish

“Remnant... of a soul?” Ling Chen muttered to himself. However, ten thousand years ago, when the Moon Goddesses vanquished the Shura, why would they allow him to save a remnant of his soul? Logically, they should’ve completely destroyed him.

“That’s right.” Being so close to him, every one of the Shura’s words sounded deafening, “They thought that they had destroyed the Lunar Scourge and myself. However, it’s definitely not that easy to destroy the Lunar Scourge. My last sliver of consciousness was preserved by the Lunar Scourge and sealed in my bones. Despite this, I couldn’t wake up until today, when the Lunar Scourge woke me up, allowing me to wake up and see this world after ten thousand years.”

All of Ling Chen’s doubts were dispelled, “So, you were the previous owner of the Lunar Scourge?”

“That’s right.”

“And the Lunar Scourge caused you to become a Shura?”

“Yes.”

Ling Chen frowned, and raised his right hand, “Then, doesn’t that mean if I wear this Lunar Scourge, I’ll become a Shura like you!?”

The Shura's blood red eyes turned to focus on Ling Chen's face, his voice serious, "Yes, and no."

"Yes, and no? What do you mean?" Ling Chen asked.

"The Lunar Scourge is the evilest item in the entire world, and possesses boundless power. Only with it can a being that represents utmost hatred, the Shura, be created."

So it was indeed so... the Shura's words made Ling Chen's heart jump. The Shura in front of him was the Lunar Scourge's previous master. The reason he became a Shura was because of the Lunar Scourge! Then, didn't that mean with the Lunar Scourge on his body, he would slowly walk towards the path of the Shura!

"However, you and I are different." The Shura continued to speak, "Back then, I was controlled by the Lunar Scourge, whereas you have taken control of it. Although I became a Shura because of the Lunar Scourge, unless you are willing, or the Lunar Scourge is in its complete state, it can only give you its power, and will not be able to force you onto the path of the Shura. You are the first creature that has obtained the Lunar Scourge without being controlled by it."

The Shura's words shocked Ling Chen. The worry and frustration in his heart all died down. Although the Lunar Scourge could help him become a Shura, if he didn't want to become one, it would not be able to affect him. After all, he was the master of the Lunar Scourge, not the opposite... thinking to here, he gave a sigh of relief and looked up into the Shura's terrifying eyes, "Then, because of the Lunar Scourge, you lost your conscience and

humanity, and became a mass murderer, killing countless people. You've probably also endured a lot of pain and suffering... you probably hate it a lot, right?"

"Pain and suffering? Hate? Why?" The Shura asked him, "You should know that there are countless beings that desire for the Lunar Scourge so that they can become powerful Shuras. Shuras lose their conscience and humanity, but they also forget all pain and suffering, as well as disregard all of the world's laws and rules. They can kill anyone they want; do anything they want. They can disregard any people, any rules, anything at all. Even gods, the sky, or oceans tremble in front of Shuras. Not only do they not experience any pain or suffering, but experience boundless pleasure... becoming a Shura is one of the things I least regret in my life, why would I hate it!?"

Ling Chen: "....."

"Moreover, you thought that as long as one has the Lunar Scourge, they will have the right to become a Shura?" The Shura looked at Ling Chen with his eyes; the blood red stare pierced deep into his soul, "Do you know what sort of people have the right to become Shuras?"

What sort of people have the right to become Shuras...

Ling Chen thought for a while, then answered, "People who have cut off all emotions."

"Hahahaha..." The Shura calmly laughed, "Perhaps apart from

me, every person would give the same answer as you-that only someone who has cut off all emotions can become a Shura. But you are wrong, everyone is wrong. The answer is exactly the opposite. People who have cut off all emotions can never become Shuras. The only people who can become Shuras are those who care, who love, who sympathise the most."

The Shura's words hit Ling Chen like a wave. His answer was so incomprehensible that Ling Chen almost couldn't accept it.

Shuras were beings that destroyed everything and everyone they saw, and would never show any mercy or sympathy-surely they'd have to cut off all emotions. Ten thousand years ago, the Shura had bathed in the blood of 10% of the Forgotten Continent's creatures. Whenever the people who knew of the Shura thought of him, they would first think of his lack of emotions and sympathy.

However, the Shura in front of him said that those who had cut off all emotions would never be able to become Shuras-instead, only those who cared, who loved, who sympathised the most would be able to become Shuras.

Ling Chen simply could not understand the reasons for such an answer. If anyone else gave this answer, he would take it as a joke. However, the person who had uttered such words... was a real Shura!

"You can't believe it, right? You don't need to believe it. One day, when you become a Shura too, you will truly understand and accept what I have just said," The Shura slowly said.

“I definitely will not become a Shura.” Ling Chen shook his head, “I don’t have any reasons to become a Shura, and I can never accept myself becoming that sort of person.”

“Right now, you indeed don’t have nay reasons for becoming a Shura. However, whether or not there will be reasons in future, no one knows. No one can fight against fate-even Shuras or people destined to become Shuras. Since you have obtained the Lunar Scourge, your fate is destined to be changed by the Lunar Scourge. Perhaps when the Lunar Scourge is complete again, you will find a reason to become a Shura.”

Ling Chen shook his head once again, “I don’t have that many desires, nor do I need that much power. The reason I came to this world was just to return a favour. The reason I obtained this Lunar Scourge was simply an accident. I admire Shuras, but becoming a Shura is simply not in line with my goals. To be able to see a real Shura, I am already satisfied.”

“Hahaha…” The Shura once again laughed, but this time it was not as calm, but rather contained some sort of deep meaning. A real Shura would not laugh, because they would not have any emotions. Ling Chen concluded that in front of him was not a ‘true’ Shura, but rather a “person” who had the last bits of the Shura’s power. “Well, since this is what you believe, keep believing it. What will happen in future, only time will tell.”

The Shura raised his head and looked at the dark sky, “The time I have left isn’t long. To be able to see the endless sky ten thousand years after being killed, I am already satisfied.”

He looked down towards Ling Chen, “Young man, you possess the Lunar Scourge just as I did back then. You are also the only human I’ve seen since I’ve been woken up. Perhaps this was all arranged by fate. There are many things I want to say to you and the Lunar Scourge, but I simply do not have much time left. Before my soul dissipates, can you please agree to one final wish of mine… I will give you a suitable compensation in return.”

A final wish from a Shura… this sort of name caused Ling Chen’s heart to beat excitedly and he vigorously nodded, “If I have the power to do it, I will definitely fulfil your wish.”

“Very good.” The Shura nodded his head. At that moment, Ling Chen suddenly saw on his blood stained face a trace of warmness, as if ten-thousand-year-old ice was thawing.

“Please bring my bones to my hometown, and bury me in front of my wife’s grave.”

The Shura’s bones were buried in this Moon God Ruins. However, Ling Chen did not have to look for them, because they were already in Ling Chen’s field of vision. They were the things that Ling Chen had tripped over when he was running from the Shadow Demon Beast.

“I’ve already told Tao Tie that the danger has passed, and he doesn’t need to come anymore. Immediately take the Shura’s bones and leave. Although the Shura only released his power for a very short period of time, that’s enough for the Moon God

Representative of the Forgotten Continent to detect him, so she will be here soon.” Qi Yue said.

Ling Chen nodded his head and walked towards the Shura’s bones. The Shura’s body was incredibly tough and durable- although ten thousand years had passed, his bones were still in perfect condition, without any blemish or cracks.

Northwest of the Azure Dragon City, Peace Town

“Little friend, do you know anyone with the surname “Chi Xuan”?”

[TLN: ‘Chi Xuan’ was originally translated by the first translator as “Red Mystical” as in “Red Mystical Sword King”, but apparently it was the Shura’s surname].

Seeing a stranger, the little boy immediately ran away.

“Excuse me everyone, has anyone heard of someone with the last name Chi Xuan?”

“Chi Xuan? There’s such a last name? Never heard of it before.”

After walking around in the village for a long time and asking many people, he found that all the villagers had no idea about the

last name ‘Chi Xuan’.

Many things could change in ten thousand years. Perhaps the Chi Xuan family had already disappeared and had been forgotten by everyone. However, Ling Chen did not give up. He found out where the Town Mayor lived, and went to find him. Since this village still existed, perhaps there were still records of “Chi Xuan”.

“Hello Town Mayor, can I enquire about something with you? In your town, has there ever been anyone with the surname ‘Chi Xuan’?” Standing in front of the Town Mayor, Ling Chen began to question him.

“Chi Xuan?” Hearing this name, an expression of shock appeared on the Village Chief’s face. He looked at Ling Chen closely, then replied, “A long, long time ago, there was a family called ‘Chi Xuan’ here. However, that family always quite small, and I think disappeared about a thousand years ago. As such, this surname also disappeared. I read about this recently in our town’s records. Young man, why do you know this surname? Perhaps you have some sort of connection to this family?”

In this world, there already aren’t any people with the surname Chi Xuan anymore? Ling Chen sighed in his mind. This result was very disappointing, but not surprising. After all, ten thousand years had passed.

“Then, did the Chi Xuan family leave anything behind?” Ling Chen determinedly asked.

“Unfortunately, no,” the Town Mayor shook his head, “However, if you want to pay your respects to the Chi Xuan family’s ancestors, there’s a place.”

“Where?” Ling Chen’s eyes lit up.

“It’s at the centre of Peace Town. Below our sacred object... the Peace Tree. Legend has it that the Peace Tree was blessed by a peerless, powerful expert, and has an infinite lifespan. Up until today, it has lived for over ten thousand years, and yet, it is still thriving. The legends also say that a long, long time ago, there was a terrible catastrophe in the Forgotten Continent, causing all of the surrounding villages and towns to be eradicated. Only our town was kept safe. Everyone says that it was the Peace Tree that kept us safe. As such, that tree was named the ‘Peace Tree’, and has always protected the peace and safety of our town up till now. In the Peace Town Records, the Peace Tree was planted by the Chi Xuan family’s first ancestor. After the first generation ancestors died, they were buried there.”

At that time, the Shura destroyed almost all of the east side of the Forgotten Continent. Everywhere around Peace Town for 100 miles had been reduced to ruins. Only Peace Town had been kept safe, without any loss at all.

“Got it, thank you Town Mayor.”

Ling Chen immediately turned around and headed straight for the centre of the town.

Chapter 175 - Cancer Orb

At the centre of the Peace Town, under the Peace Tree.

The Peace Tree was so incredibly tall that one could not see the top of the tree from the ground level, and the leaves grew lushly on the branches. The trunk was so thick that it probably needed around ten or so grown men to wrap their arms around it in a circle.

The Shura's image once again appeared. He stood under the Peace Tree and put his hand stained by blood onto the tree, "I never thought that despite everything changing after ten thousand years, this tree is still here."

The Shura's voice slightly trembled. This Shura who had caused terror to the entire Forgotten Continent, he too had things that were hard to look back on.

"This tree was planted by myself and my wife. Back then, it was only a seedling. My wife and I transferred some of our power into this tree so that it could quickly grow, as well as gave it an infinite lifespan, symbolising how our love for each other would never wither or die."

The Shura spoke in a reminiscent tone as he gazed at the gigantic tree. Ten thousand years had passed, and the tiny seedling had grown into an enormous tree. However, he and his beloved had long since been separated.

“It seems that you truly loved your wife… so why were you willing to become a Shura?” Ling Chen asked.

“When I became a Shura, my wife had already died. I personally buried her under this tree. At that time, my greatest desire was that after I died, I would be buried under this tree as well. Although we could not keep each other company in life, we could at least be together in death.”

Ling Chen’s heart was slightly moved. For the past ten thousand years, this Shura, who could destroy anything he wished, only had one wish, which was to be buried under this tree to be with his dead wife. Was this really the Shura that had killed 10% of all creatures in the Forgotten Continent?

Only those who cared, who loved and sympathised the most could become Shuras-was this why he became a Shura? In that case, what was the true meaning of a ‘Shura’? Could it be that everything people knew about Shuras was wrong?

“Can you tell me why you were willing to become a Shura?” Ling Chen took a step forwards, and asked the question that had been burning on his mind.

The Shura stayed silent and continued to gaze at the giant tree. He seemed to be reminiscing about memories from the past, but did not answer Ling Chen.

“Young man, thank you for bringing me here. Being able to be buried with her, I can now rest in peace. The greatest joy in my life

was meeting her, and the thing I regret least is becoming a Shura. If I could go back in time, I would throw away my sword and spend as much time with her as possible."

Swish!!

The Shura flicked with his finger, and a deep pit appeared next to Ling Chen. The Shura's bones then floated into the pit, after which the pit was filled, not leaving a single trace of what had just happened.

Apart from Ling Chen, no one would know the final resting place of the Shura. No one would know that the terrifying Shura that had surpassed even gods was buried under this tree, without a headstone or a coffin. The only person at his 'funeral' was Ling Chen.

And no one knew that it was on this day that the Shura had truly died.

"Are you going now?" Ling Chen quietly asked as he saw the Shura's image begin to fade.

"That's right, it's time for me to go. Thank you for fulfilling this final wish of mine. This is my reward for you....."

As the Shura spoke, a white light with a hint of purple appeared in Ling Chen's field of vision. It was a crystal orb about the size of a fist, the colour of silver with a bit of purple. It was semi-

transparent, and had a symbol that looked like two 9's lying horizontally, one flipped from the other.

This was...

"This is the fourth God Orb... the Cancer Orb!!" Qi Yue joyously cried out.

This was one of the Lunar Scourge's orbs!?

Ling Chen stretched out his hand and took hold of the orb. Its size, shape and texture were all the same as the Gemini and Sagittarius Orbs!

> [Cancer Orb]: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Mysterious God, Attribute: Lightning. Equipment Requirement: Can only be slotted in the Lunar Scourge. Effects: All attacks ignore the target's Defence, Damage Reduction and Absolute Defence.

Ling Chen suddenly gripped the Cancer Orb in his hand... this was indeed a Mysterious God Orb! The Cancer Orb allowed him to ignore all Defence, including Damage Reduction and even Absolute Defence!

After the Gemini Orb and Sagittarius Orb, Ling Chen had finally obtained yet another Lunar Scourge Orb. The Cancer Orb once again revealed to Ling Chen just how powerful the Orbs of the

Lunar Scourge were.

"Awesome! In such a short time, we've obtained three Lunar Scourge Orbs!" Qi Yue said in an excited voice.

"Back then, the Lunar Scourge was not destroyed by the Moon God Clan, but all twelve of its God Orbs and the three Saint Orbs were scattered. However, the Cancer Orb was secretly kept at the Moon God Ruins, hidden by the aura from my bones. Now, it can finally return to where it belongs."

Ling Chen excitedly put the Cancer Orb away. Every time he found a Lunar Scourge Orb, his strength had increased by leaps and folds, and this time was no different. He bowed his head as he said, "Thank you Shura, your reward comes as a very pleasant surprise to me."

"Thank me?" The Shura's expression was very calm, "Its rightful position is in the Lunar Scourge, and so belongs to you, so why do you need to thank me?"

The Shura stretched out his blood covered hand and pressed it onto Ling Chen's chest. Ling Chen's eyes widened, but he did not move or say anything.

"The Lunar Scourge was my only companion. Now that I am going to completely disappear, I don't have any way to look over it in its weakened form. The only person who can protect it now is you. However, your power is far too weak. All I can do is give my remaining power to you, so that you can temporarily use my power

in dire situations.

Give my remaining power to you... Ling Chen looked at the Shura in shock.

“However, before I do this, I want to give you a piece of advice.” The Shura closed his eyes. A blood red orb of light appeared between his palm and Ling Chen’s chest. Within Ling Chen’s chest suddenly appeared a sort of chaotic and violent aura.

“What advice is it?” Ling Chen did his best to remain calm as he asked.

“Do your best to find ways to be able to nullify Lightning attacks. Back then, if it wasn’t for the Divine Tribulation Lightning, the three Moon Goddesses and the Void Dragon God would not have been able to harm me at all!!”

Ling Chen: “……”

The three Moon Goddesses and the Void Dragon God would not have been able to harm me at all…… Under the heavens, only the Shura had the right to say such arrogant words.

At this moment, he was not able to say out loud something like “I will never become a Shura, so I don’t need to worry about this”. The blood red orb of light entered into his body.

“Farewell, young man. I hope that the Lunar Scourge’s light will

one day, because of you, cover the land and sky again."

The burning hot sensation in Ling Chen's chest suddenly seemed to explode outwards, and spread throughout his body like a rampaging beast. For a few seconds, it felt as his body was going to be ripped apart, but the rampaging energy suddenly subsided, and disappeared without a trace.

The Shura's image before him also became almost transparent. Perhaps in the next second, he would disappear completely.

"Shura, rest in peace. Although I won't become a Shura like you, but I will do my best to protect the Lunar Scourge." Ling Chen earnestly said.

The vanishing image nodded his head, and a voice like a gentle breeze of wind replied, "Then, farewell..."

Suddenly, the Shura's calm face suddenly became very shocked. His soft, yet still audible voice sounded in Ling Chen's ears, "Wait! Your eyes....."

A breeze blew past, and the Shura's image, as well his incomplete sentence all disappeared.

"Ding... you have received the skills [Shura's Death Domain] and [Shura's Descent]."

Ling Chen felt a bit stunned as he looked forwards... my eyes?

What was the meaning behind the Shura's last sentence? What's with my eyes?

The Shura had passed away, so there was no one that could answer his questions. Ling Chen rubbed his eyes. His vision had always been very good, and did not feel that there was anything wrong with them. So what was the meaning behind that "your eyes"? Did he mishear the Shura?

Ling Chen decided to stop thinking about it. He quickly opened his Skills Page, and looked at the two skills that the Shura had given him... these were two skills from the Shura himself!!

[Shura's Death Domain]: Limited use skill, cannot be upgraded. After the Chi Xuan Sword King became a Shura, with his natural talent and comprehension in killing techniques, whenever this skill was used, even the sky and land would be affected. This skill could slay even gods in one strike. Single target attack, and locks onto the target once the skill is activated. Even if the target escapes to the furthest corners of the world, the they will not be able to evade the attack. Damage caused is 99,999% of normal attack damage, and is guaranteed to hit, as well as critical and pierce, as well as destroy all equipment below Saint Destroyer grade. Costs 90% of HP and MP to activate. After activating, the user's Strength, Constitution, Agility and Spirit will permanently decrease by 30 points and level will decrease by 9 levels. As it only contains the last of the Shura's power, it can only be used twice.

Seeing the [Shura's Death Domain] skill on his Skill Page, Ling

Chen’s hands began to shake. His eyes widened as he looked at the skill again and again, scarcely beliving his eyes.

99,999% normal attack damage…

How could such a monstrous, incomprehensible skill exist!?

99,999% normal attack damage, plus critical and pierce… that means with his maximum Attack Power with his buffs, if he used this skill, he would be able to hit…

14,000,000 damage!!!

Ling Chen simply could not believe this. He shook his head, and calculated again and again…

No, it indeed was 14,000,000 damage!!

Despite being only LV17, this terrifying skill could allow him to cause 14 million damage!! This sort of damage… could even insta-kill a Mysterious God grade monster of the same level!

Chapter 176 - Moon Flare

[Shura's Death Domain] was one of the Shura's ultimate moves. It couldn't be simply described as 'terrifying'- it was simply a gamebreaking. Naturally, this sort of gamebreaking skill had to be limited. Because this was not a skill Ling Chen had gained by himself, but rather a skill given to him by the Shura, he was limited to using it twice. Every time he used it, his level would decrease by 9 levels, and all of his four major stats would be reduced by a whole 30 points each!

If his four major stats were each reduced by 30 points, his Constitution would fall to 1, and Spirit to 0. In total, that would be 120 stat points! Normally, this amount of stat points would take him 24 levels to gain. If Ling Chen took off all of his equipment, apart from Strength, all of the other three stats would fall directly to 0.

However, when put in perspective with the power of this skill, the costs didn't seem excessive at all. One day, if he truly was forced to use [Shura's Death Domain], the effects would be earth-shattering.

The Shura had actually given him such an overwhelmingly powerful skill...

Ling Chen immediately looked at the second skill that the Shura had given him.

[Shura's Descent]: Limited use skill, cannot be upgraded. Summons [Shura] to aid in battle for 60 seconds, can only be used once.

Ling Chen: "!!!!"

Having seen how overpowered the Shura's Death Domain was, Ling Chen could not believe that there could be an even more powerful skill in existence. However, this skill had immediately appeared before his eyes.

Summoning the Shura-the significance of this skill was not given enough justice by those few words.

Even a hack would be put to shame!!

The Shura was definitely the most powerful being that had ever existed. With this skill, it was pretty much equivalent to Ling Chen having the power of a Shura for a whole minute... was this some sort of bug!!? Even if he was facing off against the Moon God Clan, he would not have to fear them with this skill. It was obvious that the reason the Moon God Clan had never entered the Moon God Ruins after the Shura's Devastation was because they did not want to remember the tragic and fearful memories they had of the Shura.

[Shura's Death Domain] and [Shura's Descent] were the most help the Shura could give Ling Chen before he disappeared. Despite having only met Ling Chen for the first time, the reason he

gave Ling Chen these things was because of the Lunar Scourge.

Raising his right hand, Ling Chen looked at the Lunar Scourge, as well as its additional attributes:

> Heaven's Wrath: The way of the Shura, there is no return, determined to walk this path, heaven's wrath you will suffer.

Today, Ling Chen finally understood the meaning of this sentence.

The Lunar Scourge was an ancient evil item forged by the highest Moon God from the resentment, hatred, blood aura, death aura, and remnant power of gods, devils, humans, demons, beasts and spirits that died in the war of gods and devils, gathering countless sins, sanguinity, hatred and cruelty in one, the fusion of endless negativity. When it was forged, darkness covered the sky and land. The Lunar Scourge's energy made it the evilest, most cursed item in existence. Its power could cause the being to which it was bonded to go down the path of the terrifying Shura.

In that case, that day at the bottom of the cliff at the Novice Village, if he did not conquer the Lunar Scourge, but was instead conquered by it, then when the Lunar Scourge became complete, he would have been forced onto the path of the Shura.

After completing the War God's trials and receiving the War God's power, before he disappeared, the War God seemed shocked,

and said something like, “Wait.. This power on your body...”. Thinking back to this, Ling Chen realised that the War God had probably detected the Lunar Scourge on his body, and had been shocked.

The Shura existed because of the Lunar Scourge. Although there were still some people who knew of the name ‘Shura’, there were barely any people left who knew of the name ‘Lunar Scourge’.

Regardless, he was now the master of the Lunar Scourge. Even if he wanted to get rid of it, he still wouldn’t be able to. After all, it not only was bonded to him, but he had just made a vow to the Shura to protect the Lunar Scourge. As such, since he had no choice, he could only continue walking on this path. After all, the Shura had said that since Ling Chen was the one in control, even if the Lunar Scourge became complete again, it would still only give him power, as opposed to control him.

Ling Chen took out the Intermediate Energy Stone in the fourth socket of the Lunar Scourge and transferred it to the tenth socket, then put the Cancer Orb into the fourth socket.

“Ding... Cancer Orb slotting successful. All of your physical attacks will ignore 100% of Defence, ignore Physical Damage Reduction and will ignore Absolute Defence.”

“Ding... Lunar Scourge’s exclusive lunar skill [Moon Flare] has been unlocked.”

With the Cancer Orb on the Lunar Scourge, all of Ling Chen’s

physical attacks would ignore any and all Defence. Thus, no matter if it was Gold, Celestial, Mysterious God or even Saint Destroyer equipment, all of their defensive capabilities meant nothing in front of Ling Chen. Even if it was one of the five Saint Destroyer beasts, he would still be able to pierce through their Defence and reduce their HP.

In front of the Cancer Orb, all Defence was simply like clouds.

On his Stats Page, Ling Chen's Pierce Rate had directly increased to 100%.

After the Cancer Orb had been socketed, the Lunar Scourge's second exclusive skill had been unlocked. Just Moon Shadow alone had helped Ling Chen immeasurably and saved him many, many times. This new skill, Moon Flare, was sure to be as useful as Moon Shadow.

> [Moon Flare]: Lunar Scourge's exclusive skill, when cast it will release a brilliant light, blinding all creatures within range. Effect: Ignores Blindness resistance, and all targets within X metres gain the Blindness status (X= Current level x 2). The effects last for 5 seconds with no mana cost. Cooldown: 60 seconds.

So it turned out that the Moon Flare was an AOE attack that caused all targets, within the AOE that was double the size of Moon Shadow's, to lose their sight temporarily. Although it would not be as useful as Moon Shadow in 1v1 battles, but in large team battles,

if cast on the enemy, it would throw them into chaos, and they might even attack each other.

When facing off against a powerful enemy, using Moon Shadow then Moon Flare, or Moon Flare then Moon Shadow, would probably boundlessly infuriate the enemy. No less than what was expected from the Moon Shadow-no matter if it was its exclusive Orbs or exclusive skills, Ling Chen was never disappointed.

“In just ten or so days, little master has found three Lunar Scourge God Orbs. Little master, I think I’m falling for you more and more.” Qi Yue gave a flirtatious laugh. The happiest person in obtaining this new Orb was her.

Ling Chen slightly frowned. His voice was not as excited as Qi Yue’s, and was instead a lot more serious, “Qi Yue, you never told me that the Shura’s existence was because of the Lunar Scourge.”

“Hehe, that can only happen when the Lunar Scourge has at least twelve of its exclusive Orbs. So, before little master has gathered twelve orbs, there’s no reason for me to say it. Otherwise, little master might be too worried and may not be as enthusiastic about finding the orbs.”

There were simply too many things that Qi Yue was hiding from him. Come to think of it, even now, he still didn’t know about Qi Yue’s true background, or if that even was her real name. He decided to stop questioning her, because he knew she wouldn’t give him a proper answer even if he continued to ask. Instead, he took out a black piece of jade from his bag.

The piece of jade was jet black, without any scratches or damage. On the back, there was a very small “Shadow” character engraved. This was something he had picked up at the Moon God Ruins before delivering the Shura’s bones to the Peace Tree. It was the only thing that had dropped from the Shadow Demon Beast, and was almost exactly the same as the piece of jade that the War Demon Beast had dropped at the Lonely Spirit Ridge.

> [Demon Jade Hook?Shadow]: Jade that the Shadow Demon Beast carries. It is said that it was given to him by the then Demon King. Unable to determine what material it is made of and its use.

Indeed, it was almost exactly the same as the jade from before. The only difference was that instead of “War”, it was engraved with the character for “Shadow”.

At the Moon God Ruins, he had encountered grave danger of a completely unexpected degree. The surprises he had found there, such as the Shadow Demon Beast, or the Shura and the Cancer Orb, were so unbelievable that Ling Chen felt that he had been in a dream.

He had brought the Shura’s bones to his hometown, and buried him with his wife. Ling Chen had finally completed his adventures in the Moon God Ruins. He had also greatly benefitted, with the rewards being thousands of times better than he had expected.

“Goodbye, Shura. To be able to meet such a legendary figure like yourself, as well as receive your help, I feel incredibly honoured. Perhaps the reason you want me to become a Shura, as well as advised me to find a way to increase my resistance to lightning was because you didn’t want to see the power of the Lunar Scourge wasted. However, I am different from you. I’m not from this world, and there is someone who I must protect. Even if I can attain unlimited power, I will not let myself become like you, so I’m sorry, but I’ll have to disappoint you.”

Ling Chen lightly waved towards the place where the Shura was buried, and took out a teleport scroll. He shattered it, and returned to Azure Dragon City, then went directly to the Mayor’s residence

The last part of the Moon God Ruins Quest was to report to the Azure Dragon’s Mayor about all he had investigated. The origin of the mournful weeping was very clear... it was because of the Shadow Demon Beast using his Darkness power to control the bodies of the dead Moon God Representatives as his puppets. As such, this produced the mournful weeping from the Undead Moon God Representatives. As long as he told all this to the Azure Dragon’s Mayor, this last Quest of the Four Mega Quests would be completed.

Chapter 177 - Skill Copy Scroll

Azure Dragon City, within the Mayor's residence.

"So such a thing actually happened; one of the ten ancient demon beasts was actually hiding in the Moon God Ruins."

After hearing Ling Chen's report, the Azure Dragon's Mayor was incredibly shocked, "Then how did you escape?"

"Escape? That's completely impossible. Of course I died there and revived in town. After all, we players can revive after we die." Ling Chen calmly replied as he maintained a perfect poker face. Of course he couldn't tell the Azure Dragon's Mayor that the Shura had appeared and saved him. If this was reported to the Moon God Clan, Ling Chen figured that he'd be 'invited to have a cup of tea' with the Moon God Clan.

"True, true. It is, after all, one of the ten ancient demon beasts. No wonder no one who had gone before had come back alive. Against the powerful Shadow Demon Beast, the only ones who would be able to come back to report of it would be you players. I must report this to the Emperor, so that he can tell all of the Forgotten Continent's citizens not to go near." The Azure Dragon's Mayor earnestly replied.

"En." Ling Chen nodded his head, then continued, "Although, Mr Mayor doesn't have to be too worried. The Shadow Demon Beast should know that we players can revive, and thus the information of it hiding there has already been exposed by me. Therefore, in

order to prevent the Moon God Clan from finding it, it has probably left already."

The Azure Dragon's Mayor pondered for a while, then slowly nodded his head, "What you said is true. Although, I still need to report this to the Emperor. That's right, last time when I told the Emperor that you had received the War God's power he was very pleased. Now that you've achieved yet another great feat, he probably has a very good impression of you. In future, when you reach the Forgotten City, perhaps the Emperor will summon you."

"I would be honoured." Ling Chen slightly smiled. As the Emperor ruling over all humans in the Forgotten Continent, he was not someone any player could just go meet. He added, "So that's what I saw in the Moon God Ruins. Also, Mr Mayor, there's something I want to ask you about."

"Oh? What is it?"

"Well..." Ling Chen thought about what he was going to ask, then continued, "Mr Mayor, do you know where the Vermillion bird resides?"

"Vermillion bird?" The Azure Dragon's Mayor stared at him, "Why do you want to find the Vermillion bird?"

"There are some things I want the Vermillion bird to help me with." Ling Chen said after some thought.

“Ask the Vermillion bird for help?” The Azure Dragon’s Mayor looked at Ling Chen as if he was an idiot, “The Vermillion bird is the Vermillion Bird City’s guardian beast. It only appears in the Forgotten Continent’s East when there are disasters, and never easily appears in front of humans. Come to think of it, the last time the Vermillion bird appeared was at least 1,000 years ago. You want the Vermillion bird to help you? You might as well as ask Buddha.”

To be fair, anyone who Ling Chen asked in the entire Forgotten Continent would have answered him like he was a retard too.

“……Alright then, but all I need is for you to tell me where the Vermillion bird is.” Ling Chen helplessly said.

“No idea.” The Azure Dragon’s Mayor shook his head, “How can normal humans know of where a guardian beast lives? However, if there’s one person who knows where it lives, that would be the Vermillion Bird’s Mayor. Each of the four major city’s Mayor has a way to contact the guardian beast, but can only contact them during disasters. If you really want to find the Vermillion bird, your best bet is to ask the Vermillion Bird’s Mayor. However, even if he knows, he probably won’t tell you.”

Not being able to obtain any useful information from the Azure Dragon’s Mayor was pretty much what Ling Chen had expected. “Got it, thank you Mr Mayor. Goodbye.”

“En, goodbye, goodbye… don’t forget about that 1.4million gold that you owe me!”

"....."

As he walked out of the Mayor's residence, a system announcement sounded in his ears.

"Ding... you have successfully completed the Quest 'Moon God Ruins', Fame+300, SP+500, each of the four major stats+3, received one [Skill Copy Scroll]."

Having finished reporting to the Azure Dragon's Mayor, Ling Chen had completed the Moon God Ruins Quest.

For such an impossible quest, there were quite handsome rewards. Not only was there large amounts of Fame and SP, but also 12 stat points in total. Moreover, there was some sort of special scroll.

Skill Copy Scroll? Ling Chen had never heard of such a name before. Could it be a scroll that allowed one to steal skills from other people?

Ling Chen took the scroll out of his bag and looked at its attributes:

[Skill Copy Scroll]: A mysterious scroll that allows the user to copy a target's skills. When used, the user can choose one skill to copy from the target. The target must be within the user's

field of vision. Cannot copy limited use skills, passive skills or evolved skills. The copied skill will start from LV1. Disappears after use.

So there really was this sort of godly scroll-it was just like what its name suggested.

Ling Chen's mind reeled. He doubted that he would ever be able to find such a scroll, so he would have to put this one to good use by copying a powerful skill. To date, the most powerful skills he had seen were obviously the [Shura's Death Domain] and [Shura's Descent], but he already had these two skills, and they were both limited use skills. Thus, apart from those two skills, the strongest skill he had seen was...

After thinking for a while, Ling Chen put the scroll away. He looked at the time; it was already past 10pm.

After entering the Moon God Ruins, encountering the Shadow Demon Beast and the Shura, as well as taking the Shura's bones back to his hometown, it had become quite late. He was glad that he had prepared dinner for Shui Ruo in advance.

After logging out, Ling Chen left the Mystic Moon world. He opened his eyes, and found that the room was in total darkness. He subconsciously stretched out his hand to the side, but could not find Shui Ruo's body.

"Ruo Ruo."

Ling Chen sat up, and softly called out for her, but did not get a reply. He saw that the light in the living room was still on. He hurriedly jumped down from the bed, and walked into the living room.

Ling Shui Ruo sat against the sofa, her eyes closed, while breathing gently. Her jet black hair cascaded down her shoulders, and shone under the light in the living room.

Although her sleeping position didn't look too natural, it still made Ling Chen stand and appreciate how beautiful she was. In front of her, on the table, were many plates of delicious looking food-but not the ones that Ling Chen had prepared. From how the plates of dishes were placed, as well as the aesthetic way the dishes looked, it was obvious how lovingly and carefully the one who cooked the dishes had been.

However, all of this looked untouched. There was only one explanation...

The corners of his eyes became slightly moist, and Ling Chen almost wanted to slap himself a few times... Ling Chen's cooking was superb, and in the past Shui Ruo had learnt from him, earnestly saying that she wanted to cook for him for the rest of his life. However, after she had been diagnosed with the Isrock Disease, she had not been able to cook a single meal for him. Shui Ruo, who had finally recovered from the Isrock Disease, had secretly decided to cook for him today. She had waited for him to come out of the game so that they could eat together. And so she waited, and waited, and waited... until she had finally fallen

asleep.

"This goddamn Quest!!" Ling Chen cursed in his mind. He quietly walked over, and silently gazed at Shui Ruo, his heart filled with warmth and love. He reached out, and put his arm around her.

"Mmm..."

Shui Ruo slowly woke up. She opened her diamond-like eyes, and started to smile, "Big brother! You've finally come out! You must be hungry, right? Today, I made dinner for you too!"

"En!" Ling Chen nodded his head as he looked lovingly at her.

"It's just that.... I haven't cooked in a long, long time, so I don't know how it'll taste. Big brother... have a taste." Ling Shui Ruo looked at Ling Chen nervously and expectantly, as well as joyously that she had finally cooked for him.

Ling Chen smiled, "As long as it's made by Ruo Ruo, it'll definitely be the most delicious food made in the world."

Ling Chen picked up a bowl of congee that was, surprisingly, still warm. While waiting for Ling Chen, Shui Ruo must have had to reheat the food many times. Ling Chen scooped a spoonful into his mouth.

"Is it nice?" Shui Ruo looked at Ling Chen in anticipation.

Ling Chen vigorously nodded his head, then brought another spoonful of congee to her lips, “How can congee made by Ruo Ruo not be delicious? Here, I’m sure you’re hungry too.”

“Feed me, big brother.” Shui Ruo batted her eyelashes at him, and gave a mischievous smile. She slightly closed her eyes.

Seeing this beautiful girl in front of him, Ling Chen gently smiled. Over the years, he had often wondered why he had been so unlucky in this life, yet so lucky at the same time... to be able to meet Shui Ruo and be by her side was the best thing that had ever happened to him. He put down the bowl of congee and lifted his hands, gently holding her face in his hands. He slightly leaned forward, and gave her a gentle kiss on the lips.

Shui Ruo’s lips were soft and moist. Being suddenly kissed by Ling Chen, she did not move back, but instead eagerly wrapped her arms around him. She moved her head forwards, and tightly pressed her lips against his.

Chapter 178 - The Foreboding Auction (1)

Ling Shui Ruo suddenly kissed Ling Chen. Pulled into the moment, Ling Chen lost all control of his thoughts and tightly wrapped his arms around Ruo Ruo. He held her close, lightly bit her soft lips and greedily sucked, stealing her breath away. He pried open her nervously clenched, jaded teeth, finding his way to her tongue. He gently sucked some more, savouring the faint traces of sweetness that was filling the air and, bit by bit, his heart.

Shui Ruo released ‘woo’ sound as she caught her breath. Her eyelids quivered and her delicate neck slightly straightened. Breathing in Ling Chen’s scent, she didn’t resist. Her body felt weak as she carefully inserted her tongue into his mouth, allowing him to suck and taste her. To a man, this kind of forward yet affectionate act was simply one of the greatest, most irresistible of temptations.

Ling Chen became restless. It was impossible for him to not lose control. His breathing quickened and his movement hastened. He was going mad breathing in her sweetness, feeling her soft lips. His tongue continued circling hers as he roughly tugged open her loose fitting sleepwear. He placed both hands on her bare top and though his touch was vigorous and messy, it didn’t really matter because no matter where he touched, his hands would still be filled with the touch of her soft, smooth and delicate skin. Under the light, her body shone crisp white.

Her breathing was rapid and short and it wasn’t until Ling Chen noticed that he had kissed her to the point where she had difficulty catching her breath that he controlled himself, forcing himself to separate from her. Sitting up, Shui Ruo’s naked top was aligned

with his line of sight. This wasn't the first time he has seen her body but even so, he was still awed by her beauty.

For the past couple of years, Shui Ruo had had a weak body, suffering from Isrock Disease. He didn't dare do anything that could jeopardize her condition although recently, she had been recovering fairly well and her condition appeared to be improving. Even so, he still couldn't get with her under such conditions. His sight lingered on her beautiful body, eventually resting upon her chest. Her breasts were perked, her nipples hard. He had played with them countless times before but as with every time, he still couldn't help but praise the creator of those breasts. He reached out his hands, placed them on Shui Ruo's breasts and began to slowly and gently rub them.

Shui Ruo's cheeks flushed red as her sensitive body was caressed under Ling chen. She could not help but release a moan, parting her lips slightly, revealing two rows of jaded teeth.

She raised her head and pouted her lips. Her eyes glistened as she gazed at him, " Big Brother, are you... going to eat Ruo Ruo?"

Ling Chen let out a chuckle before he reached out both hands and sat her up on his knees, " There will be a time when I will eat Ruo Ruo up, but before then, we should fill our stomachs first."

He had one arm around Shui Ruo's waist, holding her in place while the other hand reached for the chopsticks. He enjoyed the feel of her body against his as he feasted on the handmade dinner she had made for him. To him, this happiness was like no other in the world.

World of Mystic Moon

Today was not destined to be a peaceful day. In fact, it could be said to be the liveliest day since the opening of Mystic Moon. This was because at midnight today, the Money Exchange System between the World of Mystic Moon and The Real World would be officially open. Players would be able to exchange between Chinese Yuan and game currency at a 1 to 1 exchange rate. The process was fairly easy, there wasn't any need to go to a specialist for such matters and it was an automatic system that could be done with one's own personal bank details.

As a player's initial city, Azure Dragon City would have drastic changes from today onwards. Players belonging to commercial facilities, recreational facilities, residential facilities would begin to rise in power and truly start to immerse themselves into the World of Mystic Moon.

On the massive money exchange day, all of the players, including those from overseas, would have all their attention placed upon the same place...Azure Dragon City's auction hall. Because this was the morning they would auction off China's first piece of Guild Creation Token. The owner of this piece of Guild Creation Token would then decide which guild would become the first official guild in Mystic Moon.

The sale for the tickets to the auction was fairly late at night, being scheduled on the day of the auction itself at one in the morning just before dawn. The hour after the commencement of the Money Exchange System, that was when the sale of the auction

tickets would begin. Due to the auction of the first guild token luring in players, the auctioneers didn't need to worry about tickets not selling. There was no suspense. All twenty thousand entry tickets were sold out in less than half an hour.

It was currently quarter past eight in the morning, the auction perimeter had already been surrounded by many players as though they were afraid of missing out on the slightest thing. At this point in time, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo had only just logged on.

"Wow! So pretty, Big Brother! What's the name of this?" Shui Ruo asked, opening the silver casket that was held in Big Brother's hands. Whatever was being held inside emitted such a bright light that it made Shui Ruo shout in astonishment.

"This is called the Moonlight Treasure Box. Not only does it emit beautiful rays of light, but amongst those rays of light will appear the world's most beautiful image. Ruo Ruo, you try and observe these rays of light and see if you notice anything," Ling Chen said with a smile.

"Okay," Shui Ruo nodded her head and then very diligently looked at the beautiful rays of light being emitted by the Moonlight Treasure Box. Every person who looked into the Moonlight Treasure Box had a different experience. Others would not be able to see what you see, but Ling Chen believed that what Shui Ruo would see could only be one thing...

" Wow! Big Brother, I saw Big Brother! Big Brother is smiling, smiling very handsomely!"

Shui Ruo was happy but also bemused and she contined staring at the image within the light for some time, reluctant to turn away. After a long while, she finally raised her head and shifted her focus onto him. She shouted, “ Big Brother, did you put your own image into the light?”

“Haha, of course not. This Moonlight Treasure Box’s light originates from a very magical stone, a kind of stone that reveals what is in the heart, so when a person looks at these lights, it will portray the image of that person’s favourite, most precious person or object,” declared Ling Chen with a smile.

“Then… what Big Brother sees is Ruo Ruo?” Shui Ruo blinked at Ling Chen.

“Of course it is. When I looked into the Moonlight Treasure Box and saw Ruo Ruo, I just knew I had to buy it. As long as I had it, even if Ruo Ruo was not beside me, I could see Ruo Ruo whenever I wanted.”

“So magical… if only I had a box like this too, then even if Big Brother was not beside me, I would also still be able to see him whenever I wanted.”

“ Then, if you really like it, I’ll give this box to you Ruo Ruo.”

“No way!” Ling Shui Ruo took a last glance at the Moonlight Treasure Box, then returned it to Ling Chen’s hands and ran off with a smile, “Hehe, I really want to be able to see Big Brother

every second and every minute, but I want even more so for Big Brother to be able to see me every second and minute, so that there will never come a day when you will forget about me…”

Looking at Shui Ruo’s back, the edges of Ling Chen’s mouth slowly curved up into a smile. How could there ever be a day when I will forget you? Even if I were to forget myself, I could never forget you.

Every morning, members of Heart’s Dream gathered for a meeting at a simple, small house. Ling Chen and Shui Ruo would always be the last two to arrive, but after they did, just like in the past, the girls would come forth and surround them. In two steps, Xiao Qi jumped to stand in front of Ling Chen and asked eagerly, “Big brother Ling Chen, we finally finished the quest where you collect Red Crystal Grass. The reward for it is pretty good. Oh yeah, Big Brother Ling Tian, have you finished the ‘Moon God Ruins’ quest yet? With Big Brother Ling Tian’s abilities, you should have finished it already! Was it very difficult and thrilling?”

Ling Chen raised his brows and said, “With me, your Big Brother Ling Tian, personally doing this quest, of course it would be completed. Difficulty and thrills are a must.”

In Xiao Qi and the rest of the girls’ presence, Ling Chen had to make the overview of the Moon God Ruins quest brief. Of course, he definitely couldn’t mention the appearance of Shura. Despite only talking about the Undead Moon God Representatives, the girl’s continued to listen attentively with all kinds of nervousness and excitement. When he had finally finished recounting his quest, he immediately changed the topic and said, “Meng Xin, this

morning's first piece for auction, the Guild Creation Token... do you think it will be worth fighting for?"

Yun Meng Xin smiled and shook her head, she didn't speak, to the girls, Ling Chen's words were casual and that of a joke. Xiao Qi said, "We are currently a group of 6, and can only count as a very small guild. We don't have any fame, power, or money, so there's no way for us to fight with the bigger guilds. Yesterday, big brother told me about the last time a Guild Creation Token had gone up for sale. It was even more thrilling than watching an actual fight."

"Okay." Ling Chen stood, straightening his back and raising his torso. The smile on his face seemed like a smile but at the same time not, "Fellow ladies, are you interested in seeing a snatch war that is more intense and more fierce in comparison to an actual fight?"

"Of course!" Xiao Qi was the first to raise her hand in approval, but her face revealed a sudden discouragement, "But the sales for the tickets suddenly opened at midnight, and we were all asleep by that time. I forgot to ask my Big Brother to buy us a few tickets too and it would be impossible for us to obtain tickets now...How about I go ask my Big Brother for a couple of tickets? I think I could get around 6 tickets from him."

"My elder brother should have some too," said Yun Meng, " Although we don't have the right to compete with the others, all the largest guilds will be attending this auction. Moreover, understanding the current power dynamics within our China Region is also very important. I agree to going to this auction."

“Okay, we’ll settle on that. We, Heart’s Dream shall gather in the morning for the auction. “ Ling Chen stood up from his seat and glanced at the time. It was already eight-thirty, half an hour until the commencement of the auction: “ With regards to entry tickets, you guys don’t need to worry, just leave it to me.”

Chapter 179 - The Foreboding Auction (2)

When Ling Chen and the five other girls reached the center of the auction house, they discovered that it was extremely overcrowded, with over 20,000 seats completely sold out. Outside stood a large number of players without tickets who were unable to enter, anxiously buzzing around. Getting to the auction hall, Ling Chen examined the surrounding crowd and gave a condescending look.

“Good heavens! The VIP Box?! Are we... are we really sitting here?”

The girls could not believe it. The VIP Box was reserved only for the most distinguished guests. Even the Yan Huang Alliance and the Skyfall Dynasty’s top leaders were ineligible to sit there, and were forced to sit with the rest of the players in the crowd.

“Of course, I’ve made a booking a few days in advance,” replied Ling Chen. Casually, he sat down in the middle of the box seat and gave another quick glance around. “But that’s not important, the auction is about to begin. Watch and have some fun.”

After saying this, his face lit up with a sinister smile.

Yun Meng Xin took a look at Ling Chen, and mused about it. The VIP only box was located above the hall and positioned above the other seats. The VIP seats were reserved for whoever the auction found to be the most distinguished guest. They were not something that could be bought with money.

The box had lit up, and the players below focused their attention on the box, there was much speculation on who was allowed to enter the box. But the box had one way windows: people on the inside could clearly see the outside but from the outside they could only see blurry silhouettes.

The person who consigned the guild creation token for auction. Could it be? Everyone was all thinking the same thing.

“After the auction, remember to find out who is in the VIP box,” was being whispered throughout the large hall.

“Long Tian Yun is in the centre of the third row. There are two people beside him: The Sword Emperor to his left, and the Flame Emperor to his right. Long Tian Yun always keeps them with him during significant events.” Yun Meng Xin indicated towards Long Tian Yun with her eyes, and slowly said, “The Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor were the top Chinese players in Physical Attack and Magic Attack respectively, and both of these players are in the Yan Huang Alliance. Their strength is quite terrifying, and with these two people to protect him, Long Tian Yun doesn’t have to worry about his safety.”

This was the first time Ling Tian saw Long Tian Yun in the game world, sitting in the auction hall’s prime location looking ahead with a cutting gaze, cold eyes, and barely a smile on his face. Despite the exceptional loudness around him, he continued to look straight ahead, and even as the VIP box lit up, he didn’t turn around to take a look. Elegantly indifferent, unaffected by anything, nothing caught his attention.

Regardless of appearance, temperament, power, fame, wealth, background, and strength, one could say he was the best. To marry such a man was something some women couldn't even dream of. After silently staring at Long Tian Yun for a few seconds, Ling Chen's eyes revealed subtle bursts of awe. Then he proceeded to examine the Sword Emperor.

The Sword Emperor's whole body was completely wrapped in a cloak, not a single hair nor eyes could be seen. It was as if this person's entire body did not make contact with the light. Staring at the Sword Emperor, Ling Chen furrowed his brow. Who is this person?

Suddenly, the Sword Emperor's head turned, and faced Ling Tian's direction. Through a thick black cloth, Ling Chen could feel two extremely cold, emotionless eyes staring at him. Ling Chen looked away – he was a little shocked. Although he had a keen sense of perception, it seemed that he may have underestimated the Sword Emperor.

"What's wrong?" The Sword Emperor suddenly caught the attention of Long Tian Yun.

The Sword Emperor looked back, and fixed those cold eyes to the front, not reacting.

Long Tian Yun smiled helplessly. Everyone knew that the Sword Emperor was his right hand man, but what people didn't know, was that other than protecting him, and listening to his commands, the Sword Emperor has never looked him in the eye, and has also never spoken before... not a word.

In the ten years past, no one had ever heard the Sword Emperor speak. All of the Sword Emperor's time had been spent on training in sword skills and gaining knowledge, which had reached a terrifying peak. The Sword Emperor had even cut off all emotions to become more focused. The Sword Emperor became an emotionless, unable to laugh, unable to cry, and unable to speak robot.

"Those three people are the main leaders of the Skyfall Dynasty- Skyfall, Against the Sky and Judging Sky. They are also referred to as the Three Heavenly Kings. All three of them were placed in the top 20, on both the Heaven Rankings and the Earth rankings. Amongst them, Skyfall and Against the Sky were both in the top ten of the Player Level Rankings. The Skyfall Dynasty is extremely powerful and is also supported by China's largest financial group. They are one of the greatest contenders for the token. Their biggest rival is the Yan Huang Alliance."

When Yun Meng Xin was nodding, Ling Chen nodded his head, remembering the appearance of these three people.

"Sitting behind Long Tian Yun, was Qi Qi's older brother Xiao Qiu Feng, ranked 7th, with the title 'Cold Magistrate'. He was from the Battle Alliance, which was ranked in China's top ten overall. A large number of members in the Battle Alliance were from a mafia gang of the real world, and as a result, they were disciplined and capable of acting with sheer ruthlessness. Other people usually try to avoid them, so as to not provoke them. The Battle Alliance can be regarded as a subsidiary of the Yan Huang Alliance, but in reality they are only half loyal to them. Xiao Qiu Feng truly loves the Battle Alliance, and would take on anyone who opposed it,

even if that person was Long Tian Yun."

"Yes, yes!" Xiao Qi immediately nodded. "My brother isn't afraid of anyone, especially Long Tian Yun. The Yun Huang Alliance tried to become like a father to the Battle Alliance, but my brother and I refuse to have it like that."

At the Novice Village, when Ling Chen met Xiao Qiu Feng, he was impressed. To the right of Xiao Qi Feng, he saw Yun Feng. He was looking around for something, but what?

"My brother's Alliance was established only three years ago, and it has developed very quickly, so it is quite full with newbies, and its strength is lacking, but with belief in the family's financial support and the support of the Yan Huang Alliance, it will soon rise to power. The leader of the Alliance is my brother. In fact, it was because of what my family left behind, that the Yan Huang Alliance exists." Yun Meng Xin's voice contained a deep frustration.

Before Mystic Moon, Yun Meng Xin rarely stepped into the virtual game world. But to chase her impossible dreams, she did her best and worked hard, and came to a deep understanding of the virtual world. Before the auction officially began, she individually pointed out all of the top leaders present to Ling Chen, as well as talked about some general information and personal attributes. Ling Chen committed all of this to memory.

Numerous players were anxiously waiting, 9am had finally come, and a man came out from the back. Around 60 years old, with a thick moustache, body slightly bent, it was the entertaining Lord

Fortune.

The Auction hall quietened down. And all attention was focused on Lord Fortune. Outside the auction house, the media was also recording live on the action. After all, the auction would directly determine the first official Guild in China. Would it be the Yan Huang Alliance or the Skyfall Dynasty? Or would it be someone else entirely?

“Fellow friends from another world, welcome to Azure Dragon City’s first public auction in the Auction House City Centre. I, Lord Fortune, will be the sole host of this auction, and I will host the auction in its entirety. Everyone here has chosen to be at our City Centre Auction House today, and for that we express our thanks. We also have plenty of reason to believe that this auction will not let you down.” Lord Fortune stood onstage, and after giving a brief opening, he got to the point. “So, I do not wish to waste any precious time, let the Azure Dragon City Centre public auction officially begin!”

Under the spotlight, Lord Fortune was completely calm, apparently having done this many times before. “This auction will be auctioning 10 items, we believe that each one will be a great surprise. Then, with the start of our auction, the first item is... a consumable!”

A Consumable?

The answer was quickly before their eyes.

On the Auction Hall's big screen was the properties of the first auction item:

> [Dark Strange Smelling Beans]: Weird beans of a strange origin. It is a bean shaped like sheep dung, releasing a weird smell. After eating -100HP, +100SP.

Wow–

A significant increase in SP… there was an uproar both on the inside and outside of the Auction House – all the players were shocked, surprised, and weren't sure if their eyes were seeing something wrong. Consumable items were certainly not unusual, but it was the effect that was unusual: SP is so difficult to attain, and all the players were in short supply. The effect here could be called no less than incredible!

"As seen from the first auction item, you can directly increase the level of your skills. I've been alive for so many years, and this is the first time I've seen this. 100 points for one use – its value is definitely high, and I hope everyone is aware of this. Now, a consumable that can directly increase one's SP, the starting price is… 10,000 gold coins."

Chapter 180 - Jadeite Jade

Back then, Ling Chen had bought the bean from the Underworld Merchant Qian Gun Gun for 5000 gold. However, at the auction, the starting bid was already double that price. To Ling Chen, 100SP was only a tiny amount. The amount of SP required to upgrade his powerful skills would make most players' brains explode. However, 100SP to most other players was a gigantic figure, especially at this stage of the game. It was the amount of SP one could gain from killing a LV10 Lord Boss by themselves, which was no easy feat.

A starting bid of 10,000 gold caused the audience to be slightly shocked. However, this sort of legendary item was not for ordinary players. The difference in wealth and power that the Money Exchange System had brought became quite obvious.

"Twenty thousand!" Just as Lord Fortune finished speaking, a player wearing Elementalist equipment hastily yelled as he stood up. The bid he yelled was yet again double the starting bid, showing how desperately he wanted this bean. Being able to gain 100SP just from eating a bean was something that people could only dream about.

After shouting out his bid, he looked around, and was very pleased with his decision. However, as soon as a second bidder appeared, the entire Auction House began to clamour, with bids starting to furiously fly out.

"Twenty one thousand gold!"

“Twenty three thousand gold!”

“Twenty five thousand gold!!”

“Thirty thousand gold!”

Within ten seconds, the highest bid had risen to thirty thousand gold coins. The player who had first bid quietly sat down.

Sitting in the VIP Box, Ling Chen’s smile grew wider and wider as he heard the bidding price continuously increase. Back when he had bought it from Qian Gun Gun for 5,000 gold coins, he was very pained by his expenditure. However, now, he was certain that it would sell for at least ten times that amount. He even began to think that Qian Gun Gun had sold it to him for too cheap a price! Of course, he knew that at this stage of the game, a free 100SP without any risk or danger was incredibly valuable. However, near the middle or late stages of the game, when people could easily gain hundreds of SP, this bean would become almost worthless.

“Forty eight thousand gold! My name is Red Devil, the Second Master of the Red Flower Alliance. My “Landslide Slash” needs exactly 100SP to level up, so I hope everyone will give me face. I will be very grateful.”

The Red Flower Alliance had a fair bit of influence in China, and as the Second Master, he held a high position within the guild. However, he had chosen the wrong time and place to use this card. After all, because of the Guild Creation Token, there were many powerful leaders and bosses gathered at the Auction House.

Comparatively, the Red Flower Alliance could only count as a second-rate guild; who would give them such face?

"Fifty thousand gold!" Immediately, a cold voice brought the bidding price up to fifty thousand gold coins.

"It's big brother!" Xiao Qi pointed at the person who had raised the price. It was her elder brother, the Alliance Master of the Battle Alliance-Xiao Qiu Feng.

The Second Master of the Red Flower Alliance looked at Xiao Qiu Feng, then wordlessly sat down.

Ling Chen tapped his chin. Even Xiao Qiu Feng was willing to spend 50,000 gold coins for the 100SP. It seemed that there was great demand for the bean. Then, if one could obtain the recipe for this bean and produced them in batches, they would be able to become incredibly rich.

Of course, having skills that all needed thousands of SP to upgrade, Ling Chen simply couldn't understand how valuable 100SP was to normal players.
"Eighty thousand gold! This 100SP is mine!"

A slightly rough voice sounded out. It was one of the Three Heavenly Kings of the Skyfall Dynasty, 'Judging Sky'. As one of the Three Heavenly Kings of the Skyfall Dynasty, he was known by all players in China. It was not at all strange for the Three Heavenly Kings to be personally present at this auction, given that there was a Guild Creation Token up for grabs. Hearing the price

that he had just yelled, many players helplessly put down their auction paddles. Out of the Three Heavenly Kings, Skyfall was the strongest, as well as had the most peaceful personality, then ‘Against the Sky’, then ‘Judging Sky’, who was the wildest out of them all. He always did whatever he wanted to without considering the consequences. Using his power to bully others was what he liked to do, causing him to become quite infamous. As such, most people did not want to anger him easily.

Since he was interested in the 100SP, there were not many people who were brave enough to go against him. The Auction Hall momentarily lapsed into silence. At this moment, Long Tian Yun slightly smiled, and raised his auction paddle, “So brother Judging Sky also came, this is quite rare. However, I’m sorry to say that I also want this 100SP. One hundred thousand.”

As the two largest powers in China, the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty seemed to be on amicable terms on the surface, but they were always fighting and opposing each other. His bid was evidently to make things hard for Judging Sky. Judging Sky’s face changed, and was about to explode, but Skyfall beside him held him back. He quietly said to Judging Sky, “Sit down, our goal this time is the Guild Creation Token. Don’t make trouble for me. Hmph, isn’t it just 100SP.”

Although Judging Sky’s personality was fairly rash, he was deferential to Skyfall, and so he coldly harrumphed and sat down.

“This friend here has bid one hundred thousand gold coins, does anyone have a higher bid? You might not see a second item in your life that can directly give you SP. With this 100SP, you can greatly

increase your power. The benefits you will receive are not as simple as just 100SP."

However, the Auction Hall remained silent. With Long Tian Yun personally making a bid, even the Three Heavenly Kings had fallen silent. No one dared to challenge Long Tian Yun.

"Then, one hundred thousand gold going once."

"One hundred thousand gold going twice."

"One hundred thousand gold going three times!"

"Sold! Congratulations on winning this mystical item. I hope it brings you great benefits."

At the auction, players were not allowed to bid prices that were greater than the amount of gold they had on them. Once an item was sold, the auctioned item would directly enter the winner's bag, and gold would be automatically deduced.

Long Tian Yun took out the bean from his bag, and looked at it. He didn't use it immediately, but rather brought it before the Sword Emperor, "If you want it, you can take it."

The Sword Emperor stood silently, like an ice sculpture.

Long Tian Yun chuckled, and walked in front of Xiao Qiu Feng,

“Since brother Xiao seemed like he wanted this, then the best person to have it would be you.”

Xiao Qiu Feng did not reject, and took the bean. He silently nodded his head in thanks.

Long Tian Yun treated his subordinates very generously, this was something that everyone knew.

After the first item had been sold, the Auction Hall once again quietened down. Although the bean was quite amazing, it didn’t cause too much of a commotion. After all, everyone was focused on the grand finale, the Guild Creation Token. As the first official guild would be determined at the end of this Auction, everything before then was just the calm before the storm.

“The auction for the second item will now begin. I believe this item will not disappoint everyone. Please look at the screen.”

As Lord Fortune spoke, the information regarding the second item appeared on the screen.

[Jadeite Jade]: Type: Energy Crystal, Grade: Elementary, Attribute: Wind. Effect: Gives immunity to Movement Speed debuffs.

Inside the VIP Box, Ling Chen casually glanced at the screen,

then spat out the tea in his mouth.

“Eh? Big brother, are you alright? Did you choke?” Shui Ruo immediately patted his back, asking in a worried manner.

“It’s nothing, it’s nothing.” Ling Chen quickly waved his hand. He once again looked at the effects of the piece of jade… Lady Luck seemed to be on his side. He cleared his throat, and contacted Yun Feng through his communication device, “Yun Feng! Do me a favour! Please buy that energy crystal for me at all costs!”

Yun Feng’s body suddenly sat up, and looked around for Ling Chen… of course, he never would have thought that Ling Chen would be in the only VIP Box.

“Sure! Leave it to me. Say, where are you guys sitting? Is Meng Xin with you?” Yun Feng curiously asked.

“We can talk about this later, just help me buy that jade. It’s very important to me.”

“Ahem,” Lord Fortune cleared his throat, “That’s right, the second item is a rare energy crystal. Although it is only an Elementary grade crystal, this doesn’t determine its value. The difference between crystals and other equipment is that they will never lose their worth because of levels. Movement Speed is an important stat to any class. If one is affected by a Movement Speed debuff, then they will pretty much already have one foot in the grave. However, with this jade, in this Mystic Moon world, you will never… that’s right, never worry about your Movement Speed

being decreased. When facing against monsters that have Movement Speed debuffs, you won't have any worries at all."

"The starting price for this piece of jade is... five thousand gold coins."

When announcing the starting price for the jade, Lord Fortune slightly cringed.

Having run the Auction House for so many years, Lord Fortune pretty much tell how much an item would sell for just by looking at it. Although this piece of jade was an Elementary Energy Crystal, which was pretty rare at the current stage of the game, its only use was to provide immunity to Movement Speed debuffs.

However, he didn't know of any monsters below LV20 that even had Movement Speed debuffs.

Moreover, at the beginning of the game, most players only had Lunar Chains that could socket a maximum of two energy crystals. Most physical attack professions would want to use crystals that increased Attack Power, Movement Speed, Critical chance or Pierce chance. As for magic professions, they would want crystals that increased Magic Attack Power, MP, or MP recovery. The two sockets that they had already weren't enough for the crystals that were truly necessary to them, much less a piece of jade that only looked nice.

He didn't know what was wrong with the brain of the player who gave this jade to him, but he must have been desperate for money.

He had actually set the starting price of this jade at five thousand gold coins. As such, Lord Fortune could only helplessly give an awkward laugh, “Ahaha…”

With a starting bid of 5,000 gold coins, probably only a retard would buy it. It would most likely have to be auctioned again at a later date when it actually became useful to players. If it wasn’t because there weren’t enough items to auction, as this was only the beginning, Lord Fortune wouldn’t even want to auction such an item.

Who would have thought, just as he finished speaking, a clear voice immediately rang out, as if the owner of the voice was afraid that someone else would want the jade, “Eight thousand, eight thousand gold!!”

Chapter 181 - Winter Of That Year, Hundred Miles Of Ice

Ling Chen had personally told Yun Feng that he had to get the jade no matter what. So when Lord Fortune established the minimum selling price, Yun Feng immediately jumped up and shouted. So eager were his actions that it was as if he would rush the stage and steal it just to have it securely in his possession before the auction was even complete. Yun Feng realised that the room had fallen silent after his shout. He turned his head to see the gaze of every head in the room fixated on him, their incredulous expressions seemingly regarding him as an idiot. It appeared that he was the only one who was willing to bid.

“8000 gold coins, for a jade that is not even as powerful as an Elementary Strength Crystal? What are you thinking big brother?” Yun Meng Xin was puzzled. Maybe he needs it for a specific mission? She thought to herself.

Elementary Strength Crystals and Elementary Magic Crystals – the two must-have crystals for players. They themselves could only sell up to 200 gold coins, but this basic energy crystal was selling at 5000 gold coins a minimum? What a joke. The crystal itself only had the ability to give immunity to speed down debuffs, which was essentially useless at this stage. The only thing more ridiculous than this joke of a price was that there was someone actually willing to pay for it.

The silence in the auction hall grew more profound and Yun Feng, realising his gaffe, abruptly sat down, internally wishing that he hadn’t so loudly humiliated himself in public. “What do

you need that jade for?" Xiao Qiu Feng whispered next to him, "It's flashy but totally impractical."

"It'll be useful," was all Yun Feng could say in reply, chuckling to himself as he did so.

Lord Fortune recovered from his shock to continue with the auction. "Well, my friend here has got great taste," he began, "The price has risen to 8000 gold coins. Is there anyone who would like to beat it? Even though this jade is only a low-grade crystal, it does possess some rare and special abilities. If you miss this opportunity now, you might regret it later."

"Eight thousand gold coins going once..."

"Eight thousand gold coins going twice..."

"Eight thousand gold coins going three times..."

Lord Fortune paused dramatically to let this fact sink in before proclaiming, "Sold! This jade is now yours now my friend," he nodded at Yun Feng.

With the jade safely in his hands, Yun Feng let out a sigh of relief. He had not let Ling Chen down. Yu Feng quickly sent a message to Ling Chen to inform him of his success. As he calmed down from his excitement, it started to occur to him that paying 8000 gold coins for a low-grade jade was maybe not the brightest idea. What does Ling Chen want it for?

In a hidden corner of the map, a man burst into laughter, “Hahahaha, ahahaha! How about now, huh? It was sold wasn’t it! And for 8000 gold coins! Hahahah! And you said that I was an idiot? Hahahaha!”

A man dressed in a white gown, somewhere in his twenties, had been monitoring the live auction closely. The man was dancing around in his excitement, laughing hysterically as if he was a lunatic who had just escaped from the restrictive clutches of a mental institution. Next to him stood a man who appeared to be older. He, in contrast, was clothed entirely in black. The man in black cast a swift glance at the man in white, “Idiot,” he spat, coldly.

“Tsk!” The man in white returned to him a look of scorn, his eyes blazing with arrogance, “What’ve you got to say now? Nothing! I told you it would sell for at least 5000 gold coins. And now look! Tsk, tsk! 8000 gold coins! More than enough for us... um... for me to get as many girls as I want. We shall put our money together after noon and with more than 10000 gold coins, we’ll be rich! Hahaha, by that time, all we need to do is throw out some gold, beckon with our hands, and with my handsome looks, all the girls will be throwing themselves at me,” The man in white was getting carried away in his fantasies, “Even the Frozen Hearted Maneater’s icy coldness would melt and I could win her heart with ease.”

The man in black cringed, unimpressed.

“Ah,” the man in white focused the screen on Yun Feng, “This little brother sure does have good taste. Just look at him!

Handsome, charming, a good temperament; he's got a bright future ahead of him! I wouldn't mind befriending him if there's a chance."

The man in black couldn't take it anymore. He shut down the screen, brought out his weapon – a black sword made out of God knows what – and started walking away, towards the place of monsters.

"Hey! Boss, where are you going? Aren't you going to watch the live auction? The best parts are at the end, they're going to sell a Guild Creation Token and I'm sure that's gonna be exciting to watch!" The man in white saw him leaving, and quickly ran up to him.

"No." The man in black refused without hesitation.

"You're not watching it?! Why do you have to be such a party pooper! The auction is gonna be way more interesting than fighting around."

"I am not going to watch it."

"Ah, I understand now. My jade was sold for 8000 gold coins and that probably made you feel a bit embarrassed. Hehehe, don't be like this heh? We're no strangers, what's mine is yours also."

"Shut up."

“Okay okay, whatever, we won’t watch it. Where are you going anyways?”

“Level up.”

“I knew it. Can’t you find some other aspiration in life?”

“No.”

“Aiya, how many times do I have to tell you? Why can’t you understand? There are so many things this world could offer, so many things better than trying to level up. Like for instance… beautiful girls… Beautiful girls… Wow! Beautiful girl!”

A charming-looking female player had appeared. Players have not been known to enter this map considering the level of danger for them at this current stage. It was probably her curiosity that brought her here. Staring at the newly appeared female player, the man in white began drooling. He quickly caught himself and wiped away the drool, pulling the man in black back as he did so. He leered at the girl and lowered his voice so only the man in black could hear, “I was just talking about beautiful girls and look! This must be fate! Boss, be good and stay here. I’ll show you how to take down that beautiful girl. You mustn’t blink! Watch and learn okay? If you don’t look carefully you won’t be able to find a wife. Here I go!”

The man in white composed himself and strolled gracefully towards the girl.

“Hey there beautiful, how come you’re here all by yourself? It’s rather dangerous here. Are you, perhaps, lost?”

Standing in front of the girl, the man in white stood confidently, put on a gentle smile and softened the fiery look in his eyes. The man in white seemed like a man of great temperament. Someone who was easily likeable. The trick was disguising his lust. If he just masked any telltale expressions that could reveal his pedophilic thoughts, his smile would be lethal to any young girl.

Of course, to win over a beautiful girl, you needed more than just the right face and a few pick up lines. So as he talked, the man in white changed into his combat outfit, a standard archer’s ensemble. He then took out a silver longbow – a Silver grade weapon – and held it in his hand. At this stage, to be able to own a Silver grade weapon meant that either you were either incredibly strong, or just incredibly lucky. Either way, when equipped with a Silver grade weapon, your assets double. At the same time, the man in white’s name lit up — Winter Of That Year.

‘Winter Of That Year’ – currently ranked seventh out of all players in the whole entire China, placed first out of all the Archers!

It was already nerve-racking to enter a completely unfamiliar area. To then have a complete stranger randomly coming up to her, it was understandable that the girl felt even more anxious now. She replied carefully “I… came here on accident.”

Her anxiety, however, was lost on the man in white, who felt perplexed that the girl hadn’t so much as blinked let alone

swooned at his displayed status.

What?! Did she not see my name? I placed 7th in the whole entire ranking chart! Why didn't she react as expected? Winter Of That Year frowned inside while simultaneously forcing more warmth into his smile, "Oh, is that so. But here is a dangerous place. It's easy to get in, but very hard to make it out. However, don't worry about it. You will be safe under my protection. I will bring you out. And by the way, my name is Winter Of That Year. You can call me Big Brother Winter. What's your name pretty? Where are you from?"

"I'm... from Si Chuan (Southern Region)." The girl replied tentatively as she didn't quite trust the man in white's smile. She had decided to keep her guard up.

"Si Chuan? What a coincidence! I'm from the North-East region as well! Is this fate or what! Don't worry, you will be safe, I'm here to protect you. I am the strongest archer in China. Oh yeah, do you see that stone-faced man in black over there? He's dangerous, someone not to be messed around with. Make sure you don't go near him okay? Well then, beautiful girl, would you like me to escort you out? Or to accompany you to level up? Oh right, can we add each other first?"

"Uh...I'm...I'm...I should... I can... I can get out by myself," the girl was taken back by Winter Of That Year. She instantly categorised him as a 'dangerous figure'. The girl slowly backed away from him and prepared to run away as fast as possible. She looked nervously towards the stone-faced man that the man in white had previously pointed out. Suddenly, her eyes widened and

her jaw dropped.

“Hundred… Miles…Of Ice… Oh my God!!” Seeing the name hanging above the man’s head, the girl screamed before reflexively covering her mouth. Her eyes soon filled with tears. She dashed towards the man in black, ignoring the man in white. Clasping her hands in front of her chest, the girl looked at the man in black admiringly. “The name, the eyes, the temperament. Wow! This is real! It’s the stone-hearted swordsman, Hundred Miles Of Ice, ranked sixth on the Heaven Rankings! I got to see the stone-hearted swordsman in person…wow! This is like a dream.”

A withered leaf carried by the wind drifted slowly onto the gown of the rejected man in white. Tears rolled down his face as he patted his own broken heart and raised his head up to the sky at a forty-five degree angle. The man in white sobbed silently.

“My name is Summer Day’s Dream, I’m so… so honoured to meet you. Can I get to know you? I’m your hardcore fan and a loyal admirer… can we add each other? Also, this is my private number. If you ever find time, could you possibly send me a message? If you ever give me a call, I would be so happy I might die. And also, can I have your signature? Can I give you a hug? This is mine… also this…”

“……”

The man in black frowned, his mouth twitched furiously. Finally, he said to the girl, “Goodbye.”

As soon as the word left his mouth, the man in black turned and walked away without looking back.

The girl remained where she was standing, watching him leave in full fan-girl mode “He’s so cool!”

The man in white left the girl’s sight in torment. He sprinted towards the man in black, grabbed his collar and shouted in his face “Where is justice, where is justice?! I am painfully good looking, whereas you’ve got a dead man’s face. And yet she prefers you over me! This isn’t logical! This must be an exceptional case! It must be!”

The man in black glanced at the man in white’s ‘handsome face’, “Idiot.” He then shoved him away, and began strolling once again into the monster-active region.

The man in white watched him, “~ ！@#￥%……”

Chapter 182 - Loulan Queen (1)

The Azure Dragon City Central Auction House's auction continued, but nothing big had yet happened from when it started until now. Everything went well and according to plan, but except for the first auctioned item, one that could immediately add skill points, there weren't really any especially fascinating items. It was finally with the sale of the 7th item that the tension in the atmosphere started to grow.

It was nearly time for the main attraction of the auction – the Guild Creation Token. The people who were previously resting with their eyes closed opened them now and sat up straighter.

"Azure Dragon City Central Auction's first opened auction is now officially going into the last stage. Right now there are 3 final auction items and I believe that these last three items will be able to make each and every one of you scream your heads off. Now, please keep your eyes wide open and look behind at the big screen behind me. Bidding for the eighth auction item will officially begin now."

At this time, a black odd-shaped earring appeared on the screen. At closer glance, one could see it releasing a black mist.

The earring was very eye-catching to the players present in the auction. These types of accessories were ever uncommon these days, therefore the appearance of this earring alone was enough to warrant everyone's attention.

Cursed Earring:

Category: Earring, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: LV15 and above Magician occupation. A dark earring that releases the atmosphere of death, bearing a powerful magic, but will continuously swallow the HP of the wearer: magic attack power +25, spirit+10, -10 HP/second

There was a crashing sound.

A storm of cheers suddenly roared through the auction hall as the players exclaimed with delight when the cursed earring was presented. The big bosses that had initially shown no interest at the start of the auction instantly paid full attention. Especially alert were the players who had magic-type occupations. Half had gotten up excitedly, whilst others were content with merely drooling in desire, but all were staring at the Cursed Earring on the screen.

“Young Master! Young Master! You have to get this earring for me! With this earing, my attacking skills and leveling up speed would be greatly increased. If I can get my hands on this earring quickly, I believe that it wouldn’t be a problem to finish the Forest of Bones Quest.” Cang Yun who was beside Long Yun Tian couldn’t stay calm any longer. His eyes were intently fixed on the earring, not unlike how an eagle looks at its prey.

Magic attack power was the central attribute to a Magician and this Cursed Earring had +25 Magic Attack Power, +10 spirit, adding up to 45 points of magic attack power and 100 MP. In the early

stage of the game, this type of quality could only be described as terrifying. Plus, Cang Yun had just leveled up to LV15, meaning that he was at just the right level for this earring, if only he could get his hands on it.

If he did, his magic attack power would be far better than any of the other players. In contrast, the reduction of 10HP every second would not be a problem at all.

The earring itself was Gold grade. For all accessories, no matter what properties they had, this title alone would be enough to decide its value. Currently in all of China, less than 10 players owned Gold grade equipment. Having this type of Gold equipment was yet to be heard of.

“President Yan, didn’t you always wish to have me join your Yan Huang Alliance? If you can only get this earring, I will join in any second and the contract can be for 5 years of slavery, what do you think?”

“Brother Qiang, didn’t you always want me to be your girlfriend? If you can get this earring for me, tonight.. You can do whatever you want to me.”

“Boss!! You have to get this earring for me! If I have this earring, I promise that in three days I will be able to finish that ‘Howling Cave’ mission. By then, I will even be able to go one on one with Yan Huang Alliance’s Flame Emperor!

The auction place had become incredibly noisy with the

appearance of the Cursed Earring. There was every sort of yelling both inside and outside the hall itself. The Magician players who weren't able to enter the auction hall, but had enough money and power, had gone red in the eyes and were desperately bawling and shouting, wanting to break through the Auction hall's door.

"Wow, +45 points of magic attack and 100 points of magic... this equipment is just amazing." Xiao Qi was a Water Elementalist and couldn't stay calm for another minute. She was so excited that her hands were trembling. Taking out her cell phone, she spoke hurriedly, "Brother brotherbrotherbrotherbrotherbrotherbrother!! Can you hear me? I really want that Cursed Earring. Please get it for me! Brother, you have to, okay!!"

At the scene, Xiao Qi's reaction made the person beside her, Ling Cheng, speechless. He had to warn her, "Qi Qi, although this earring looks astonishingly elegant, in reality, it has more than just positive effects. The 45 points of magic attack is indeed powerful, but 10 points of HP would be dropped every second, this is not something that can be ignored."

"It's okay it's okay, just 10 points only. 5 seconds means only 50 HP, so I can always recover back after a while," said Xiao Qi, her face filled with excited expectation.

Ling Chen shook his head, "10 HP every second may sound not a lot, but once you equip it on you, your HP will decrease every second, and unless you take it off, it will never stop decreasing. Even if you entered a city, or rested, it wouldn't stop. Therefore, no matter what situation you are in, you will be in a nervous condition and will always have to keep an eye on your HP. It would

also get you distracted when you are in a battle, and magicians already have low HP, so having such equipment that swallows your HP even more would be dangerous. This thing is only suitable for powerful Magician experts with good battle sense. It really isn't suitable for you.'

"If that is really the case...." If someone else had said that, Xiao Qi would not have even bothered to listen, but since it was Ling Chen, it was very convincing. She thought about it seriously before nodding her head, saying, "I guess you are correct, but... but let's see if brother can get the earring. It would be the best if he did, but if not then... oh well."

Ling Chen didn't say anything, only sighed to himself. She still hasn't give up. Sigh.. I don't see why this stupid earring is so appealing, he thought.

Ling Chen felt confused inside. Had he only known that this girl liked it so much, he wouldn't have bothered selling it and just gave it to her directly.

To Ling Chen, this was actually a useless earring. By now, the Chinese community knew that there was a Gold grade LV10 Magic Staff that increased magic attack power by 35. That's right, 35. However this earring gave even more magic attack power than the LV10 Magic Staff! Every player wished they had a Gold grade Magic Staff and this earring. One could imagine how powerful they would be with both the Gold grade Magic Staff and the Cursed Earring. That was why, when the stats of the earring were revealed, it caught every single Magicians' eyes and hearts.

Lord Fortune was very satisfied with the reaction of the public when the earrings were announced. After allowing the players' excitement to build for a long time, he finally pretended to cough and clear his voice before yelling, "I understand each of your excited feelings, but it would wonderful if everyone could be quiet for awhile. As I believe everyone should know by now, the stats of the earring comes with a tiny negative effect. However, with its powerful magic power attack and spirit points, this effect can be totally ignored. I can say this without exaggerating: whichever magician wears this earring, at level 20, no, before level 25, their magic attack power would be unbeatable!!"

Lord Fortune's words had their desired effect and every single magician below the stage had their hands clenched and ready, their breaths held in with so much anticipation that their faces all became bright red.

'The earring is valuable, as I believe you, my friends, would know. So, which friend will be lucky enough to own this earring? Let us sit back and watch. This 'cursed earring' auction will now begin, its starting price is.... 100,000 gold coins!'

A thunderous yell carried from the end of the auction hall as soon as Lord Fortune finished speaking, "150 thousand!!!" the magnitude of the voice seemed to even shake off the dust on the ceiling. The players all secretly judged him. Top players who didn't take money for granted were all gathered here. 150 thousand to take the earring that was driving everyone crazy? Even idiots knew it was impossible.

"160 thousand gold coins!"

“180 thousand gold coins!”

“200 thousand gold coins! I am the Head of the World Alliance, I would be honoured if the friends here could give me some face and allow me to have this earring.”

“Piss off! This earring is mine, 300 thousand!!”

.....

.....

The auction hall was reaching its climax for the first time. In less than 1 minute there had been more than 300 bids. Lord Fortune probably couldn’t even hear who was bidding, and this was only within 1 minute. The earring’s price went from 100 thousand gold coins up to 500 thousand gold coins.

“I can’t believe that this useless earring is worth so much money. Seems like it is continuing to rise up,” observed Ling Chen while resting his chin on his hand. He was pleased to see that his ‘useless earring’ could cause such an uncontrollable scene. He had two Celestial grade equipment and Gold grade equipment all over him, so he already had no feelings for Gold grade equipment. He simply couldn’t experience what it felt for a normal player to own a Gold grade piece of equipment.

“600 thousand! I will get this earring!”

“650 thousand!!”

‘670 thousand! Who dares to snatch it from me!”

“700 thousand!”

“730 thousand! This friend has bid 730 thousand gold coins, are there any other friends with higher bids!”

The price was still increasing with an abnormal speed, causing the jaws of numerous audience members who were watching the bids rise. The audience couldn’t understand why the players were spending so much money bidding on something that wasn’t going to be used for a long time in a virtual game, 700 thousand gold coins was enough to buy a luxury car in real life.

The next voice finally rendered the hall quiet.

“1 million!”

A cold voice had just raised the price of the earring to 1 million gold coins. The person who bid stood up as they did so, casually scanning the crowd.

“Flame Emperor!” Everywhere, players called out his name.

Chapter 183 - Loulan Queen (2)

“Flame Emperor Cang Yan, considered universally to be the strongest Magician in China’s virtual game world. Even years after his rise to fame, no Magician ever surpassed him. His identity had always been kept secret, however big brother once said that he was once the protector family of the Long family – the family that held China’s highest political authority – which made his family just as powerful as the Xuan Yuan family. Also, he was the family heir and was gifted with astonishing esper abilities and extremely powerful strength. His natural abilities made him the most impressive Magician in the whole virtual game world.” Yun Meng Xin calmly explained to Ling Chen after Cang Yan had stepped up.

Ling Chen gave a small nod. To be honest, he wasn’t fascinated at all with this guy, the so called Flame Emperor. The fact that he had taken interest in this pair of earrings that could significantly increase Magic Attack Power was no surprise. Even though everyone had expected the Flame Emperor to appear, they were still nonetheless taken back by the sight of him. The Flame Emperor had brought the price all the way up to one million. That’s right, one million! The price he’d offered was way beyond most players’ budgets. This left the rest of the bidders looking dejected. “One million already!! The seller must be so happy he’s laughing his head off!” Xiao Qi squealed in excitement.

“I dare to bet you five cents that the guy definitely is not laughing,” Ling Chen whispered quietly.

“One million and thirty thousand!!”

“One million and fifty thousand!!”

“One million… Sixty thousand!!”

Although Cang Yan was now involved, a lot of players were still reluctant to give up, unable to resist the great temptation of the ‘Cursed Earring’. However, the number of offers had declined significantly, and the increases in bids were slowing down. It was obvious that one million far exceeded the budget of many players. No matter how well made it was, in the end, the earring was only a temporary virtual gadget.

“One million and three hundred thousand.” Cang Yan called out a second offer, and this price made all the bidders jump.

“One million… and three hundred and fifty thousand!” A Magician dressed in a luxurious robe shouted. It was obvious from his clenched teeth that this price was hitting his bottom line.

With a faint smile on his face, Cang Yan held up his auction paddle, “A million and five hundred thousand.”

Finally, the last competing bidder dejectedly dropped down onto his seat.

“One million and fifty hundred thousand!! This friend here has offered one point five million gold coins! Are there anyone who would like to beat it? Believe me, with this earring, before you reach level 25 your magic attack power will be unbeatable! Is there

a higher price?”

“One million and five hundred thousand once.”

“One million and five hundred thousand twice.”

The smile on Cang Yan’s face was growing bigger. To him, the Cursed Earring was already his. Suddenly, a voice suddenly broke out.

“One million and sixty hundred thousand.”

Swoosh!

All eyes were now focused on the man behind Cang Yan. His face was still and cold as marble. Even with so many pairs of eyes watching him, he still sat there unmoved, quiet as a statue.

“It’s the Cold Magistrate, Xiao Qiu Feng!! What does he want with the earring?” One of the bidder muffled.

Realising that it was Xiao Qiu Feng who shouted the price, Cang Yan eased off a little. He forcefully squeezed out a smile and turned to Xiao Qiu Feng, “Ah, Big Brother Xiao are you fooling around with me? This pair of earrings is practically useless to Brother Xiao.”

Long Tian Yun glanced at Xiao Qiu Feng without saying a word.

The expression on his face told the rest of the bidders that he wasn't going to get involved. The Flame Emperor was his left hand man, while Xiao Qiu Feng, on the other hand, was the Guildmaster of the Battle Alliance, which was loyal to the Yan Huang Alliance. It seemed irrational to be biased towards one party in this situation.

"I don't need it, doesn't mean that it will be useless to me. I'm taking this earring," Xiao Qiu Feng spoke bluntly, even to the Flame Emperor.

"Huh," the Flame Emperor licked his lips, "Well then, let's see if you have the ability... A million and seven hundred thousand!"

"One million and eight hundred thousand," Xiao Qiu Feng did not hesitate for a second. With the power of the Battle Alliance, a few million gold coins weren't much at all.

"Two million!" Can Yan had now pushed the price to a whole new level. Everyone knew that the price now was beyond the Cursed Earring's true value. Cang Yan turned towards Xiao Qiu Feng, "I've always known that Brother Xiao is a righteous, just and fair person. This pair of earring is very important to me, I am determined to get it. If we keep going, it would not only be a waste of money, but would also damage our friendship. Why don't Brother Xiao take a step back, and give this earring to me? I will be forever grateful and will never forget Brother's Xiao's graciousness."

"Hmm, even if it's some other reason, even if the King demanded from me this earring, I still wouldn't care. Because this time, it's

for my little sister… two point one million!” Xiao Qiu Feng did not show any sign of backing down, and shouted a higher price.

Cang Yan shrugged, “I’ve heard a long time ago that Brother Xiao pampers his little sister very much. From what I’ve seen today, the rumours seem to be true. If it’s so, then we’ll have to battle until there’s a victor-two million and two hundred thousand!”

“Two million and three hundred thousand!”

“Two million and four hundred thousand!!”

……

Cang Yan was determined to get the Cursed Earring. Xiao Qiu Feng wasn’t willing to back down either. Going back and forth, the price of the Cursed Earring escalated to an unbelievable amount. They weren’t fools, even though both of them wanted the earring badly, they would not raise the price over a hundred thousand each time. They knew that if the price got too out of hand, the only person who would benefit from it was the seller.

“Wow, big brother you’re so cool!!” As Xiao Qiu Feng determinedly shouted out bids, Xiao Qi on the other hand was jumping around like every parent’s nightmare. When the price hit the three million mark, Ling Chen had to say something, “Qi Qi, tell your Big Brother to stop. The price is ridiculous. Even if he manages to buy it, it would be a waste of money.”

“Okay, I know lah. I thought about what big brother Ling Tian said earlier. I’m starting to realise that the earring is not as good as I thought.” Qi Qi then took out her communication device and called out to Xiao Qiu Feng sweetly, “Big Brother, I don’t want the earring anymore. It’s not worth the money. Plus, Ling Tian is now also my big brother. He is so powerful, he will probably find me an earring that’s way better.”

Ling Chen, “……” Did I say that!!

“Three million and one hundred thousand!!” After breaking the three million price point, Cang Yan still was unruffled. At least, he seemed that way.

Qi Qi’s voice had stopped Xiao Qiu Feng, just as he was about to raise the price. However, at that moment, a voice that was not too loud, yet boomed like thunder, echoed through the auction hall.

“Five million!”

Bam… everyone who was watching the live auction was in shock. Even Cang Yan’s face was twisted.

Five… five million!?

The voice had not come out of Xiao Qiu Feng. It was clearly a woman’s voice.

All eyes were now searching for the woman, and when they

found her standing up, were all unable to look away. She seemed to be in her twenties, with sparkling eyes and perfectly groomed eyebrows. Her beautiful, sharp face was calm and dignified. She was dressed in an incomparable, luxurious purple dress. It was one of the most expensive decorative gowns in Azure Dragon City Tailor Shop, costing more than some players' lifetime income. The lady not only looked coldly elegant in the purple gown, she also held herself in a manner that radiated an extraordinary charm.

Her tall stature, no shorter than Ling Chen's, added to her domineering aura. Her full breasts filled the purple dress, and her slim waist, as well as her wide hips were enough to make men fall at her feet. Ling Chen gazed at her for a while, then said in a low voice, "What a woman... her beauty, temperament and figure are all unrivaled... and she looks super rich."

"Yi? Big Brother Ling Tian, don't you know who she is?" Hearing Ling Chen's comment, the rest of the girls looked surprised.

"I have no idea. Is she a famous character?" asked Ling Chen. With such beauty and extraordinary background, it was not surprising that she was known by many.

"Flowing Clouds and Flying Snow, she's ranked tenth on the Heaven Rankings and is a Lightning Mage. She's also called the Loulan Queen. The reason is because of her guild's name, "Snow Moon Loulan". She and big sister Bing Yao are known as the 'Ice Lan Double Beauties' on Heaven Rankings," Yun Meng Xin explained.

[TLN: Loulan]

“Oh?” Ling Chen seemed surprised. He looked back at this woman whose beauty and figure both astounded him. Not only was she absolutely beautiful, she was also one of the most powerful players on Heaven Rankings. She even had her own powerful association! You knew for sure that she wasn’t easy.

“Though she is known for another reason…”

“China’s largest financial group — The head of the Li Family, China’s richest man Li Yun Ze’s only daughter — Li Xiao Xue! Rumour has it, she is even born with lightning esper power,” Xiao Qi continued. All of this wasn’t secret anymore in the virtual game world.

“The Li family financial group above your Yun family financial group?” asked Ling Chen.

Yun Meng Xin nodded, “In China, the Li Family comes first, then it’s the Yun Family. Even though they’re only one place apart, the Li Family’s total assets are worth four times more than the Yun Family. In the virtual game world, the Yun Family is only one of the many subsidiary families of the Yan Huang Alliance, whereas the Li Family, they are the financial backbone of Skyfall Dynasty. Without the Li Family, Skyfall Dynasty will not have the ability to challenge the Yan Huang Alliance. Therefore, the Yun Family must obey the Yan Huang Alliance, whereas The Li Family can use the Skyfall Dynasty’s power whenever they want. There’s a huge difference between the two families. And because of that, Li Xiao Xue has quite a high status. The Snow Moon Loulan she founded only recruits female members. It is the largest female association. Although their overall ability are no where as powerful as other

major guilds, no one has ever dared to provoke them. Even if the three Heavenly Kings of the Skyfall Dynasty met her, they would have to treat her with the utmost respect."

Chapter 184 - Gold Chain

The people looked dazed, their disbelief clear on their faces when the Loulan Queen raised the price of the cursed earring to $5 million.

In China's Heaven Rankings, there were only two people who were Elementalists. One was Cang Yan and the other one was Flowing Clouds and Flying Snow. Flowing Clouds and Flying Snow was the only Elementalist that could be compared to Cang Yan, and at this very moment, both of them were involved in the bidding of the cursed earring.

"I give up." After hearing the Loulan Queen, Flowing Clouds and Flying Snow's bid, Xiao Qiu Feng also decided to drop out of the bid. This left the two famously powerful Elementalists, Cang Yan and Flowing Clouds and Flying Snow, as the final bidders.

Actually, before the bidding had begun, what worried Cang Yan the most was Miss Li making an appearance. Not only was she an Elementalist and would therefore want the cursed earrings, but she was also very well known for her wealth. The Li family was so rich that they wouldn't blink if they had to burn money for the winter to keep warm. Despite this, Cang Yuan didn't want to give up, so he gritted his teeth and called out a higher price, "5.5 million!"

"8 million."

8 million. The only person in China who would easily bid at this

price was Miss Li. Her calm demeanor contrasted against the audience's hearts, which were beating faster by the second.

Despite being the Flame Emperor, Miss Li's bid managed to give him enough of a shock that he choked and started to break out in sweat. He didn't want to miss out on the cursed earrings, but as the proud and arrogant emperor he was, he definitely didn't want to lose to a woman even more, let alone in front of everyone. Just as he was about to bid a higher price, Long Tian Yun gazed coldly at him.

"You can't win against her," Long Tian Yun said in a low voice, "Save your money and your energy. Our aim is the Guild Creation Token. Everything else is not important." His face held no expression.

He loathed to let it go, but inside Cang Yan's heart, he knew that comparing his money with Miss Li would be truly shameful. As Long Tian Yun had spoken, he could do nothing but glance at Li Xiao Xue before he sat down and didn't say another word.

Cang Yan was defeated and so the cursed earrings undoubtedly went into Li Xiao Xue's hands. In China the only female who would challenge the Flame Emperor would probably only be Miss Li.

"8 million once!"

"8 million twice!"

“8 million three times!”

“Congratulations to you, beautiful lady. The cursed earrings is now all yours.”

As during the auction of the previous seven items, Miss Li remained silent. She had amazed the world with her brilliant feat and at this moment, she was the focus of everyone in the room.

“Wow, so awesome! No less than what I expected from the only female that I admire other than big sister Meng Xin. It would be great if she could join our Heart’s Dream but, hehe, that’s impossible.” Xiao Qi had clasped her hands to her chest, her face full of admiration.

“Li Xiao Xue....” Ling Chen remembered her name inside his heart. Spending 8 million to buy LV15 Gold grade earrings, she must quite literally be a superwoman, or at least a very big cash cow to use money so casually, he thought. Hm, if there’s any chance to become friends with her... or if not, then I’ll need to create chances to become friends with her.

The auction of the cursed earrings caused the action hall to become very unsettled, leading Ling Chen to understand what Gold equipment meant to players at this present stage. Because of this, many players were now looking forward to see the next two auction items.

“Now, the next is the 9th item, and is also the second last item that we, the Azure Dragon City Auction House, are auctioning.”

The cursed earrings had sold at 8 million, which way surpassed Lord Fortune's expectations. He was now so excited that his cheeks appeared red as apples. "After seeing so many treasures in my life, I can definitely say that this next piece of equipment is priceless. I believe that everyone is excited now, so please, open your eyes and look at the big screen behind me."

A chain strung by golden beads appeared on the screen. From its shape, it looked to be a bracelet. There were a total of 8 golden beads, four of which had small sockets.

Golden Chain:

Type: Lunar Chain, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: None. High level lunar chain made out of golden beads, can equip any level of energy crystals, but cannot equip energy orbs. Maximum number of crystals that can be socketed: 4.

HUA!!!!!!

When the players saw the properties of this chain, they became so thrilled that the auction hall erupted in an excited clamour. The bosses of big corporations that had come just for the Guild Creation Token were shocked, their eyes as big as moons. Even Long Tian Yun immediately shot up from his seat.

"A lunar chain..... A Gold grade Lunar Chain!!"

If it had just been a Gold grade equipment, the reactions of the players wouldn't have differed much from when they first saw the cursed earrings. However, this was a Gold grade lunar chain, which was vastly different from the other types of Gold equipment. The Lunar Chain was much more valuable, and due to the lack of level requirement for said chain, it was all the more precious. Lunar Chains were used to socket energy crystals or energy orbs in order to add bonus stats. The significance of increasing the number of sockets grew as the game progressed to the later stages and at that time, if a player didn't have sufficient bonus stats from Lunar Chain, they would surely fall completely behind everyone else.

The Golden Chain was a Gold grade equipment, and could socket four different energy crystals. In comparison, all the players felt that their ordinary lunar chains were like trash. The difference between a Lunar Chain that could socket two energy crystals and a Lunar Chain that could socket four Lunar Crystals was like having two less or two more pieces of equipment, respectively. The Golden Chain and cursed earring were both Gold grade equipment, but not even a hundred cursed earrings could compare to the Golden Chain's value. And this was no exaggeration.

One cursed earring had caused such uproar previously, but the uproar that this Lunar Chain now provoked far exceeded Lord Fortune's dreams. So naturally, he cleared his throat and added fuel to the fire, "Everyone, please calm down. You can rest assured that this is not a dream. Indeed, this is a Gold grade lunar chain. Lunar Chains are the most sacred types of equipment in Mystic Moon, and being a high level Lunar Chain, it is then, of course, one of the rarest pieces of equipment in all of Mystic Moon. This gold grade Lunar Chain is priceless not just in the world of you players, but even in the whole Mystic Moon world. I have seen numerous

sorts of Gold grade equipment, but a Gold grade Lunar Chain is probably worth more than 10 of those. It is very different to the usual equipment, and once you've obtained this high level lunar chain, you won't ever have any reason to let it go. Believe me, even after you have reached LV100, it would still remain a priceless item. You will be the envy of many people just by having it in the Mystic Moon world."

"This Lunar Chain has a total of 4 sockets, which can socket any level of energy crystal. Yes, ANY level. Throughout the history of the Mystic Moon world, the best lunar chain that has ever appeared has only 7 sockets. Even I, Lord Fortune cannot underestimate its true value. If I weren't conducting the auction for you players, I would really spend all my money to buy it."

In the VIP Box, Ling Cheng was leisurely sipping his tea. This Lord Fortune was such a great auctioneer, his ability to manipulate people was outstanding.

The players hadn't settled down while Lord Fortune was speaking and after what he said, the atmosphere was more out of control than before. Even without his words, they all knew the value of this Gold grade lunar chain. They didn't know when the next time to see such a lunar chain would be if they were to miss out this one.

"A gold grade Lunar Chain that has an extra two sockets. Whoever has it would then have two more additional properties than other players and the distance between the players would be significant. Exactly which mysterious guy would not use it himself but instead take it out to be auctioned?" Yun Feng spoke to himself

in a low voice, his astonishment obvious in the way he looked at the Golden Chain.

“Are you going to fight for this lunar chain?” asked Xiao Qiu Feng, glancing at him.

Yun Feng shrugged a shoulder and looked at where Li Xiao Xue’s sat. Helplessly, he said “Nah, that Li woman would want this lunar chain as well. Even if I have the will to get it, I won’t be able to win against her.”

Xiao Qiu Feng couldn’t deny this fact.

“Young Master, are we going to buy it?” Cang Yan moved his body closer to whisper to Long Tian Yun.

Long Tian Yun stayed silent for a while before slowly putting out three fingers, “Within thirty million.” he decided.

Cang Yan was speechless. He knew that Long Tian un would do anything to get that lunar chain if Li Xiao Xue wasn’t here. But sadly, she was. It was widely known that the most powerful person in the Li family financial group was Li Yun Ze who had lost his wife at a young age. Because of this, he favoured his only daughter so much that even if she were to lose all the Li family’s property, he wouldn’t blame her. Li Xiao Xue was lucky to have a father such as him. Long Tian Yun wouldn’t be able to do much in a duel of money against her.

This was why he gave Cang Yan the limit of thirty million in that he would give up if the bids surpassed thirty million. He needed to retain enough money to get the Guild Creation Token. When competing for the Guild Creation Token, he wouldn't need to worry so much about Li Xiao Xue, purely because Li Xiao Xue wouldn't have any interest with the first Guild Creation Token. She was a smart person and understood the response she would receive from the Yan Huang Alliance if she took the Guild Creation Token. While it could be said that the Li family and Yan Huang Alliance were partners, they were definitely not a family.

Chapter 185 - 50 Million Deal

“Everyone please be quiet. The bidding for the golden chain will officially begin with a starting price of one million gold coins! Additional bids must be at least ten thousand gold higher.”

In real life, with one million dollars you could buy a luxury car or even a house, but in the game world one million was this piece of equipment’s starting price. This sort of starting bid clearly revealed the disparity in wealth between players. Before they opened the Money Exchange System, everything was fair in the Mystic Moon world. Everyone chose different paths but they all started from the same starting point. Once the concept of money was introduced, Mystic Moon became the same as the real world, in that everything was now controlled by the rich. For the rich, they could casually spend what was a normal person’s entire life’s income on an item that could allow them to reign over everyone else. They could establish a team for their own command. They could make crowd after crowd of men and women follow them. All of this would not be happening without the power of money.

In this world, or any other world, there would never really be a sense of fairness. For those affluent people, the price that Lord Fortune shouted was unbelievably low. For all those wealthy people, it was merely a number.

‘One million and two hundred thousand dollars!!”

“One million and three hundred thousand dollars!”

“One million three hundred and thirty thousand dollars!”

……

……

As expected, as soon as Lord Fortune called out the price, the whole auction hall was flooded with bidding calls. The competition was even fiercer than before when the Cursed Earring was being auctioned. Then again, the Cursed Earring was only useful for players of Magic Profession. This Gold grade Lunar Chain, on the other hand, was precious to players of any profession.

Even with a bottom price as high as one million gold coins, there were still so many people bidding for it. The people watching from outside were shocked as there were simply too many rich people, who they would normally never be able to meet, gathered in one place…… And then there were those who were even richer still, for instance…

“Ten million!”

Just as the price had reached two million, a woman’s voice calmly echoed through the auction hall. The quiet voice made the noisy room go silent in just a matter of seconds. The person who had called out her bid slowly put down her auction paddle. To be able to call out a bid of 10 million, there was hardly anyone else in China who had the ability to do that.

The Loulan Queen — Li Xiao Xue! Her bid caused many people to suck in a breath of cold air. And almost everyone put down their auction paddles.

Li Xiao Xue hadn't been a part of the virtual world for long. However in just a few years, she had made a name for herself. It didn't matter what kind of auction it was, as long as she was there, no one had ever stopped her from getting what she wanted.

There were many wealthy families in China, however the Li family was the richest of the rich. There was a rumour that the Li financial group controlled nearly half of the wealth in China, although it was entirely plausible that the rumour had been fabricated or exaggerated. Regardless, it was clear that the Li family had an undeniably powerful position in China's economy.

This was every player's nightmare... The big miss of the Li family apparently wanted this item, and so had begun to bid for it.

As soon as she got involved, there was no other way for anyone else to beat her. Even the Yan Huang Alliance's Long Tian Yun would not be able to beat her,

"To be able to yell out ten million... No matter how rich her family is, she shouldn't be so corrupted! It's such a waste of money. No matter how much money she has, if she spends it like this, she'll go bankrupt." Ling Chen said as he rubbed his head..... However, he was quite excited-the ten million that the big miss of the Li family had just yelled out would be going straight into his account!

Ten million gold coins!!

“No, actually, exactly the opposite.” Beside him, Yun Meng Xin shook her head, “Even though Li Xiao Yun spends money like it’s nothing, she definitely isn’t spoiled. It’s just the way she likes to get things done. No time wasted and no need to negotiate. She never wastes her family’s money and not only that, but she is actually a business genius. Li Xiao Xue was involved in operating and managing the Li financial group since she was fifteen. Five years after, the Li financial group’s total revenue was multiplied by five times. And it was because of her, The Yun Family lost its ability to sit alongside the Li Family.

“Twelve million!”

However the bidding didn’t cease completely after Li Xiao Xue’s involvement. A tall, tanned, middle aged man called out an unbelievable high price. He turned towards Li Xiao Xue and nodded, “I am the guildmaster of the Black Flames Alliance. I’m very fond of this chain, if the Loulan Queen can pain herself to let me have this chain, I will forever remember…”

“Thirty million!”

Pfft…

Ling Chen spat out the tea in his mouth.

The Black Flames Alliance was one of the ten most powerful guilds in China and its guildmaster was also no ordinary person. Even Long Tian Yun wouldn't dare to take his words lightly. Yet Li Xiao Xue hadn't spared him a single glance and before Hei Yan Lie Feng could finish his sentence, the price had already risen to thirty million. Li Xiao Xue called out the price without even blinking. It was as if this insanely large amount of money was worth hardly anything to her.

The players became chaotic, both inside and outside the auction hall. Li Xiao Xue never gave anyone face and she didn't need to. The guildmaster of the Black Flames Alliance's froze in his place. He knew that he wouldn't stand a chance competing with the Loulan Queen. He stared at the gold chain on the screen for a while, then decided to carry on, "Thirty three..."

"Fifty million!"

Wha...

The number shook the crowd.

He was rendered speechless after hearing Li Xiao Xue's two words and didn't even bother finishing his own sentence. This was the Loulan Queen. The Li financial group's precious daughter. She rarely appeared in the public, and usually didn't talk much. Nevertheless, she could make anyone go silent with just a few words, no matter how high-powered they were. The people of the higher society had always wondered who this extraordinary, legendary woman would marry.

As for the Yan Huang Alliance, they did not even bother offering a price despite how keen they were for the gold chain. They knew that there was no point in trying to compete with the Loulan Queen.

Fifty million, done and dusted. Since there was no one who would pay that much for a Lunar Chain besides Ms Li.

“Fifty million once!”

“Fifty million twice!”

“Fifty million third and final time!”

Fifty million for goodness sake! Lord Fortune’s whole body trembled uncontrollably. He knew that the golden chain would definitely be sold at an exorbitant price, however, he’d never dreamt that anyone would pay fifty million for it. Although Lord Fortune had experienced many unthinkable episodes in his life, he was still shocked by the unthinkable price.

“S... Sold!! Congratulations to you young lady! This priceless treasure now belongs to you. Believe me, you will never regret the decision you made!”

This fifty million dollar deal was now officially closed.

“Big brother... Big brother, your heart is beating so fast all of a sudden. Are you okay?” Shui Ruo had been leaning on Ling Chen and realised that his heartbeat was abnormally paced. She pressed her small palm onto his chest and asked worriedly.

“It’s okay, I’m fine. I think I drank way too much tea.” Ling Chen quickly shook his head... fifty million, that’s FIFTY MILLION! How could he stay calm! If it weren’t for his strong mental capacity, he would’ve been screaming and roaring by now. Cash cow! An absolute cash cow! I must become friends with the big miss Li, Even if it meant that I must give my body. Ah... Ling Chen clenched his fist tightly, and thought to himself.

He never doubted that after this auction, the money he earned would be more than enough to pay back the Azure Dragon Mayor. However he never would have thought that he could earn fifty million gold coins with just a golden chain. He was literally now an ultra millionaire!

“So, are you guys close with Miss Li?” Ling Chen turned around asking the girls. Yun Meng Xin was the daughter of the Yun financial group, Xiao Qi was the princess of the Battle Alliance and Su Er was the daughter of the Mayor of Beijing. Each of them came from an exceptional background. Though the upper class wasn’t small, it wasn’t big either. There would’ve been many chances for them to meet Li Xiao Xue.

“We’ve met a few times, but we don’t know each other very well. After all, the Li family’s power was mainly focused in the South, whereas we are centred more on the North side,” Yun Meng Xing answered.

“Er, I’ve only met Li Xiao Xue once, but we didn’t speak. Big Brother Ling Tian, is there a chance that you… fancy her? Well I guess she’s got a great figure, she’s undoubtedly beautiful and she’s extremely rich. I don’t see any reason a man wouldn’t fall for her.” Xiao Qi chuckled, moving closer towards Ling Chen.

Ling Chen laughed dryly.

“Oh no no no, of course not!” Ling Chen denied, “I was just curious, that’s all. I can never be worthy of such a person.”

“No way!” Xiao Qi rebutted, “Big Brother Ling Tian you’re so powerful. If one day you bested the Sword Emperor and became first on the Heaven Rankings, there will be no girl out of your league in the whole of China.”

Ling Chen didn’t reply. An hour later, he pulled out his communication device and without anyone knowing, sent a secret message, “Gui Ya, I want anything you can find regarding the Loulan Queen, the more the better. Give it to me three in three days.”

Below, the auction continued. “Right now it’s already eleven a.m. With nine unique items already sold, the auction today is truly ardent and exciting. Later on, we will take a short break. Might as well listen to some relaxing music and have some rest. After the break, we will present to you the real surprise of this auction. Please do not go away.” Lord Fortune finished speaking and glided backstage. At the same time, calm and peaceful music sounded

throughout the auction hall, soothing everyone's chaotic heart.

The whole auction hall went quiet, the silence before the storm. Everyone knew what the final surprise would be but still, no one left. Even if someone were to chase after them with a stick, they would not step one foot out of this building.

Chapter 186 - Competition For The Guild Creation Token

The owner of China's first Guild Creation Token would soon be decided.

When Lord Fortune finally stepped out from backstage, the whole auction hall was completely silent; even the drop of a pin could be heard. Every player held their breath, waiting in anticipation of the auction's climax. While the Cursed Earrings and Gold Lunar Chain were very desirable, to the corporation bosses, their value was incomparable to the Guild Creation Token. Whoever obtained it would become the first Chinese guild and be very famous. For the development of a society, this was the perfect starting point.

Each corporation boss with substantial capital was focusing all of their energies, fully concentrated on the Guild Creation Token.

"You've all been patiently waiting for a long time." Lord Fortune glanced around the hall, surveying the crowd that stood before him, but not a single person had left. Of course, this was to be expected. Lord Fortune slowed his speech: "I am finally drawing the Azure Dragon City's first public auction to a close with this final item. But, when this item is being presented, please try to control yourselves, don't get too excited, and wait until I declare the minimum bid. Now, everyone please look at the big screen."

On the big screen, there was a black, square wooden plaque. One side was just plain wood, with the word "令" was engraved onto the opposite. Its name, which made everyone's heartbeat race was

—Guild Creation Token.

There wasn't a single shout or scream, but within the hall, a great tension hung over the atmosphere.

"That's right! The grand finale of our auction today, is the Guild Creation Token. As you probably already know, it is the first Guild Creation token of the world! We have gotten the Identification Authorities to appraise it. Although we do not know how many Guild Creation Tokens the players have received, this is the first player generated Guild Creation Token. Whoever receives it can immediately get it checked at the Appraisal Centre, This also means that the Guild Creation Token could the only one in the world to date, so, whoever receives it, can create Forgotten Continent's first Guild! Deciding the fate of both society and the future, the legacy of this person and their guild will live forever in the Chronicles of the Forgotten Continent. Friends who are here to build up a society, here to move the world, here for everlasting glory, come and get it."

"The minimum bid for the Guild Creation token is... 2 million gold!"

Within the auction hall, excitement levels varied between the corporation bosses. Lord Fortune had called the minimum bid, but the turmoil in the hall had suddenly quietened down with no one bidding. After a while, it fell silent and only the sound of cracking bones from many a clenched fist could be heard.

Everyone knew, that the biggest competitors for the Guild Creation Token were the Yan Huang Alliance and the Skyfall

Dynasty. However, their pressure didn't discourage the other from fighting for it despite the potential consequences of unwanted hostility from the two. The honor of being the first Guild, even with the risks involved, was well worth it.

3 seconds... 5 seconds... 10 seconds...

The hall, still completely quiet. No one wanted to be first.

The situation was awkward; everyone obviously wanted it, but no one had put a bid forward. Lord Fortune calmly scanned the hall and said slowly: "It looks like no one is interested in the Guild Creation Token. Sorry, but that fact must be accepted. And so, I officially pronounce, this Guild Creation Token to be withdra..."

"Wait!!"

"Don't withdraw it!! I'll bid 3 million!!"

"4 Million!! 4 Million!!!"

Lord fortune didn't even get the finish his words, before the hall suddenly exploded with a tide of voices.

"4 million, this individual has made a bid of 4 million, is there anyone else willing to bid higher?"

"5 million!"

“5 million, it’s already 5 million! Is there anyone else willing to make the bid higher?”

The price of the Guild Creation Token was raising by the millions. Ling Chen was listening to the ever increasing bids, with a faint smile on his lips... let’s see, how much higher it could be pushed; the higher the better.

Even a fool would know that mere millions would not suffice for the first Guild Creation token. A Guild Creation Token is not that expensive, but this is the first ever, worth more than 100x that of a regular one. In the mind of men, the difference between first and second is like night and day; first is the only place that matters.

Amongst the frantic shouting, most came from the medium sized corporations. The larger and super large corporation bosses coldly stared on along with the big bosses who hadn’t moved since the start of the auction.

“7.3 Million!”

“8.2 Million!”

“8.5 Million!!”

“This is so slow! It’s been so long and its only up to 8 million!! In the previous world, the first Guild Creation token sold for more than 100 million!” Xiao Qi clenched her small fist and grumpily

stomped her feet. As the Battle Alliance was partly affiliated with the Yan Huang Alliance, they would definitely not fight for the Guild Creation token, and so she was simply watching on for fun.

"The person who sent in this Guild Creation Token, didn't seem to be greedy, otherwise, they would have definitely used it for themself. They also didn't sell it to the Yan Huang Alliance or Skyfall Dynasty, and instead chose to auction it away. I'm really curious as to who actually managed to get hold of this Guild Creation token in the first place." Yun Meng Xin thought aloud, and after finishing, she glanced at Ling Chen.

Ling Chen laughed, not speaking a word, his smile growing more and more sinister...

Long Tian Yun, obediently work a little harder for me, and get that Guild Creation token... then grandpa Ling Chen will grant you a gift so incredible that you will never forget it for the rest of your life!!

In the middle of the auction hall, one of Skyfall Dynasty's three heavenly kings Judging Sky slammed his chair with his fist.

"He is just wasting time!! Quickly finish this so we can leave this chaotic place, big brother!"

"It is indeed a waste of time, since those guys don't have to courage to step up. Looks like it's up to us to take the lead." Against the Sky murmured.

At first glance Skyfall seemed like a nice person; around 35 years or so and calm with a steady gaze. After hearing what Judging Sky and Against the Sky had said, he was silent for a while, then slowly nodded and got up from his seat.

““Skyfall Dynasty’s Skyfall bids 50 million gold for the Guild Creation Token!””

The chaos suddenly dissipated, and all eyes fell on Skyfall’s body. Even the big corporation bosses turned to look at him, their eyes glimmering.

The moment the Skyfall Dynasty started bidding, the price had jumped to 50 million, immediately destroying the hopes of any smaller associations. However, after a few seconds, another man who was also a similar age to him, a man who had a sharp pair of eyes said: “Golden Age Alliance’s Mo Gu Lin bids 65 million gold!!”

“Black Flames Guild bids 80 million gold!!”

In the blink of an eye it was already at 80 million from 50… every time the price increased, it was by at least 10 million. All the players bewilderedly stared on, listening to the astronomical figures and legendary faces, seeing the true strength of these large corporations.

The real competition, had only just begun.

“Below the Heavens alliance bids 85 million gold!!”

“Carefree Pavilion bids 88 million gold!”

“Black Dragon Alliance bids 90 million gold!”

“The Skyfall dynasty bids 110 million gold!!”

Woah...

When the price so easily exceeded 100 million, all of the real and virtual world rang out with cries of surprise.

This truly demonstrated the real financial strength and power of these monster corporations that had gathered together.

“Oh, it’s finally begun.” Long Tian Yun said with a smile, as he finally stood up. The first Guild Creation Token, he would not let fall into anyone else’s hands.

“The Yan Huang Alliance bids 150 million gold!”

Long Tian Yun’s first bid caused the whole hall to go silent. He glanced around the area, trying to tease out the power of the corporations with a wry smile.

With the Yan Huang Alliance making its move, there was too much pressure for the big corporation bosses. But they couldn’t stop at just 150 million gold.

“Skyfall Dynasty bids 160 million gold!!”

“Murderous God Alliance bids 168 million gold!”

“Carefree Pavilion bids 170 million gold!!”

“I… Crazy! Everyone’s gone crazy!! A wooden board worth over 100 million?! What has this world, what has it come to, are all these people insane?! Look, it’s already 170 million! That can’t be right!!”

Winter of That Year walked by, looking at the screen on his watch, and crying out with a loud voice: “Big brother! We have to do it, we need to find one of those plates! If we can find one, we don’t need to worry about anything for the rest of our lives! We can have whatever we dream of, we can have any woman we want!!”

Hundred Miles of Ice stared at him through the corner of his eye, and let out a single word: “Idiot!”

“You’re the idiot! Your whole family is an idiot! Can’t you call me anything but an idiot!?”

“Nope.”

“I! @#&%…”

Chapter 187 - Battle Of The Hundred Millions

“173 million gold!”

“175 million god!!”

“180 million gold!”

……

The bidding did not show any signs of stopping, and after passing the 150 million gold mark, there were only eight people making bids. These eight people were the heads of the greatest powers in China; there weren’t any unexpected dark horses at all. After all, when the big bosses of large corporations fought, it would always be for things over 100 million gold.

However, at this point, the speed at which the bids rose began to decrease. Although they were all incredibly wealthy, 100 million gold was not a small figure at all.

“195 million gold!”

“200 million!”

This short sentence from Long Tian Yun pushed the price of the Guild Creation Token to a new level. The players watching once

again let out a roar of disbelief and excitement.

"It's actually up to 200 million... this has already broken the record for the most amount of money a Guild Creation Token has ever sold for." Yun Meng Xin said.

"Very good, no less than what's expected from the heir of the Long family. However, it's a pity that I'm determined to win this Guild Creation Token." Skyfall gave a calm laugh. The price of 200 million gold did not scare him at all. He casually shouted, "210 million!"

The power of the head of the Three Heavenly Kings was once again displayed; he had nonchalantly just added another 10 million gold.

"210 million gold! This friend from the Skyfall dynasty has bid 210 million gold, are there any friends who are willing to offer a higher price? If there aren't, then the glory of becoming the first official guild will go to the Skyfall Dynasty." Lord Fortune loudly shouted. Since auctioning off the Cursed Earring, he had been very excited, and seeing how high the price for the Guild Creation Token had risen, he was unable to maintain his professional calmness... damn, these players have way too much money; do they come from a world that's covered in gold and silver?

Long Tian Yun did not show any signs of backing off, and smiled, "220 million gold!!"

When the bidding price hit 200 million, the heads of three of the

eight remaining powers sighed, and retired out of the competition. There were still five powers that were fiercely fighting. When the words “250 million” came out of Skyfall’s mouth, yet another two bosses helplessly sat down... after all, creating and sustaining a guild comprising of thousands or tens of thousands of members didn’t just involve having the first Guild Creation Token. There was also the issue of land, infrastructure, recruitment, equipment and salaries... all of these things required money, and if they spent too much of their resources buying a Guild Creation Token, even if it was the first, they would still be in a half-crippled state afterwards.

“260 million!!”

“268 million!!”

“270 million!!”

“Hmph! 276 million!”

“Golden Age Alliance, 280 million!”

The Golden Age Alliance was the largest guild in China’s eastern region, and had the support of many powerful families in the east. When the guildmaster, Mo Gu Lin, yelled out “280 million”, he saw that Long Tian Yun and Skyfall’s faces did not change at all, and began to nervously sweat. The price he had just shouted out was the absolute highest his guild could afford.

Long Tian Yun glanced at him, and gave a slight smirk. He raised three fingers, causing Mo Gu Lin to drop his auction paddle.

“300 million!”

Boom…

“It’s already at… 300 million!!”

Yun Meng Xin was the daughter of the wealthy Yun family, Xiao Qi was the princess of the Battle Alliance and Su’Er was the daughter of Beijing’s Mayor. They had never faced the problem of not having enough money. However, they were completely shocked by the giant figure of 300 million.

“300 million! That’s enough to buy 10 Bugatti Veyrons!! And even if it’s in Beijing, it’d be enough to buy over 100 houses!”

“With so much money, just imagine how many orphans could be supported; how many children could go to school.” An elderly person gasped while trembling.

“Even if this token was made out of diamonds, it still wouldn’t be worth that much. Are these people crazy?!! And that guy who consigned the token, that’s enough for him to live comfortably for the rest of his life!” An otaku male said enviously.

Most people lived their lives chasing after money. Only a small percentage of people, these people, no longer held any interest

towards money-to them, the most important things in the world were fame and power.

"Wow, it's already at 300 million." To be honest, this figure had already surpassed all of Ling Chen's expectations. He tapped on his chin with his index finger, and muttered in a low voice to himself, "Continue, Skyfall Dynasty, don't disappoint me. Even if you can't get it, make sure the Yan Huang Alliance pays an exorbitant price for it."

"I give up."

After the Golden Age Alliance also gave up, only the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty were left. However, no one was surprised by this outcome-after all, this wasn't the first time this had happened.

The Yan Huang Alliance was based in the north, whereas the Skyfall Dynasty was based in the south. It wasn't the first time these two giant powers had gone head to head against each other. They wasted no words with each other-after all, money and power would decide everything.

"300 million, very well... 330 million!" Skyfall stared at Long Tian Yun as he spoke in a low voice.

"Ha, 350 million." Long Tian Yun chuckled, and replied calmly. This number caused many peoples' hearts to tremble.

Although the price had reached 300 million, the two powers showed no signs of slowing down or giving up.

“360 million!”

“380 million!”

“Good, good.” Skyfall crossed his arms, his face emotionless, “Long Tian Yun, although we’ve never seen eye to eye, but I must admit, in all of China, there’s none in our generation that is above you. Just this spirit surpasses everyone else I know.”

“Heavenly King Skyfall flatters me. However, this is not the place for idle chitchat. Do you dare to raise the price above 380 million?” Long Tian Yun smiled. His behaviour was still extremely elegant and calm, despite dealing with such a large figure of money.

“I said it before, our Skyfall Dynasty is determined to obtain this Guild Creation Token. Last time, we lost to you, but that was because our preparations were insufficient. This time, the feng shui is on our side.” Skyfall stretched out four fingers, “400 million!”

“This time, I’ve really struck it rich!” Hearing the number Skyfall just called out, Ling Chen’s heart exploded with joy. In front of this gigantic figure, the debt of 1.5million to the Azure Dragon’s Mayor seemed like nothing.

Every player’s gaze was fixed on Long Tian Yun and Skyfall.

Every person's heart was beating furiously. No one had expected this auction to reach 400 million gold. This level of bidding had never appeared before in the virtual world.

Surprisingly, the two calmest people present were the two that were directly involved... Long Tian Yun and Skyfall.

Regardless of how they were actually feeling, they both had their poker faces on. The slightest trace of nervousness or anxiety would cause one to cave. To spectators, the prices that came out of their mouths were gigantic figures; however, to them, they were mountains that became larger and larger. The one who crumbled under the weight of the mountain first would lose.

Long Tian Yun's gaze departed from Skyfall, and he looked at Li Xiao Xue for a short while. Afterwards, he laughed, "It seems that your Skyfall Dynasty and the Li family financial group have deepened your working relationship, congratulations. However, it's a pity that our Yan Huang Alliance definitely won't let anyone take this glorious position... 410 million!!"

"Very well!" Skyfall inhaled, "420 million!!"

"430 million!!"

"440 million!!"

.....

The price continued to rise by at least 10 million each time. Hearing these bids, the spectators were all paralysed by the sheer mountain of gold that was piling up. However, it was evident that the speed at which the prices were rising after hitting 400 million was not as fast as they had at 300 million. Although the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty were extremely powerful, they still had their limits. In the Mystic Moon world, the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty had not yet firmly established themselves. Their establishing and development would require astronomical amounts of money. Although they seemed extremely relaxed as they called out bids, they were definitely gnashing their teeth inwardly.

"450 million!!" Long Tian Yun narrowed his eyes. No matter if it was his tone or his expression, he still did not seem perturbed in the slightest.

Clap...clap... clap...

In the extremely tense auction hall, Skyfall's face revealed an expression of amusement as he slowly clapped, "Good, very good! You truly are the heir to the Long family! I'm sure there aren't many in the whole world who are able to say out such a price with such a calm face. However, I don't know if Alliance Master Long is willing to be even braver."

As he finished his sentence, he spread out all four of his fingers and his thumb...

"Five... hundred million!"

Woosh—

The auction hall once again exploded into roaring and clamouring. Seeing Skyfall's outstretched out, the players present all felt that they had entered into some sort of dream... 500 million!! These two people had gone absolutely mad!!

"Hahahaha!"

The stiffening and cold sweat appearing on Long Tian Yun's face that Skyfall expected did not appear. Instead, a wave of arrogant laughter came out of Long Tian Yun's mouth. While laughing, Long Tian Yun also began to clap, "If we were to compare spirit and bravery, I, Long Tian Yun, would still be inferior to you. However, this sort of excitement is just what I was looking for. Before, I was slightly worried that you were a bit too old, and that you wouldn't be able to handle some stimulation, but it seems that my worrying was unnecessary. Since Heavenly King Skyfall has taken the initiative, then I won't hold back either... 600 million!!"

Crash...

Many players who were standing up directly crashed to the ground.

Chapter 188 - The Final Victor?

The price that Long Tian Yun called had already reached unprecedented heights, far surpassing everyone's expectations. All the players were thinking the same the same thing... "Insane! They've all gone insane!!"

This wasn't a fight for a prime piece of real estate, this wasn't a fight to set up a luxurious mansion either – this was a fight for the name of "First Guild", a single wooden token!!

As the fame of being the first guild was clearly captivating, the value of an actual Guild Creation token was not cheap. But with prices like these, they had definitely passed its real value. All the money invested in becoming the "First Guild" could have been invested into the actual guild, which would be more profitable.

But, for a small number of people, what was most important in the world was not profit, but fame and prestige. They weren't only fighting for a small Guild Creation Token, they were also contending for the dignity and reputation of the two greatest guilds. Whoever gives up first will be known forever as the guild who failed to oppose the other. And for the winning guild, their reputation would forever be cemented as 'the Guild who won'.

Skyfall directly raised his bid by 500 million, in an attempt to intimidate Long Tian Yun, but he didn't think that Long Tian Yun would remain absolutely calm. Instead, he slowly turned to look him directly in the eyes, and bid even harder, making Skyfall's heart jump.

For the sake of the Guild Creation token, he did some preparation beforehand, based on the price that Guild Creation Tokens had sold for in the past. Spurred by the experience of having lost to the Yan Huang Alliance in the past, he was even more determined to win. For the development of Skyfall Dysnasty, they had invested 10 billion gold. Of this 10 billion, due to insane budgeting, a tenth would be used to fight for the Guild Creation Token. Using a tenth of a guild's funds to fight for a Guild Creation Token was already unimaginable! 500 million was already approaching the end of the funds, and he did not want to spend more than this. But when he shouted this exorbitant price, what he received was Long Tian Yun responding with 600 million.

Skyfall started to feel a cold sweat on his back.

"Hahahahaha!" Even if he was concerned, Skyfall still appeared to remain calm, letting out a big laugh. He believed that Long Tian Yun wasn't in a better shape either, perhaps he was panicking even more. The bids for the Guild Creation token had already past 500 million, which certainly surpassed both their expectations. "Now that Alliance Master Long wants to play, I will accompany him all the way to the end."

This time, Skyfall raised both hands, which drew the attention of all the players, staring with curiosity and breaths held. He stretched 7 fingers: "Seven... hundred million!! Alliance Leader Long, your move!!"

700 million... the large noise of the hall reached his ears. Ling Chen was completely calm, he didn't feel the same rush he did before when it was increasing by the tens of thousands. Skyfall's

voice was quiet, but full of arrogance. However, Ling Chen could still hear a slight hint of trembling in Skyfall's voice.

Looks like it's almost there, Ling Chen looked down, with a look in his eyes as if he was watching a monkey show.

"Big Brother!!"

When Skyfall called out "700 million", Against the Sky and Judging Sky were shocked. Against the Sky said in a low voice: "If we continue on like this, it will disrupt the budgeting! This price, it's already too far!!"

"I know!" Skyfall answered, "To us it's the same, to the Yan Huang Alliance, it's also the same... right now, we are competing viciously!!" His face smiled and maintained a gaze towards Long Tian Yun, in an attempt to appear calm whilst secretly communicating.

"Big miss Li, you have seen the current situation. This token had already surpassed the expectations of many. No one has the funds to get it now, we can only depend on you."

Li Xiao Xue's eyelids drooped, making no eye contact. What Skyfall said to her was completely within her expectations. Her reply was also concise: "Heavenly King Skyfall, you should know, I will never go back on any agreements that I have made. I have given 100 billion in the first half of the year, not a penny more nor a penny less. How you will use it, is within your freedom. Whether you exceed your budget, is of no concern with me. My Li family

money didn't fall from the sky, nor is it not a bottomless pit."

"..."

"Hahahahaha... Good, very good. 700 million... This is a surprisingly exorbitant price. Even if it is from the Skyfall Dynasty, this boldness is admirable." Long Tian Yun again applauded with a laugh. But beads of sweat were appearing on his forehead. A situation like this was something that both Skyfall or he hadn't anticipated, and definitely something that the players did not even imagine was possible.

"But, I of the Yan Huang Alliance, will never be trampled by anyone – past, present or future. Although the power of Yan Huang Alliance cannot compare with that of the Li family, we can still afford the token so..."

"...800 million!!"

Who knew how many people were shocked and fell from their seats.

"Young Master, is this too much!" Cang Yan said to Long Tian Yun. "This price isn't just crossing the line a little, it's outright unreasonable. If it was a prime piece of land it would be reasonable, but this is just a Guild Creation token!"

Long Tian Yun didn't say a word. On the surface, he had a small smile, but his anxiousness could not be seen. However, only Cang

Yan could clearly see that Long Tian Yun's hands were shaking.

800 million... what kind of crazy number do they need for this auction to end?

"Good!" Skyfall said, "Alliance Leader Long is someone that inspires hope, it is hard not to admire. But it seems like Alliance Leader Long is beginning to sweat, perhaps it's too hot in here? Do you need to open a few windows and let some air in?"

If you were close to Long Tian Yun, you could see the beads of sweat on his forehead. Long Tian Yun was slightly disturbed but said with a laugh, "Hahahaha, I appreciate your concern, Heavenly King Skyfall. Having stood for a while, it's only natural that there is some sweat. But Heavenly King Skyfall... your complexion appears to be an unnatural red, almost like you've been working very hard? Haha, I did not think the almighty Heavenly King Skyfall would look so flushed, maybe you're stressing too much. This 800 million gold bid, Heavenly King Skyfall, will you follow it up or not?"

"I will follow of course. It is only 800 million, not even big for me to consider. So, like Alliance Leader Long, I will add another 100 million... I, Skyfall of Skyfall Dynasty, bid 900 million!!"

The only sound that could be heard in the whole auction hall was the intense beating of everyone's hearts.

"The situation is completely out of control." Yun Feng shook his head. "Even if they successfully attain the Guild Creation Token

and its glory, they will have lost so much. For one Guild Creation Token, at this price, is not worth it." He moved his head, and said into Xiao Qiu Feng's ear, "Do you think Long Tian Yun will follow?"

Xiao Qiu Feng raised his head a little, and said in a low voice, "If I was the leader of the Yan Huang Alliance, I wouldn't. I would let them have the superficial honour of being the first guild but at the cost of 900 million gold from their funds. But the leader of the Yan Huang Alliance is Long Tian Yun... He, will definitely follow."

Immediately after the words of Xiao Qiu Feng left his mouth, two words called for the silence of the whole auction once again.

"1 billion!!"

"The first guild, belongs to my Yan Huang Alliance. Even you, Heavenly King Skyfall, will not take that away." Long Tian Yun's face was plastered with a smile, the look in his eyes as sharp as a knife. Each word that he spoke was with force, deeply affecting everyone who heard them.

"Well said!!"

"We pledge to die loyal to the Yan Huang Alliance. This is our glory, and it cannot be moved!"

"The Yan Huang Alliance must coexist with the earth! Never fading!"

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long Live the Yan Huang Alliance!”

Large cries ran out throughout the auction hall. It was well known that the Yan Huang Alliance was of a massive scale. In the auction hall of 20 000 people, a large number were of the Yan Huang Alliance. Their loud cries broadcasted the prestige belonging to the Alliance and its players.

1 billion. Only the Yan Huang Alliance had boldness like this.

“1 billion is 1000 million!!” The eyes and mouth of Xiao Qi were wide open, she was about to fall.

“So much…” Even Su’Er couldn’t help but say.

“Long Tian Yun is just that kind of person.” Yun Meng Xin, on the contrary, was not so surprised. “If there is something he wants, there is no one that will take it from him. It’s always been so. If he has decided to be the first Guild, even if Skyfall Dynasty put together 2 or 3 billion, he would not give up.”

The look in her eyes when she thought of Long Tian Yun was as if she had seen this before, her eyes appeared absent minded.

“But it looks like Skyfall Dynasty is not prepared to go all the way with him,” Ling Chen said slowly.

When Long Tian Yun called out “1 billion”, Skyfall was smiling. He seemed more calm and collected, almost as if he had recollected his emotions. He let out a long sigh of relief.

It looked like he had underestimated Yan Huang Alliance’s strength... He had also underestimated Long Tian Yun’s endurance under pressure.

Raising his head and standing up, Skyfall had a smile on his face, clapping his hands. “1 billion... I think this number will not be surpassed for 100 years. As expected of the Yan Huang Alliance, I, Skyfall, admit defeat. This Guild Creation Token is your Yan Huang Alliance’s.”

Wooahh—

The quiet auction was suddenly noisy again.

Lord Fortune didn’t need to say anymore, he quickly shouted the ending procedure of the auction: “1 billion once! 1 billion twice! 1 billion three times!”

“Sold! Congratulations Yan Huang Alliance, the Guild Creation Token belongs to you!”

All members of the Yan Huang Alliance stood up, and in one voice they made a sound so loud that it must have broken through the ceiling.

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long Live the Yan Huang Alliance!”

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long Live the Yan Huang Alliance!”

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long Live the Yan Huang Alliance!”

The shout from the Yan Huang Alliance was deafening, drowning the hall of all other voices.

History repeats itself. The winner, finally, as accepted in China was the biggest guild of all... the Yan Huang Alliance.

The transaction, while the roar of voices was still thundering, was completed under the gaze of everybody. They watched while 1 billion gold coins were paid, and Long Tian Yun held up the Guild Creation Token up high, showing it to the people, bringing reassured smiles. In that moment the Yan Huang Alliance shouts also increased to its limit. The Yan Huang Alliance was this auction’s biggest focus and it once again proved that no one can match the strength they had.

In the VIP box, Ling Chen turned on the communication device, raised his right hand, and gave it a loud flick, then turned it off.

Cheer heartily, and enjoy the show, laugh all you want..... hahahahah.

Chapter 189 - The Utter Humiliation

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long live Yan Huang Alliance!”

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long live Yan Huang Alliance!”

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long live Yan Huang Alliance!”

Waves of cheers from the Yan Huang Alliance burst forth. Right now, the focus of every person in China was on the Yan Huang Alliance. The Yan Huang Alliance, in all their glory, had once again taken the most desired spot at the top of the Guild Rankings. Of course the guild members would be cheering out of their sheer pride. At this moment, the smiling Long Tian Yun, holding the Guild Creation Token high in the air, seemed like a magnificent Emperor. Although the process was quite difficult, and he had paid a high price for this Guild Creation Token, seeing this scene, he did not have any regrets at all.

After a long time, Long Tian Yun finally put down the Guild Creation Token and gave it to the Sword Emperor beside him. The Sword Emperor took the Guild Creation Token, and under everyone’s gaze, swiftly put it away.

Long Tian Yun always gave the most important things to the Sword Emperor. This was because there was no safer place to store things than on the Sword Emperor’s body. After leaving the Auction Hall, many people may try to assassinate him to steal the Guild Creation Token away. However, who would dare to attack the Sword Emperor?

“Haha, congratulations Alliance Master Long. You are indeed a young hero; our Skyfall Dynasty acknowledges its defeat wholeheartedly.” Skyfall nodded towards Long Tian Yun. Although he had lost, he did not reveal any bitter expressions, but instead congratulated his opponent, giving off the air of a king.

Long Tian Yun immediately courteously replied, “Heavenly King Skyfall is being modest. If it wasn’t for you showing kindness, I wouldn’t be able to receive this Guild Creation Token. There are not many people to I, Long Tian Yun, admire and respect, but you are one of them. After a few days when the Yan Huang Alliance is officially established, I hope Heavenly King Skyfall will grace us with his presence.”

“Haha, of course, of course.” Skyfall smilingly replied. Despite the rivalry between the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty, he truly did respect Long Tian Yun. There was not a single mediocre person from the Long family, but Long Tian Yun was simply a genius of geniuses.

“Congratulations Alliance Master Long. Although there were a lot of twists and turns, the end result was just as we all expected.” The Golden Age Alliance’s Mo Gu Lin also came forwards to congratulate Long Tian Yun.

“Congratulations, Alliance Master Long, looks like this Mystic Moon world will also become the Yan Huang Alliance’s world, hahaha.”

“With Alliance Master Long’s talents, the Yan Huang Alliance in this Mystic Moon world will definitely grow to no limits.”

“Today isn’t just a day of celebration for Alliance Master Long and the Yan Huang Alliance, but also for all of China. As far as I know, there isn’t a single Guild that has been officially established in Mystic Moon yet. The Yan Huang Alliance will not only be the first official Guild in China, but in the whole world. Congratulations, congratulations!”

The cheers from the Yan Huang Alliance continued, with no sign of stopping. Amidst all the noise, many bosses and guildmasters of large, medium and small guilds all came to congratulate Long Tian Yun. Though their envy and flattery were obvious, Long Tian Yun still courteously thanked them with polite words.

Having finally obtained the first Guild Creation Token, what Long Tian Yun wanted to immediately do was to go to the Azure Dragon City’s Guild Registry to officially create the Yan Huang Alliance. Although it was obvious to anyone that the first guild to be officially created would be the Yan Huang Alliance, at this point, Long Tian Yun simply did not want to take any risks. He squeezed out of the crowd, and called out in a loud voice, “Friends, my Yan Huang Alliance did not disappoint any of you, obtaining the first Guild Creation Token at this Auction. Now, we will immediately go to officialise the creation of the Yan Huang Alliance. I believe that within ten minutes, the announcement will be released. Within one week, the headquarters of the Yan Huang Alliance will be completed. When that time comes, I invite all friends to come join the celebrations. No matter if you’re one of

our partners or simply a stranger, as long as you are a friend of the Yan Huang Alliance, all are welcome!”

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long live Yan Huang Alliance!”

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long live Yan Huang Alliance!”

“Long live the Alliance Master! Long live Yan Huang Alliance!”

Long Tian Yun began to walk towards the exit, guarded by the Sword Emperor on his right and the Flame Emperor on his left. The people in the way hurriedly squeezed to the sides to create a path for him. It was obvious that Long Tian Yun was heading towards the Guild Registry in order to officially create the Yan Huang Alliance. This Auction had ended, but the completely forgotten Lord Fortune had no chance to make a closing speech. However, the amount of gold spent at this auction surpassed 1 billion gold, which was enough to keep him smiling for the next few years.

Inside the VIP box, Ling Chen stood up. Shui Ruo immediately asked, “Big brother, are we leaving now?”

“Not yet.” Ling Chen shook his head, then looked at the girls, and said in a serious voice, “I’m going out for a moment. Don’t go out while I’m gone. Also, when we leave, make sure you don’t walk out, but use the VIP ticket to be directly transported to outside the Auction Hall. Under any circumstances, don’t let anyone know you were in the VIP box. Do you all understand?”

“Got it.” Although they did not know the reasons, but seeing Ling Chen speak so seriously, the girls all nodded their heads and agreed.

The exit was at the back of the Auction House, whereas Long Tian Yun had been sitting in the third row from the front. As he walked closer and closer to the exit, countless gazes were upon him, and many younger girls began to cry out as he walked closer to them. Just as he was halfway to the exit, a system announcement suddenly rang out.

“Ding..... China Region Announcement! Player ‘Peter Pan’ at 10:03AM has created the Guild ‘Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog’. As he is the first player to create a Guild in the China Region, ‘Peter Pan’ receives 300 Fame Points. As the first Guild created in the China Region, ‘Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog’ shall be recorded into the Forgotten Continent’s Chronicles. The China Region Guild Rankings have been released, with ‘Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog’ ranking as number 1.”

“Ding... China Region Announcement.....”

“Ding... China Region Announcement.....”

As if he had stepped into a pile of mud, Long Tian Yun’s cheerful footsteps suddenly stopped. The cheering, shouting, discussing and whispering all abruptly stopped, and the Auction House became dead silent. The only things that could be heard were the China Region Announcement sounds.

Everyone's gaze was suddenly fixed upon Long Tian Yun.

The impression that Long Tian Yun gave everyone was that he possessed a calmness and wisdom that far surpassed anyone else of his age. No matter what happened, no matter how big the pressure was, he would be able to maintain his cool composure. No one had ever seen him hysteric or panicking before. However, at this moment, there was simply no way to describe Long Tian Yun's expression... if it had to be described, it would be something along the lines of... as if he had eaten 100 dead flies, and then 100 fresh and hot piles of dung.

The first Guild in the China Region had indeed been established today, but it was not the Yan Huang Alliance!! Instead, after the Yan Huang Alliance had received the Guild Creation Token for only three minutes, before Long Tian Yun had even walked out of the Auction House, its system announcement had rung out like a peal of thunder.

Long Tian Yun's epic battle with the Skyfall Dynasty, as well as his spending of a whole 1 billion gold, adding on the Yan Huang Alliance's cheers and celebrations, had become a joke... a massive joke!! Long Tian Yun, from his status as a victorious king, had suddenly been reduce to a joke. It was as if he had been dragged from heaven to hell in a single second.

He had spent 1 billion gold, and had finally received the Guild Creation Token. However, right after obtaining it, he had become the "Number 2". However, what made everyone dumbfounded and Long Tian Yun utterly humiliated was the Guild that had stolen

the top spot's name...

Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog!!

Thus, if Long Tian Yun was to use this Guild Creation Token to create the second Guild, what everyone would see on the Guild Rankings would be:

> Guild Rankings (According to Date of Establishment):
>
> Number 1: Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog, Creator: Peter Pan
>
> Number 2: Yan Huang Alliance, Creator: Long Tian Yun

What an utter humiliation!!

What was the Yan Huang Alliance? Its core was made of powerful political figures, and represented China on the international level. Not only was it the biggest Guild in China, but also in the whole world. No matter where one went, they would be able to see traces of the Yan Huang Alliance. Apart from the Skyfall Dynasty and the Golden Age Alliance, who else would dare to offend the Yan Huang Alliance.

At this moment, what appeared in front of all the players, not only those in China, but in the whole world, was the humiliation

and mockery of the Yan Huang Alliance, especially its creator-someone who was publicly recognised as the Emperor of virtual games. And yet, Long Tian Yun had been called a “dog”.

Who was this “Peter Pan” person? What sort of enmity was there between him and Long Tian Yun to take such revenge on him? To the Long Tian Yun who greatly valued honour and fame, this sort of humiliation was even worse than stabbing him tens of times with a blade. And to do this to Long Tian Yun, did he not fear retaliation and revenge from the Long family and the Yan Huang Alliance? No one doubted that if Long Tian Yun found out who this “Peter Pan” was, he would use the cruellest methods to destroy him.

Long Tian Yun clenched his two fists, his long nails digging into his palms. He slowly turned around, his handsome face twisted in anger. He raised his hand, pointed forwards, and yelled one word at a time, “Someone... tell... me... what is going on!!!!!!”

The people who were normally by Long Tian Yun’s side, including Cang Yan, all took a step back in fear. Long Tian Yun never displayed any anger in public. Only those who were part of his trusted group knew how fearsome he was when he was angry. They all clearly knew that when angered, he turned into the most terrifying demon on earth. This was the first time Long Tian Yun had acted in such a way in public-because before today, he had never suffered such humiliation. Before today, no one had had such audacity to do such a thing.

In front of all of China, as well as the rest of the whole world, he had fallen from heaven into a pile of dung.

The Flame Emperor tried to move his lips, but not a single world could come out. What had happened? Not a single person could answer him.

What he did know was that... this Guild had been established right after Long Tian Yun had received the Guild Creation Token. If it was just this, then it was possible that it was simply a coincidence-that someone had obtained Guild Creation Token while the Auction was proceeding, and had created a Guild first. However, this new Guild's name – Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog, even an idiot would be able to work out that this name was intended to humiliate the Yan Huang Alliance and Long Tian Yun in particular. In that case, this definitely could not be a coincidence, but rather a scheme to humiliate the Yan Huang Alliance! Someone had definitely obtained two Guild Creation Tokens-one was given to the Auction House to auction, and predicted that Yan Huang Alliance would win. Then, after he paid a high price for it, they would immediately create 'Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog'. That way, not only did they steal 1 billion gold from the Yan Huang Alliance, but also slapped them in the face in front of the whole world...

The Yan Huang Alliance had been easily played like a clown.

Chapter 190 - Blocking the Way

“Well, looks like things are getting interesting.” Yun Feng stroked his chin, staring into space for a good ten seconds before finally slowly saying that sentence. This was the first time he had seen Long Tian Yun reveal such a terrifying expression. After spending so much time, effort and money, as well as being cheered on in such grand applause, he had suddenly become a joke, a ‘dog’. Even Long Tian Yun couldn’t bear such humiliation.

Xiao Qiu Feng frowned, and said in a low voice, “That person must have some sort of deep enmity with Long Tian Yun. With how large the Yan Huang Alliance is, they must have offended many people and made countless enemies. However, none of them dare to openly take revenge. To be able to obtain two Guild Creation Tokens, and has a great enmity towards Long Tian Yun... Yun Feng, can you think of anyone?

To slap the Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance on the face in such a manner in public, what sort of deep enmity did that person have!? Yun Feng thought for a while and replied, “To be able to obtain two Guild Creation Tokens before the Yan Huang Alliance itself would probably take an alliance between ten or so large guilds. However, even the Skyfall Dynasty, which has always been openly challenging the Yan Huang Alliance, wouldn’t be so stupid to do something like this. Otherwise, if Long Tian Yun found out who was behind this, the consequences would be unimaginable. If there’s anyone able to do this, they’d have to be on the Heaven Rankings... oh, and also that Ling Tian. However, none of the people on the Heaven Rankings have any sort of enmity with Long Tian Yun. As for Ling Tian, he hasn’t even appeared for that long, and hasn’t even had any opportunities to interact with Long Tian Yun or the Yan Huang Alliance, much less

hate him… I can't think of anyone, but at least, this Peter Pan…

"A pawn." Xiao Qiu Feng indifferently said.

"Before finding that person and destroying their guild, the Yan Huang Alliance definitely won't officially establish their guild. Otherwise, they'd become complete laughingstocks." Yun Feng said in a low voice. As the leader of one of the subsidiary guilds of the Yan Huang Alliance, he maintained sombre and serious expression. However, there was still a bit of schadenfreude and glee that he couldn't cover up.

No matter who the person is, or if they were a good or evil person, or if they were male or female, to be able to make Long Tian Yun suffer such humiliation, they were definitely the first! This audacity, this boldness, as well as the ability to obtain two Guild Creation Tokens… Yun Feng truly wanted to find this person and shout at them, "RESPECT!!"

"Wah! Wah! Woaahhhh!!! This is so funny; so, so, so, so exciting!! Hahahaha….."

Xiao Qi's inelegant laughter burst forth, and she even started to jump up and down. If she was also in the hall, she would be like all the other people, maintaining their silence. However, in the VIP Box, no one from the outside could see or hear what was going on inside. As such, she let out her emotions as she pleased. Because of Meng Xin's situation, she had been very displeased with Long Tian Yun. However, apart from joining Heart's Dream to help Meng Xin, there was nothing she could do about him. Perhaps in the whole world, the only person who was more powerful than Long

Tian Yun was his father. However, he had suffered the loss of one billion gold in exchange for public humiliation. This caused Xiao Qi to burst with joy and happiness.

"Big sister Meng Xin, that Peter Pan guy is simply too amazing. To be able to humiliate Long Tian Yun to such an extent... did you see Long Tian Yun's face? It was so hilarious... eh? Big sister Meng Xin, don't you feel happy from this? Big sister Meng Xin?"

Meng Xin stood in silence. After being pulled by Xiao Qi a few times, she finally came back to her senses. She distantly said, "Although this is quite extreme and cruel, that Peter Pan is indeed quite amazing."

Only……

Seeing that they were in the VIP Box, and Ling Tian telling them not to let anyone know that they had entered the VIP Box, her heart could not stay calm.

To be able to enter a VIP Box, the Auction House would have to recognise one as a VIP. So what was a VIP... to Auction Houses, VIPs were anyone who could bring their Auction House a large amount of money, or a large amount of fame. And as for this auction, the finale was the Guild Creation Token.

Since the moment she had entered the VIP Box, she had suspected whether or not it was Ling Tian who had consigned the Guild Creation Token for auction. She had only met Ling Tian a few times, as well as his pet Xi Ling, but if there was one person

who she thought could obtain a Guild Creation Token so early, it would be Ling Tian.

If it was Ling Tian who had consigned this Guild Creation Token for auction, and adding on what he had said before... could it be... all that had happened...

Was he doing this for me?

No... this was even worse than just killing Long Tian Yun. Even the entire Yan Huang Alliance had been completely humiliated. Someone would only do this if they had some sort of irreconcilable enmity with him. What Ling Tian knew about Long Tian Yun was only through what she had told him. Moreover, Ling Tian was someone who was very calm, and thought rationally before making choices. Surely he wouldn't do something that would bring about retribution from the Yan Huang Alliance. He definitely knew of how large and powerful the Yan Huang Alliance was. If found out, no matter if it was in the virtual world or the real world, unless he was more powerful by ten or even one hundred times, he still wouldn't be able to escape from them.

But... was it him...

Hopefully, it wasn't him...

However, except for him, who else would it be...

Yun Meng Xin felt very conflicted and confused.

The entire China server had exploded into chaos, and even countless people from other servers were watching with interest. As for the Auction House, it was still deathly silent. Facing the Yan Huang Alliance's Alliance Master, the heir to the Long family's wrath, no one dared to risk Long Tian Yun's anger to be directed to them.

"Young Master, please calm down, that... that's just a clown who wanted to use our Yan Huang Alliance to boost his own fame. We will immediately find that person and destroy that guild, or convince him to deregister the guild... our Yan Huang Alliance will still be number one. As for that person, Young Master can do what he wants to him when the time comes." Cang Yan quickly said.

Indeed, Long Tian Yun was someone who normal people could not be compared to. Although he was still breathing heavily, his face still somewhat twisted, he had rapidly become almost calm again. He slightly narrowed his eyes, emitting a terrifying glare, causing cold sweat to start running down the backs of those he looked at. They all lowered their heads; no one dared to meet his gaze, "Good... very good... it seems that our Yan Huang Alliance has stayed silent for too long. There are already people trampling on our dignity, very good..."

Every word that Long Tian Yun spoke came out of gritted teeth, causing the hearts of those around him to tremble. He continued to look around him, "Right now, I really want to know which~~ friend~~ gave me such a big present. This is the biggest present that I, Long Tian Yun, have ever received in my whole life. From the bottom of my heart, I hope you can sleep well from now on, hahaha...."

Long Tian Yun laughed, but his expression was still incredibly sinister and terrifying. Everyone could tell that beneath his external appearance were turbulent and violent flames.

Cang Yan wiped off the sweat from his forehead, and suddenly thought of something. He immediately turned around, and shouted at Lord Fortune, “Lord Fortune! Didn’t you say this was the first Guild Creation Token! What’s going on!!”

Lord Fortune grimaced, and stood up. He calmly said, “Indeed, what you just won in the auction was the first Guild Creation Token that had been dropped in the Forgotten Continent. We especially confirmed this before the auction. If you don’t believe me, you can take that Guild Creation Token to the Azure Dragon City Notary’s Office. If that isn’t the first Guild Creation Token, we’re willing to compensate you for ten times the amount!!”

“Then why was there another guild that was created before ours!!” Cang Yan yelled back.

“Haha, what does that have to do with us? All I know is that we sold the first Guild Creation Token. Everyone knows that apart from the first Guild Creation Token, there will at some point be a second, a third, etc. Perhaps during the auction someone found the second Guild Creation Token and immediately went to establish their guild. There’s no logical reason to push the responsibility onto our Auction House.” Lord Fortune casually replied.

This affair truly had nothing to do with the Auction House. As an

Auction House that was governed by the Azure Dragon City, as opposed to players, their fairness and trustworthiness could not be doubted. To be fair, they had also been used. Moreover, Lord Fortune truly did not know what had happened, and did not know when the other Guild Creation Token had appeared.

If it was an Auction House run by players, the Yan Huang Alliance could take out their anger on them or at least cause trouble for them. However, the Azure Dragon Central Auction House was governed by the Azure Dragon City. Even the Yan Huang Alliance did not dare to do anything to it. Cang Yan gnashed his teeth, and continued to shout, “This indeed isn’t your Auction House’s fault, but at least you must tell us who consigned that Guild Creation for Auction!! Who was it?”

“Sorry, unless the consignor agrees, we definitely will not release any information about them. We would definitely not do something so dishonourable.” Lord Fortune turned up his nose.

“You!!” Cang Yan became incredibly infuriated, but could not do anything about it.

“Hmph!”

Long Tian Yun gave a furious harrumph, and quickly strode towards the Auction House’s exit. He wanted to immediately leave the gaze of the public. After he found out who was behind this, he would make that person pay dearly.

The enraged Long Tian Yun was emanating a terrifying killing

intent. Wherever he walked near, people would back away. However, just as Long Tian Yun was a few metres away from the exit, a person walked out and blocked his way.

Everyone's eyes widened, their faces full of disbelief as they looked at the person who had dared to block Long Tian Yun's way... Long Tian Yun was currently livid with anger-who would be so brave – or stupid-to block his way.

When Yun Feng saw who the person was, he stood up as if a sword had been stabbed into his behind. His jaw dropped open, as if it was going to hit the ground, "L-L-L-L-Ling... Ling Tian!! W-wwhat's he doing!"

"Ah!!" Inside the VIP Box, Xiao Qi, Su'Er, Shui Ruo, Meng Xi all gave a cry of surprise.

The person who stood in front of Long Tian Yun, his arms crossed, was Ling Chen!

Chapter 191 - Battle Challenge!

“Piss off!!”

After having been humiliated just moments earlier, all of the Yan Huang Alliance members were furious. Seeing someone purposely step in front of Long Yun Tian, Cang Yan took a step forward and vehemently yelled out.

If PK wasn’t banned in towns and cities, Cang Yan wouldn’t even have bothered speaking to him. He would have just burnt him to crisp directly.

Cang Yan’s shout caused the ears of the people around him to hurt. However, the person blocking Long Tian Yun’s way did not move at all. He slightly raised his head, and his eyes glinted under the mask, “I just want to talk to Alliance Master Long Tian Yun. Anyone else, piss off.”

As soon as they heard this sentence, all the players who were watching were dumbfounded. Who was this guy addressing? It was the fourth ranked player on the Heaven Rankings, the publicly recognised strongest Elementalist, ‘Flame Emperor’ Cang Yan! He was like a god to all magic professions. Anywhere he stomped his foot in the virtual world could cause earthquakes.

However, this unknown person had used a tone like he was talking to a fly! He either didn’t know who he was talking to, or he was completely crazy!

“Holy fuck!” Yun Feng covered his eyes with his hands. Based on his understanding of Cang Yan, just this one sentence from Ling Chen made them lifelong enemies. Although externally, Cang Yan looked handsome and elegant, both Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng knew that apart from when he was with Long Tian Yun, he was like a venomous snake. Anyone who offended him would receive full retribution. “What the hell is he doing!! Why would he be so arrogant to them, especially after how they were just humiliated so badly!”

“Do you know this person?” Xiao Qiu Feng asked, his brows furrowed.

“Err, n-no... I don’t... ai, forget it, since he’s blocking Long Tian Yun’s way, soon you’ll find out who he is.” Yun Feng denied knowing him, then helplessly shook his head. He simply couldn’t understand what Ling Chen was trying to do. Didn’t he know that the people in front of him were Long Tian Yun, as well as the incredibly strong Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor? Right now, they could be compared to bombs that could go off at any moment.

Hearing Ling Chen’s response, Cang Yan was shocked, and stared at him. His voice became lower, “You... what did you just say? I dare you to say it again.”

“Get behind me!!”

Before Cang Yan had the opportunity to finish speaking, a sentence that no one expected came out of Long Tian Yun’s mouth. Cang Yan was startled, and took a step back, and stood at Long Tian Yun’s left hand side. Long Tian Yun did not walk forwards,

and instead coldly looked at Ling Chen. After a short while, a strange smile appeared on his face, “Haha, in this Mystic Moon world, there’s an unsurpassable legendary figure. He was the first to walk out of Novice Village, and is ranked number 1 in both level and Fame Points, surpassing everyone else by a large margin. He solely occupies the Equipment and Pet Rankings, with Celestial equipment that other people wouldn’t even dream of obtaining, as well having Celestial and Heaven’s End grade pets. This sort of ‘legendary’ figure, I’ve always wanted to befriend. I never thought we would meet like this, Ling Tian...”

Whoosh...

As soon as the name ‘Ling Tian’ was uttered from Long Tian Yun’s mouth, the entire Auction Hall exploded with excitement. Players all quickly activated their camera functions, and shutter sounds filled the entire hall. The players who had been preparing to leave all stopped, and stared at the legendary figure in front of them...

“Ling Tian... he’s that Ling Tian!?”

“This was said by the Alliance Master himself, how can he be wrong!! This legendary person has finally appeared. It’s a pity he’s wearing a mask though.”

“I heard he has two Celestial grade equipment, and two super pets, is this true!?”

“Rubbish, everyone in the whole world knows this!! Quickly take

photos, we're the first people to see him in person."

"What business does he have with Long Tian Yun? Could it be that he wants to join the Yan Huang Alliance? It doesn't seem like it....."

There was simply too much fame associated with the name 'Ling Tian'. Every single Ranking list, apart from the Guild Rankings, had his name at the top of it. Even the Sword Emperor and Shinigami were below him. Because no one had ever seen him in person before, and had only heard of him through system announcements, their curiosity towards him grew day by day. Now that he had appeared in person, a typhoon of excitement swept across the Auction House.

Hearing his name called by Long Yun Tian, who had never seen him before in this game, Ling Tian felt slightly shocked. However, that's all he felt. After all, with the Yan Huang Alliance's power, they would definitely have some information on him... for example, the equipment he had. Right now, he was dressed for battle, without any fashion accessories.

"That's right, I'm Ling Tian." As he spoke, he revealed his IGN above his head. The two characters 'Ling Tian' shining above his head caused the crowd to clamour even louder.

"Ling Tian... ah," Cang Yan gave a cold laugh, "So you're Ling Tian. However, no matter who you are, to talk to me like that..."

"Shut the hell up!" Before Cang Yan could finish his sentence,

Long Tian Yun furiously rebuked him, and gave him a cold look. Cang Yan immediately stopped talking, but venomously glared at Ling Chen.

"My subordinates can sometimes be a bit rash and rude, please don't take them too seriously." The fury within him from the humiliation he had experienced had subsided, and his expression was once again calm, at least on the outside. He said in a level tone, "Although there were so unhappy occurrences today, to be able to see you Ling Tian, makes it worth it. Then, you appearing before me-do you want to become my friend, or my enemy?"

Although the auction had ended, the media that was broadcasting what was happening in the Auction House had not stopped recording. The reason was because there was a spectacular event happening now. One was the leader of the Yan Huang Alliance; the other was the incredibly famous Ling Tian. Who knew what would happen between them.

"Hahaha, Alliance Master Long is too serious. Although I haven't been in the virtual world for long, and there are many things I have no idea about, I've still heard of the Yan Huang Alliance. For someone like me, with little money or power, how can I dare to be Alliance Master Long's enemy? However, as long as Alliance Master Long doesn't mind, I wouldn't mind being friends either. However, before that, I have an offer for Alliance Master Long."

"Offer? What offer?" Long Tian Yun asked coolly.

"Could it be that he wants to sell a Celestial equip or a pet to Long Tian Yun?"

“It’s very possible! With the resources of the Yan Huang Alliance, they would definitely be able to pay an astronomical price.”

People began to debate about what the offer was. Most of the guesses were that Ling Chen was here to propose a sale of his equipment or pets in exchange for a large fortune. However, what Ling Chen said completely shocked everyone…

“Of course it’s a very profitable offer for Alliance Master Long.” Ling Chen grinned, then spoke with a tone of helplessness, “Before, I came to this auction so that I could buy the Guild Creation Token for a friend. Alas, I’m just a poor man-how can I compare with Alliance Master Long’s buying price of 1 billion gold? In that case, I decided, I would take it from whoever bought it.”

As soon as they heard this, all of the players were dumbfounded.

“H-h-he… he wants to take the Guild Creation Token from the Sword Emperor by force?”

“This Ling Tian, is he crazy?”

“Even if he’s super strong, the one who has the Guild Creation Token is the Sword Emperor! And behind the Sword Emperor is the entire Yan Huang Alliance…..”

……

“Oh my god!!!” Yun Feng grasped at his hair, “What the hell is going on!? He’s not one of those impulsive people, so what’s going on today.”

“Be quiet.” Xiao Qiu Feng raised his hand in front of Yun Feng, his gaze like a blade, staring at Ling Chen.

“Hahaha!” Long Tian Yun reacted like he had heard a hilarious joke, “Could it be you want to take the Guild Creation Token from us by force?”

“No, no, of course not.” Ling Chen wagged his finger and rejected that, causing the commotion to die down a little, “A few moments ago I said that I wouldn’t dare to be Alliance Master Long and the Yan Huang Alliance’s enemy. I definitely wouldn’t do such a stupid thing. However, I really want this Guild Creation Token, so I thought of a different method.”

As he spoke, the arms that he had held crossed in front of his chest stretched out. A white ray of light and a green ray of light flashed, and two weapons simultaneously appeared in his hands... in his left hand was a silver spear, and in his right hand was a sword that let out a small breeze of wind. As soon as these two weapons appeared, the crowd began to roar.

“Those two weapons, those lights, the feeling from those...”

“Could they be the only Celestial weapons on the Weapons Rankings... Soaring Cloud and Zephyr Blade!!”

“Of course it’s the Soaring Cloud and Zephyr Blade, there’s no doubt!! Quickly take photos!!”

“This is the first time I’ve ever seen Celestial grade equipment. Just their external appearances are incredible-my saliva’s overflowing from my mouth…”

“I, Ling Tian, challenge your Yan Huang Alliance’s ‘Sword Emperor’ Feng Xie Yu to a duel tomorrow afternoon at 2pm, at the Second District of the Plains Region! If I win, the Guild Creation Token is mine! If I lose, the Soaring Cloud and Zephyr Blade are yours!”

Ling Chen spoke in a loud voice, which filled the entire hall. It was then broadcast throughout the entire Forgotten Continent, as well as to every corner in China, to countless players.

Chapter 192 - Wild Talk

Challenging the Sword Emperor...

These four words travelled like a furious gale throughout the entire China server in the virtual world.

These sentences that Ling Chen spoke immediately took prominence over anything else. The explosiveness of this news caused all players to become greatly excited. What sort of person was the Sword Emperor? The Sword Emperor was publicly recognised to be the number 1 player in China, an existence that was similar to a ‘god’. The Sword Emperor had never been defeated in battle before in China. Although the Heaven Rankings almost always changed from year to year, the number one position had always belonged to the Sword Emperor.

Two years ago at the International Mock Battle, Sword Emperor, who had represented China, had made it all the way to the semi-finals. However, the Sword Emperor had been defeated by the strongest player in existence, Eve. That was the only loss the Sword Emperor had ever suffered. However, losing to Eve was not something that was shameful. After all, she was described as someone who exceeded the limits of humans. Losing to Eve did not mean that the Sword Emperor was week; rather, it showed how monstrously strong Eve was.

Apart from Eve, almost everyone in China, including Long Tian Yun, believed that the Sword Emperor was undefeatable. This was especially so for those who had personally seen the Sword Emperor fight before-the Sword Emperor’s skill in sword fighting was

simply spectacular and breathtaking. The Shinigami was terrifying, and the Flame Emperor was extremely strong. However, even if they joined forces, they still would not be able to defeat the Sword Emperor in a direct fight. In all these years, no one had dared to issue a direct challenge to the Sword Emperor, because all this would result in would be humiliation.

However, Ling Tian, this dark horse, had not appeared for that long, but had again and again sent waves across the entirety of China. Taking the top spot in all the Rankings, naturally all players would take a keen interest in him. This was the first time he had appeared in public, and the first thing he had done was to publicly challenge the Sword Emperor to a duel! Moreover, the location of the duel wasn't at the Azure Dragon City Arena, but rather in the Second District of the Plains Region... in the virtual world, victory and defeat were determined by killing the other player. In the Arena, one would not suffer any loss after death. However, outside of the city, any deaths would lead to decrease in level, as well as dropping equipment. Moreover, the Second District of the Plains Region was a golden area for farming... this meant that there would be countless people watching the duel. This meant that if Long Tian Yun accepted this duel, the result would be the death of either Ling Tian or the Sword Emperor! No matter which of them died, it would shake the whole of China.

However, this was not all. There were also the stakes that created boundless excitement... if the Sword Emperor lost, Long Tian Yun would have to give Ling Tian the Guild Creation Token that he had just obtained. If Ling Tian lost, he would have to give Long Tian Yun two pieces of Celestial grade equipment!! The Guild Creation token was something that Long Tian Yun had used 1 billion gold to purchase, whereas the Celestial grade weapons were the only ones in the whole world-they were simply priceless! Notwithstanding,

the Guild Creation Token that Long Tian Yun hand no longer had the value of 1 billion gold. Now, it was probably worth less than even 10 million gold. Thus, the two pieces of Celestial grade equipment were worth far more than Long Tian Yun's Guild Creation Token. As such, Ling Tian's stakes were much higher.

Yun Feng was completely speechless, and Xiao Qiu Feng's expression became extremely stiff. Inside the VIP Box, Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi and Su'Er all widened their eyes... they never expected such an event to occur.

"Arghhhh what is he thinking!?!?" Yun Feng simply couldn't understand what was going through Ling Chen's head. He wanted to duel with the Sword Emperor... this was fine and all, but did it really have to be right after Long Tian Yun had been humiliated in such a way, and with the stakes being the Guild Creation Token that had just caused the humiliation... this was no longer simply just a duel, but also a gamble with Long Tian Yun.

Noisy chattering and exclaiming filled the entire hall. The moment Ling Tian had issued his challenge, the entirety of China had known about him challenging the Sword Emperor. This challenge took Long Tian Yun by surprise, and his eyes narrowed even further, staring at Ling Chen, but did not immediately answer.

"What? Don't tell me that Alliance Master Long fears that your number 1 expert of Yan Huang Alliance isn't a match for me, and that you're afraid of losing the Guild Creation Token to me? Heh..." Ling Chen gave a short laugh, and although he was wearing a mask, everyone could imagine a mocking smile on his face, "The

first day I entered into the Mystic Moon World, I had heard about how daring, how courageous, how heroic Alliance Master Long was. I also heard about how invincible the Sword Emperor was. However, it's a pity that the real people don't live up to their reputations. Since Alliance Master Long doesn't have the guts to even accept a challenge from a newbie like me, tsk tsk… fine, I won't pressure Alliance Master Long-let's all forget about the duel between the Sword Emperor and myself…"

Just as Ling Chen finished speaking, all of the players started clamouring again. Disappointment was written over countless players' faces, but his next few sentences once again caused everyone to become dumbfounded.

"… and instead: I, Ling Tian, challenge your Yan Huang Alliance's Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor to a duel tomorrow afternoon at 2pm, at the Second District of the Plains Region! Moreover, it won't be a tag team battle, but rather they can both fight me at once!! What about this?" Ling Chen stretched out two fingers, and pointed at the Sword Emperor and the Flame Emperor. His tone and actions were both incredibly arrogant.

Bam… Yun Feng's body collapsed, his head hitting the armrest of his chair.

If the impression that Ling Tian gave before when challenging the Sword Emperor was one of confidence, indeed, overconfidence, this was simply wildly arrogant… moreover, it was the sort of unfounded, presumptuous arrogance. Perhaps… this guy was truly crazy.

Anyone who had seen the Sword Emperor fight before would know that the Sword Emperor's might did not come from weapons or equipment. Rather, everyone knew that the Sword Emperor had never accepted any equipment, items or gold from the Yan Huang Alliance, even that which was personally given by Long Tian Yun. Everything that the Sword Emperor had, came from hard work. Even though the Sword Emperor's equipment was not all that impressive, there was still no one who could rival the Sword Emperor. In the time it took another player of the same class, same level, with the same equipment to strike once with their sword, the Sword Emperor could strike countless times... no one could even clearly see the Sword Emperor's blade when attacking. Just with a flick of a wrist, the Sword Emperor had instantly killed many enemies without them realising what had just happened.

Ling Tian challenging the Sword Emperor caused everyone to become incomparably excited. This was not just because they could see an exciting battle, but also because of the freshness of the experience and the exhilaration it would bring. In the hearts of most people, apart from Eve, the Sword Emperor was undefeatable. It would take a split second for the Sword Emperor to defeat most enemies.

An invincible Sword Emperor plus a Flame Emperor. The Flame Emperor was publicly acknowledged to be the strongest Elementalist. He was a talented fire esper in the real world whose abilities were also transferred to the virtual world. In the virtual world, when casting Fire magic, his chanting time was significantly shorter than anyone else's, and had far greater control over the accuracy of his flames than any other Fire Elementalist. There were practically no people who could dodge his flame attacks.

Upon hearing that he wanted to fight both the Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor at the same time, a few thoughts all appeared in the minds of the crowd… talking big, presumptuous and arrogant, what a joke, is he crazy?

"HAHAHA!!" Cang Yan reacted as if he had heard the funniest joke in the entire world. He looked at Ling Chen with a look of derision, "Hahaha, interesting, interesting. So that infamous Ling Tian is actually such a retard, this is quite eye-opening. Kid, do you think that you're invincible just because you're first on a few rankings and you have Celestial grade weapons? Hahaha, what a joke. To true experts, levels and equipment don't mean much. Let alone two pieces of Celestial grade equipment, even if your whole body was covered in godly equipment you'd still be like a small ant to me. You want to challenge me? You don't have the right!!"

"Alright, stop." Long Tian Yun raised his hand and cut Cang Yan off. He slightly smiled, and looked at Ling Chen with some interest, "Ling Tian, you don't need to resort to such low methods of provocation. Since a long time ago, I wanted to see how powerful this legendary Ling Tian was, and with this gift of two Celestial grade equipment, why not? However, just Sword Emperor is enough."

This sentence signified that Long Tian Yun had accepted Ling Chen's challenge, and the crowd around them grew even more excited. This piece of information spread across the entire country at an incredible speed. Moreover, Long Tian Yun's casual sentence not only rejected Ling Chen's new offer, by stating that only Sword Emperor would fight against him, but also said that Ling Chen would be gifting him two Celestial grade weapons for free… evidently, he did not believe that the Sword Emperor would lose,

and did not take Ling Tian seriously at all. Ling Chen smiled, “Very good, Alliance Master Long is indeed a straightforward person. In that case, I’ll be waiting for Alliance Master Long and the Sword Emperor at the Second District of the Plains Region tomorrow at 2pm… oh, and remember to bring the Guild Creation Token.”

With his mask on his face, no one could see what sort of smile he could making. Although Long Tian Yun had stated that Ling Chen didn’t need to use such ‘low methods of provocation’, it had evidently worked.

With Long Tian Yun’s careful and wary personality, no matter how much he believed in the Sword Emperor’s strength, he still would not have agreed to Ling Chen’s challenge so easily. However, the time and place Ling Chen had chosen to issue this challenge had been perfect. After being humiliated so badly, how could Long Tian Yun remain calm and think clearly? Moreover, there were countless eyes watching what was going on here. Ling Chen had first challenged the Sword Emperor, then both the Sword Emperor and the Flame Emperor. If Long Tian Yun didn’t agree, the Yan Huang Alliance would be made into an even bigger laughingstock! Furthermore, Ling Chen’s arrogance also made Long Tian Yun believe that being of a similar player level with the Sword Emperor, how could such a person defeat the Sword Emperor?

As such, Long Tian Yun accepted the challenge without much thought.

“Then, see you tomorrow, Alliance Master Long. Please definitely don’t forget to bring the Guild Creation Token, hahaha.”

As he laughed, Ling Chen turned around and quickly walked out of the Auction Hall. The people behind Long Tian Yun all began to chase after him, but were stopped by Long Tian Yun, “No need to chase after him, everyone go back with me. Let’s not think about the affair with Ling Tian for now. Tomorrow, we’ll see which one of us it was that was overconfident!!”

Chapter 193 - Ouroboros

Temporary Headquarters of the Yan Huang Alliance

Bam!!

A luxurious chair was thrown by Long Tian Yun onto the ground. After he had returned to his headquarters, his rage had exploded out. He would never forget that icy feeling he had felt when the system announcement rang out. It was the biggest humiliation he had ever experienced in his entire life!! He had bought such humiliation with 1 billion gold! Moreover, it was under the views of countless players! Long Tian Yun breathed heavily, his whole body shaking. His eyes were filled with venomous hatred.

“Young Master doesn’t need to be so angry. We will find that Peter Pan in just a few days. As for how he’ll be executed, it will be up to Young Master.” A black clothed male said. The man’s name was Flame Shadow, and was one of Long Tian Yun’s entourage. He was in charge of passing on Long Tian Yun’s orders, as well as external affairs. He had an extremely high status in the Yan Huang Alliance.

“Execute?” Long Tian Yun gave a cold laugh, “Newly created guilds are shielded for one month. In this one month, unless he willingly disbands his guild, there is no other way to remove it. What’s the point in killing him? At least for this one month, our Yan Huang Alliance will be viewed as a joke by the whole world.”

“Then, we’ll capture him, and force him to disband his guild.

After that, we can punish him however we like." Flame Shadow suggested.

Long Tian Yun sat down heavily, his face dark, "No need for further words. Immediately contact The Dark Night! The way for contacting them is probably different from that in the past. Tell them to find Peter Pan as soon as possible, as well as catch that Peter Pan for me. Remember, I want him caught and brought to me, not killed repeatedly. They can name whatever price they want!!"

In this situation, that Long Tian Yun would first think of The Dark Night showed how famous and reputable they were. After all, The Dark Night had never failed at a mission before... not even once. No matter if it was killing people, finding people, stealing treasures……

"Roger!" Flame Shadow accepted the order, retreated back a few steps, and disappeared from the hall.

The hall lapsed into silence. The Sword Emperor stood in silence next to him on his right hand side, still as a statue. Apart from Long Tian Yun's safety, the Sword Emperor was not concerned with anything else. Seeing Long Tian Yun's vehement face, Cang Yan thought for a while, and said, "Young Master, that Peter Pan was probably just a pawn used by someone. To act like this against the Young Master, the person must not be a small fry. Peter Pan, this name..."

"Of course I know that!" Long Tian Yun coldly harrumphed, "There are many suspects, but the only person who can give us an

answer is that Peter Pan! If we can find him, we'll naturally know if he's some sort of mastermind, or just a pawn!"

Cang Yan nodded his head, then glanced at the Sword Emperor, then said in a low voice, "Young Master, what do you think about the affair with Ling Tian?"

"Ling Tian? Heh..." Long Tian Yun gave a cold laugh, "He's very arrogant, even more arrogant than me. It seemed that he was purposely acting that arrogant in front of me. That sort of person is either extremely foolish, or extremely intelligent."

"Intelligent? Heh, he's just someone who's at the top of a few Rankings and has two Celestial grade equips, and yet thinks he's invincible. He actually dared to challenge both the Sword Emperor and myself, what a joke. I've never heard of this person before, and he seems to have just entered the virtual world. No wonder he's so presumptuously arrogant. After he sees what a true expert is, he'll know how foolish he is." Cang Yan said.

"Whether he's intelligent or foolish, we'll find out by tomorrow. However, no matter what..." Long Tian Yun's eyes flashed with a cold light, "He's definitely not a match for Xie Yu."

"Five seconds... no, three seconds." Cang Yan stretched out three fingers... it would only take three seconds for the Sword Emperor to kill him!

"We'll not discuss this matter until tomorrow. Right now, let everyone focus on finding that Peter Pan! I want to see results

within five days!”

“Young Master, rest assured, within a few days, everyone will know what the consequences are of going against our Yan Huang Alliance.” Cang Yan said as he nodded. He paused, and continued to speak, “Young Master, it seems to me that Guild Creation Tokens pretty much don’t have much of a chance of dropping from LV20 Lord Bosses. Otherwise, with our millions of players in the Yan Huang Alliance, how could we not have found a single one yet? However, the person who did this to us has at least two. To be able to obtain two Guild Creation Tokens before us, as well as has some sort of grudge against us, I think the only possibility is the Skyfall Dynasty… perhaps they were lucky enough to find a boss that was even superior to a Lord Boss. However, now that I think about it, could this have something to do with Ling Tian?”

“He was able to obtain Celestial grade equipment, as well as super pets, which are things that no other player can even dream of obtaining at this stage of the game. So if it was him that obtained the Guild Creation Token, this wouldn’t be surprising at all?” Long Tian Yun asked.

“Yes, it seems that Young Master has also thought about this.” Cang Yan hurriedly answered.

“Hmph, even an idiot can think of something so simple. However, I observed his speech and actions, and did not find him familiar at all. I don’t think I’ve ever met him before, so he wouldn’t have a reason to do such a thing. Moreover, if he was related to Peter Pan, who is hiding himself carefully right now, why would he appear in public in such an arrogant way? I can’t

find any reason to suspect it's him... but that doesn't mean we can clear him of all suspicion! We definitely can't overlook any person or guild in our investigation." Long Tian Yun said darkly.

Half an hour later.

"Young Master, The Dark Night accepted." Flame Shadow had returned, and reported to Long Tian Yun.

"Accepted? Very good." Long Tian Yun stood up. Hearing that The Dark Night had accepted his request, his rage had disappeared by half. The Dark Night was so powerful that they didn't even fear his Yan Huang Alliance. Since they accepted his request, they would definitely complete it.

"However, the price is very high." Flame Shadow continued to say.

"How much?" Long Tian Yun expressionlessly asked. As long as he could take his revenge, money was not a problem.

"If they can complete it within one month, 5 million. Half a month, 20 million. One week, 50 million. Five days, 100 million!"

"100 million, and add another 50 million if they can bring Peter Pan to me within five days!"

"Roger!!" Flame Shadow knew that because of this event, Long Tian Yun had been greatly perturbed. He did not waste any words,

and immediately departed.

At the same time, at a different place.

After leaving the Auction Hall, Ling Chen quickly blended into the crowd, and disappeared. After losing any people who were following him, he changed his attire in an alley and headed towards his destination.

After a long time, he stopped at a dark place where there were no people, and silently stood there.

“Master!”

Like a ghost, a man clothed in black appeared from behind him, and knelt down.

“Did Hidden Shadow come?” Ling Chen turned around, and asked in a low voice.

“Greetings, Master!” Another black clothed person appeared like smoke, and knelt down.

“Rise.”

The two people quickly stood up in front of Ling Chen.

Ling Chen raised his left wrist, and pressed on the bracelet on his wrist. Afterwards, a sound came out from the bracelet...

“Skyfall Dynasty’s Skyfall bids 50 million gold for the Guild Creation Token!”

The bracelet played a recording of part of the auction that Ling Chen had recorded. It was the first time Skyfall had made a bid. Afterwards, Ling Chen lowered his wrist and said, “Imitate it for me.”

The black clothed man on the right slightly nodded, and without much preparation, talked with a voice that was completely different to the “Greetings, Master” that he had spoken previously, “Skyfall Dynasty’s Skyfall bids 50 million gold for the Guild Creation Token!”

No matter if it was the sound quality, accent, tone, or even the subtle aura, everything was exactly the same as the original. The black clothed man on the left said in a low voice, “Rest assured, Master, Hidden Shadow’s vocal cords were modified by the Mad Scientist for 10 years. No matter if it’s human, beast, bird or insect, he can perfectly imitate any sort of voice.

“Imitate the voices of three people laughing loudly together.” Ling Chen said.

Again, without much preparation, a burst of laughter came out of the man’s mouth, “Hahaha, hahaha....”

He was evidently one person, yet what came out of his mouth was the laughter of three separate people mixed together. Ling Chen nodded his head, “Very good. In the next few days, start recording the voices. Finish it within five days. You all already know what to do when the time comes.”

“Yes... also, the Yan Huang Alliance has already contacted The Dark Night to find Peter Pan.”

Ling Chen was not surprised at all, and calmly asked, “Did they accept?”

“Yes.”

“What was the price?”

“One hundred million. Long Tian Yun also voluntarily added on 50 million for The Dark Night to bring Peter Pan to them within five days.”

“Haha, 150 million, what a cheap price, heh. Hahahaha.”

Laughing loudly, Ling Chen turned around and slowly walked away. The two men clothed in black lowered their heads, in a show of deference.

North of the Azure Dragon City, in the Residential Areas-the building belonging to Heart's Dream.

Yun Feng paced around inside, unable to it still. Apart from Shui Ruo and Mu Bing Yao, none of the three other girls could keep calm either. Ling Chen's actions today had been too arrogant, to the point that it had been incomprehensible. They were all waiting anxiously for Ling Chen to give them an explanation. However, Ling Chen had blocked off all communication, so they could only wait.

Finally, the door opened and Ling Chen walked in. Seeing that all the girls were present, as well as an extra Yun Feng, he was just about to start talking when Yun Feng rushed up, "LING TIAN!! HAVE YOU GONE CRAZY!! Do you know what you did!! I know you can fight with Ev-I know that you have the power to defeat the Sword Emperor, but it's not just about the Sword Emperor, but the entire Yan Huang Alliance!!! It's fine to fight with the Sword Emperor, but why did you make such a bet! If you win tomorrow, and take away the Guild Creation Token, Long Tian Yun will remember you forever!! He might even send people to track you down and kill you, and even the entire Heart's Dream might get caught up in it!"

Ling Chen quickly retreated a few steps, and dodged most of the spittle flying out from Yun Feng's mouth. He wagged his finger, and calmly replied, "Alright, alright, calm down. I know what I'm doing so don't worry too much about it. Meng Xin, this is for you."

He walked in front of Meng Xin, and looked into her confused eyes. He initiated an invitation to trade... afterwards, Yun Meng

Xin’s expression stiffened as he gave her a whole 900 million gold.

That’s right, 900 million!

“This is 900 million gold, the rest I’m keeping as expenses for Shui Ruo and myself.” Ling Chen smilingly said. He did not hesitate at all when giving this 900 million to Meng Xin, as if it was something very casual.

“Nine… Nine hundred million!?” Hearing Ling Chen’s words, Yun Feng, Xiao Qi and Su’Er’s jaws all dropped to the ground.

Yun Meng Xin looked at Ling Chen with a very confused expression. The money she received confirmed something without a doubt, “So that Guild Creation Token… was consigned by you.”

Deathly silence filled the room… afterwards, Yun Feng leapt up as if someone had kicked him hard.

“W-w-w-w-what… what!! The one who consigned the Guild Creation Token, w-w-w-w-was… was you!?!?!?”

Chapter 194 - Impossible To Know The Future

Yun Meng Xin's words caused Yun Feng to almost faint on the spot. Consigning the Guild Creation Token... this was not the most important point. Even retards would know that the person who had consigned the Guild Creation Token was the same person who had created the guild to humiliate Long Tian Yun!

"En, it was me." Ling Chen very casually replied.

This reply caused Yun Feng's mind to spin even more. His face twitched, and he stuttered as he asked, "Then, the person who created the guild, and humiliated Long Tian Yun..."

"En, it was me who got someone to do that." Ling Chen nodded.

"Holy... fuck..."

Yun Feng's eyes widened to their limits. This was something that everyone knew about now-everyone was discussing who would have the power and guts to obtain two Guild Creation Tokens and humiliate Long Tian Yun. He had thought of many possibilities, but he had never thought that it would be Ling Chen. This was because as far as he knew, Ling Chen had never even met Long Tian Yun before. Moreover, because of his sister Shui Ruo, he wanted to protect his privacy, much less have the Long family go after them.

However, right now, Ling Chen had openly and casually acknowledged that it was him who had done such a thing. The 900 million gold coins that Ling Chen had just given to Meng Xin was solid evidence of this... otherwise, where could he have received such an amount of money!

"Big brother Ling Tian, it was really you? Wah~~~~ I absolutely worship you!! So cool!" Xiao Qi's reaction was completely different to Yun Feng's. She yelled out with her mouth wide open, her hands holding her face, her eyes sparkling as she gazed at Ling Chen. By her side, Su'Er also emphatically nodded, her face full of admiration. Because of Yun Meng Xin, they all hated Long Tian Yun. However, the person in front of them was definitely the very first person to do such a thing to Long Tian Yun!

"Worship my ass!!" Yun Feng howled, and charged towards him, "Ling Tian! Y-y-you... alright, I acknowledge that being able to obtain two Guild Creation Tokens, you have the right to be arrogant. However, you definitely shouldn't have done such a thing! I thought you were a logical and rational person, why... why would you do such a crazy, incomprehensible thing!!"

"En? Incomprehensible? What's incomprehensible about it?" Ling Chen laughed, and sat next to Shui Ruo.

Once again, Yun Feng rushed towards him, and shouted, "What isn't incomprehensible about it? Don't you know that right now, every player in China is talking about this, and the entire Yan Huang Alliance is investigating this? Don't you understand what sort of person Long Tian Yun is, or how powerful the Yan Huang Alliance is!? Although externally, Long Tian Yun seems like a

peaceful and kind person, but if he finds out that it was you, not only will you be in danger, but also the people around you! This isn't some kind of joke! And also, I just received news that Long Tian Yun has already contacted The Dark Night... THE DARK NIGHT!! He wants them to find that person within five days, and The Dark Night accepted his request! The Dark Night has never failed a mission before!"

"Ah!? The Dark Night?" Xiao Qi and Su'Er simultaneously let out a cry of surprise. This was a terrifying name. All of China's largest and most influential guilds had millions of players. However, The Dark Night only had thousands of people, and yet was acknowledged to be one of the three most powerful guilds in China. Even the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty did not dare to offend The Dark Night. This was because they were the sovereigns of the light, whereas The Dark Night were the death gods of the darkness. Although they don't have much strength in large scale battles, anyone they wanted dead, would die.

"Big brother, calm down. Ling Tian isn't someone who does irrational things. He definitely has his own reasons. Plus, he hasn't been hiding anything from us. I'm sure he'll explain his reasons to us." Yun Meng Xin said in a soft voice as she walked over. Although she couldn't see Ling Chen's facial expressions, but from his body language, she could tell he was quite calm.

"En! I'm sure big brother has a reason for doing so." Shui Ruo stood beside Ling Chen, and said in a firm voice. She completely trusted Ling Chen.

"But, did The Dark Night really accept the request?" Xiao Qi's

heart was full of worries. “Won’t big brother Ling Tian be in a lot of danger? The Dark Night’s so powerful. If they find out who was behind that event, the entire Yan Huang Alliance will definitely try to kill big brother Ling Tian... what should we do... what should we do... big sister Bing Yao, you’re really strong, you must have a solution, right?”

Mu Bing Yao: “……”

Ling Chen helplessly shrugged, and slightly leaned back, “You can all rest assured. Although I was the one behind it all, Long Tian Yun definitely won’t suspect me... oh, well, even if he does suspect me, all suspicion of me will be cleared in at most five days.”

Only Mu Bing Yao could understand what he was talking about.

“The hell! Why are you so confident? We’re talking about the Yan Huang Alliance here!! Don’t look down on the investigation abilities of the Yan Huang Alliance... as well as The Dark Night!” Yun Feng said as he gritted his teeth.

“You need to believe in my anti-investigation abilities. Since I dared to do this, naturally, I will not allow myself or anyone around me to suffer. To be honest, I recommend that Long Tian Yun just cut his losses. If he continues investigating, it’ll just be a waste of time and money. Who knows, if he continues to investigate, some trouble might befall him.” Ling Chen gave a cold laugh.

“Big brother, let’s just stop talking about this. Looking at Ling Tian, I’m sure he has some sort of a plan, otherwise he wouldn’t do such a thing.” Yun Meng Xin once again said. Then, she raised her head and looked at Ling Chen, “Ling Tian, did you do this... for me?”

Yun Feng also immediately raised his head... this was also something that he was curious about. What was the reason behind him doing such a thing? Evidently, he did not even personally know Long Tian Yun, so why would he humiliate him in such a way?

“I guess that’s a small part of the reason. It was mostly for myself.” Ling Chen calmly said.

“For yourself?” The people present were all shocked. Even Shui Ruo looked at Ling Chen in shock, with her lips slightly parted. Yun Feng replied, “But you hadn’t even met Long Tian Yun before today, right?”

Ling Chen stood up, and took a light breath, “All I can say is that there is indeed enmity between Long Tian Yun and myself. In fact, it’s quite a deep enmity. Please do not ask me any more than this. This is something personal, so I don’t want to involve anyone else. You can all rest assured that Long Tian Yun won’t be able to find out that it was me, neither will Heart’s Dream be affected.”

This was the first time that any of them had heard about the enmity between Ling Tian and Long Tian Yun. Although their hearts were filled with many questions, they did not continue to ask him about it. Not even Yun Feng knew about Ling Tian’s true

background. What sort of enmity did he have with Long Tian Yun, the heir to the most powerful political family in China? Moreover, it seemed to an incomparably deep enmity for Ling Tian to use such methods to humiliate Long Tian Yun. However, today, at the Auction Hall, it seemed as if Long Tian Yun had only met Ling Tian for the first time. Otherwise, with Long Tian Yun's intelligence and perception, he would have been able to recognise Ling Tian straight away, despite him wearing a mask.

"Since that's your wish, we won't ask any further." Yun Feng gradually calmed down. He had met Ling Tian three years ago, and then coincidentally met him again and made the deal with him. Apart from this, he knew nothing about Ling Tian. He had secretly investigated Ling Tian's background, but apart from the period when he lived with his adoptive father and mother, he couldn't find anything else. However, he knew that ever since he had lived with his adoptive father and mother, he had always resided in Zhong Zhou, and would not have any chance to even meet Long Tian Yun. Before that, Ling Tian had only been ten or so... what sort of enmity could he have with Long Tian Yun? Could they be relatives? Yun Feng shook his head-that was just silly. He looked at Ling Chen and said, "Seeing as you're willing to tell us all this, it shows how much you trust us. From this, I can tell you at least see us as friends. Don't worry, I definitely won't leak any of this information, neither will anyone else here... right, and apart from this, I guess I can understand why you challenged the Sword Emperor in front of Long Tian Yun today, as well as made his stakes the Guild Creation Token... but, appearing right then, and making a bet with the Guild Creation Token as the stakes, wouldn't Long Tian Yun suspect you?"

"No, it's actually the opposite. Because I did that, he'll suspect me even less." Ling Chen said as he laughed.

Yun Feng knocked on his head, let out a breath and said, “Ah, forget it. You’re so powerful, so I’m probably just worrying too much. In that case, I’ll listen to Meng Xin and stop talking about this. We’re all looking forwards to your performance tomorrow. I’m sure that the moment you defeat the Sword Emperor, the whole world will know your name. Oh, and that’s right…”

Yun Feng suddenly thought of something, and took an item out of his bag, “This is the Jadeite Jade that you told me to buy. It doesn’t look like it has much of a use though.”

“It’s very important to me.” Ling Chen took it, and put it away. With this jade, he felt a lot more confident about going back to the Forest of Bones… in that case, he might as well go in the afternoon.

Yun Meng Xin walked over and stood in front of Ling Chen with a complicated look in her eyes, “I trust that we won’t have to worry about today’s events, but… this 900 million gold, I really can’t accept it. You’ve already given us so much help. I simply can’t accept so much money.”

“Haha.” Ling Chen gave a loud laugh. He didn’t face Yun Meng Xin, but instead held Shui Ruo’s hand as he walked out, “This is my first contribution of operating funds; there’ll be more in future, so just accept it. You don’t have to feel like you owe me anything, because even if all of the riches in the world were added together, they still couldn’t be compared to my little sister’s life.”

“My little sister’s life”…. Seeing Ling Chen depart, Yun Meng Xin

silently stood there. Did Ling Chen join Heart's Dream... because of Ruo Ruo?

"Ah! Big brother Ling Tian, where are you going?"

"To the amusement park!"

"We also want to go!!" Xiao Qi grabbed Su'Er, and chased after them. Mu Bing Yao coldly arose, and also followed after them.

"Damn! I forgot to ask Ling Tian who that Peter Pan is!" Yun Feng facepalmed, and chased after them.

Yun Meng Xin stood there for a long time before giving a slight sigh, "It's simply impossible to know the future now. I thought that his fate had been changed because of me, but rather, my fate has been changed because of him. Ling Tian, what sort of person are you....."

Chapter 195 - Once again going to the Forest of Bones

The event at the Auction Hall shook the entire China, and for a whole day, that was the only topic players talked about. The focus was naturally on Long Tian Yun and Ling Tian.

Although Long Tian Yun had obtained the Guild Creation Token, the Yan Huang Alliance's name still had not appeared on the Guild Rankings. Now, even if Long Tian Yun was given 1 billion gold coins, he still wouldn't establish the Yan Huang Alliance. The sole guild on the Guild Rankings was like a thorn in Long Tian Yun's heart. No matter what he did, or wanted to do, he couldn't pull it out. Being at the top of the Guild Rankings, it served as a constant mockery of Long Tian Yun. He had bought a massive dose of humiliation in return for 1 billion gold.

As for the battle between Ling Tian and the Sword Emperor, it was quite shocking that all players were of one opinion... that Ling Tian was much too arrogant and presumptuous. The overconfident Ling Tian would definitely receive what was due for him tomorrow.

This was the most chaotic day for the Yan Huang Alliance since it had been unofficially established in the Mystic Moon world. The entire Alliance was furiously searching for "Peter Pan". Of course, they definitely wouldn't be able to communicate with Peter Pan, but his "Reject All Communication" status showed that he had been logged on for the entire time.
As for the one who caused all of this chaos, he was taking a stroll with his little sister.

The speed at which Shui Ruo recovered was extremely astonishing. She seemed noticeably better every day. Even after they walked for an hour, she did not say she was tired at all. Right now, she was almost as healthy as a normal person. After suffering from the disease for three years, the rate at which she recovered was incomprehensible. Back then, the doctor had said that because of the 13223 drug, not only would she quickly recover, but also would pretty much never get sick again. Right now, they could see that this was quite true.

The authorities in the medicine world had predicted that within 10 years, the Isrock Disease would be completely eradicated. This represented boundless hope!

“Big brother, do you really have deep enmity with that Long Tian Yun? I’ve never heard big brother mention it before.” As they walked hand in hand, Shui Ruo was pressed closely to Ling Chen as she walked in step with him. All those years, to be able to walk like this with him was her greatest desire. And now, like a dream, her wish had been fulfilled. To be able to live healthily with Ling Chen, and not be a burden to him, every second was heaven to her.

“En. Although, that’s all in the distant past.” Ling Chen spoke with a slight smile as he continued to look forwards. He had never told Shui Ruo about the things that had happened before they had met. This was because he didn’t want to tell the pure, angelic Shui Ruo about the dark things of his past. He casually said, “Before I met Shui Ruo, I didn’t have a home, because my home was destroyed by him.”

“Ah?” Shui Ruo cried out in surprised as she looked at him.

“Haha!” Ling Chen laughed, and squeezed her little hand, “I said it’s all in the distant past. Plus, I should be thanking him-if it wasn’t for him, I would never have met my Ruo Ruo. Although I lost my home because of him, but I gained an even warmer and more loving home, because in this home, is Ruo Ruo, who will never leave me.”

“En!” Shui Ruo’s worry quickly became a cheerful smile. She stopped walking, and hugged Ling Chen from the front, “Big brother, no matter what happens, I will never, ever leave you.”

In the three years that Shui Ruo had suffered from the Isrock Disease, Ling Chen had put down everything, including the hatred he held in his heart. However, with Shui Ruo’s recovery, as well as hearing about Long Tian Yun once again, the dormant hatred within him once again rose up… before, he was by himself, and did not have anything to consider. However now, he had something to think about, to take into consideration, which was Shui Ruo.

“Let’s go and do some shopping. We’ve earnt so much money today, so we should go buy some pretty clothes for Ruo Ruo.”

“I want to buy heaps of pretty clothes for big brother to look at me in!”

“Ha, to be honest, no matter what Ruo Ruo wears, she always looks perfect.”

“Hehe, that’s for sure!”

After having an afternoon of fun, they returned home as it grew dark. Evidently, Ling Chen did not seem worried about the battle the next day at all. For dinner, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo cooked together. When eating, they would especially eat the dishes the other person made, and when their chopsticks touched together, they would look at each other, and start laughing.

At night, within the Mystic Moon world.

Because this time he couldn’t be directly transported there, Ling Chen only arrived at the Forest of Bones near midnight. By now, there was not a single player around. After the Forest of Bones quest had been closed, people were no longer interested in the Forest of Bones. After all, the monsters there all had ridiculously high Defence, and did not drop any money, and very rarely dropped any equipment.

Having come to the Forest of Bones before, Ling Chen was not as overly cautious as he had been the first time. He called out his newly bought Cloud Stepping Mare, and mounted it... with more than 100 million gold, spending 20,000 gold coins to buy a Cloud Stepping Mare was not that big of a deal anymore.

Slotting the Jadeite Jade into the Lunar Scourge, Ling Chen was no longer afraid of the Movement Speed debuff that the semi-spirit girl cast. As for the Warring Palace Skeleton and its extremely high Defence, none of that mattered to Ling Chen anymore-after all,

even if its Defence was ten times greater, it would still be like clouds before the Cancer Orb.

“Little master, do you really hate that person called Long Tian Yun?” Just as Ling Chen was about to advance, Qi Yue’s voice appeared in his mind.

Ling Chen: “……”

“Before, when you were speaking with him, I could sense the change in your heartbeat. It was the first time I sensed such a strong reaction within little master.” Qi Yue softly laughed, “Plus, little master’s actions today revealed to me little master’s vicious side.”

Qi Yue knew all about what Ling Chen had done. Stealing Long Tian Yun’s 1 billion gold coins, humiliating him in front of the whole world, destroying the Yan Huang Alliance’s dream of becoming the first official guild, and to top it off, Long Tian Yun didn’t even know who was behind it all. This was indeed worse than even physically torturing and killing Long Tian Yun. Qi Yue was always with him, and it was the first time she had seen him do such a thing.
“Vicious? Haha, hahahaha…” Ling Chen began to laugh out loud, “You say I’m vicious? No, you’re wrong, what I did to him could even be said to be too kind. It’s a pity that right now I don’t have enough power to go against the Yan Huang Alliance or the Long family, so I can only use these kind little methods.”

He entered the Forest of Bones on the Cloud Stepping Mare, and with Xiao Hui taking the lead, headed directly to the heart of the

forest.

Ling Chen's derisive laugh caused Qi Yue to quieten down. After a long time, she asked, "It seems that little master hates Long Tian Yun to the bones, can you tell me why this is? Perhaps I can help you."

"I don't need anyone to interfere with my affairs, and you won't be able to help me anyways. As for what happened between me and him..." Ling Chen stopped speaking momentarily, then continued, "When I was very young, we lived in the same place. He was the honourable son of the Long family, whereas I was just a poor servant who was often bullied. Afterwards, I mysteriously contracted a deadly disease, and was ostracised by everyone. Finally, to prevent me from infecting anyone else, I was taken to a place 100 kilometres away, and buried alive."

Qi Yue: "!!!!!!"

"It's a pity that the heavens didn't let me die that day. Instead, I was taken to a place, 'Heaven', that was even scarier than death itself... haha, perhaps it should be called Hell. I didn't want to die; I wanted revenge. As such, I managed to survive, and after I escaped from there, I returned to the place I was born."

Speaking to there, Ling Chen stopped talking, and manoeuvred the Cloud Stepping Mare to avoid some obstacles, and then advanced at full speed.

Ling Chen had said very little, but how complicated the events

actually were, as well as how much he truly hated Long Tian Yun, only he himself knew.

After a long period of silence, Qi Yue started to speak again, “From the beginning, I always wondered why the Lunar Scourge was not able to take away your consciousness, as well as why you were able to accept this item of utmost hatred so easily. Moreover, even after knowing the consequences of the Moon God Clan finding out that you had the Lunar Scourge and its exclusive Orbs, you still accepted it, and even actively went to find them. So it seems that you want to rely on the Lunar Scourge’s power.”

“That’s right,” Ling Chen said, “You said that if I can find all of the exclusive Orbs of the Lunar Scourge, I can even challenge gods. At that time, it should be no problem to singlehandedly destroy a large guild or alliance.”

“So it was like that. I thought that little master was doing it for me…”

“And you, haven’t you been using me this entire time?” Ling Chen asked expressionlessly.

Qi Yue: “……”

“Tao Tie said that you’re someone with a high status and great intelligence. Would this sort of person call someone without any status or power ‘little master’? After spending this period of time together, you know pretty much everything about me, whereas I know practically nothing about you. Every time I ask you

something about yourself, you always try to change the topic. Aren't you just using me for your own purposes?"

"Hehe, little master doesn't have to be so serious," Qi Yue gave a soft laugh, "You conquered the Lunar Scourge and became the master of the Lunar Scourge, so of course you're my master as well. And me using you... that's not entirely false. After all, if little master can find all of the exclusive orbs and recover the Lunar Scourge's original power, I can finally have a complete body."

Was it really like that? Ling Chen didn't know for sure, but his instincts told him that it definitely wasn't as simple as that.

"I will do my best to recover the Lunar Scourge's power as quickly as possible. Although I don't know your aim, but I need the Lunar Scourge's power. Although this power is virtual, but I can use it to do many things in this virtual world."

Soon, Ling Chen had crossed half of the First District of the Forest of Bones. Perhaps it was because the Warring Palace Skeleton had fallen to Celestial grade, but there were significantly less skeletons in the Forest of Bones. Occasionally a few would appear, but it was incredibly easy for Ling Chen to outrun them.

"Virtual power..." Qi Yue gave a mysterious smile.

One hour later.

Upon reaching the final District, the Skeleton Army did not

appear again. Without facing any resistance, Ling Chen entered the heart of the forest. The Eerie Castle had long been destroyed, and in the distance, he saw a gigantic skeleton.

It was the Warring Palace Skeleton.

“Good!!”

Holding both weapons in his hands, Ling Chen slowed down his pace, and drew nearer and nearer towards the enormous skeleton.

Xi Ling, I will avenge you!

Chapter 196 - Slaying The Giant Skeleton (1)

The Warring Palace Skeleton was sitting at the same place that Ling Chen had seen it. Back then, Ling Chen only saw it after he was very close to it. However, now that there was no Eerie Castle blocking the light, Ling Chen could see the gigantic skeleton from over a hundred metres away. Ling Chen took a deep breath, spurred on his Cloud Stepping Mare, and yelled, “Charge!!!”

The first time he had come here, he had been very cautious and tentative. This time, he charged at full speed!

If Xi Ling was here, it would only take her three ‘Red Lasers’ to destroy it. However, Xi Ling could not even come out, much less battle. Despite this, it would still be no problem for Ling Chen to kill it.

As he charged, the distance between them shrank. In just a few seconds, he had entered the boundary of the Eerie Castle. He remembered that back then, the Warring Palace Skeleton had only woken up because they had attacked the semi-spirit girl. That meant that as long as Ling Chen didn’t attack the Warring Palace Skeleton, it would not take the initiative to attack him first. As such, he approached without any caution.

“Soul Sacrifice!!”

“Battle Soul Possession!!”

Ling Chen had no way to resist the semi-spirit girl’s ability to

lock his skills, so he activated his two strongest skills before coming close. When he was about 10 metres away from the Warring Palace Skeleton, he jumped off the Cloud Stepping Mare, and simultaneously called it back. He released a Ling Tian Burst with his left hand, and a Four Corners Star Formation with his right hand towards the Warring Palace Skeleton. From the beginning, he began to use his strongest attacks. If he didn't use them now, he might not have a chance later on when the semi-spirit girl began to use her skills. Moreover, against this LV20 Celestial boss, having 1 HP or max HP was the same-one hit from the Warring Palace Skeleton was enough to immediately kill him.

"Ahhh!!!"

31046、-29568 !

Bang!! Bam!!

-31,046, -29,568 !

A purple damage figure and a blue damage figure appeared above the enormous skeleton. The purple damage figure signified a critical hit and pierce, whereas the blue signified a pierce... these two attacks had not been affected by the Warring Palace Skeleton's Defence at all! Having the Cancer Orb, all of Ling Chen's attacks in future would either be blue or purple, and never be simply red or yellow. His attacks would always at least have pierce, and occasionally have critical hits.

Rumble...

Having taken two attacks, the dormant Warring Palace Skeleton was awoken, and the ground trembled as it stood up. The gigantic skeletal sword also appeared in its hand. At the same time, a deep voice sounded out.

“Who, has once again disturbed my sleep…”

“Shut the hell up.”

The first time he had heard this voice, it had made him feel quite apprehensive. This giant skeleton’s voice released an oppressive and dominating force. However, the skeleton just seemed like a massive idiot to him now. Standing up took a whole three seconds, and shouting out took another five seconds. In this period of time, Ling Chen attacked it again and again.

-7,766, -7,761

-7,729, -15,501

-7,750, -15,542

Under the effects of Soul Sacrifice, Ling Chen’s attack power was simply monstrous. Before, with the Battle Soul Possession, his two attacks had cleared off more than 60,000 of the warring Palace Skeleton’s HP. Now, after three rounds of double Ling Tian Bursts, the Warring Palace Skeleton’s 250,000 HP had fallen to less than half, and a faint grey light arose from its body.

At this moment, Ling Chen stopped attacking, and quickly retreated to 30 metres away. When he looked back at the Warring Palace Skeleton, it had already entered its battle mode. On its right hand, Ling Chen saw the semi-spirit girl with her jet black eyes and black dress.

The girl was still holding her extremely old rabbit doll. Ling Chen's opponent wasn't just the Warring Palace Skeleton, but also this girl as well, who was his biggest obstacle to defeating the gigantic skeleton.

The Warring Palace Skeleton's key strengths were in its Attack Power and Defence. Its Defence was especially high, to the point that it made people want to despair. With Ling Chen's base Attack Power, without Soul Sacrifice or the Cancer Orb, he definitely would not be able to break through it. However, its Movement Speed was incredibly low, and every time after it attacked it would pause for quite a few seconds before it attacked again. It also didn't have a very big variety of attacks-apart from its ultimate skill that it could only use once per day, its only other skill that could cause damage was the Earth Splitting Slash.

Without its massive Defence, to Ling Chen, this Celestial boss was not much of a challenge anymore. The only things stopping him from easily killing it was its Baleful Shield and the semi-spirit girl.

Having its HP reduced to 50%, the Warring Palace Skeleton's Baleful Shield, which reflected 10% of physical damage automatically activated. Ling Chen, in his condition with Soul

Sacrifice activated, definitely couldn't afford to attack it, otherwise the reflection of his own damage would instantly kill him. He once again called out the Cloud Stepping Mare, and quickly retreated. Behind him, the Warring Palace Skeleton also began to move, and just one step closed in the distance between them by one third.

"Even... if ... I ... die... I ... will ... not ... let ... you ... hurt ... the ... one ... I ... am ... protecting ..."

Although it had gone down to Celestial grade, the Warring Palace Skeleton's voice was still ear splitting. While Ling Chen calculated his timing, he looked back at the Warring Palace Skeleton. The giant skeleton's undying will came from its desire to protect something... was the thing it was protecting the bodiless semi-spirit girl?
Finally, the Soul Sacrifice's effects ended. Ling Chen immediately restored his HP with a potion, then turned around and charged at the Warring Palace Skeleton.

"Today you... will definitely die!!"

Because of Xi Ling, this was the first time he had harboured such hatred towards a monster. As he entered the Warring Palace Skeleton's attacking range, the Warring Palace Skeleton stopped walking, and raised its gigantic sword, then swung it down at Ling Chen.

Boom!!!

The ground had been split, and dust floated everywhere. It was

evident that if this attack had hit him, Ling Chen would undoubtedly be dead. However... its actions had been too obvious. Back when it had been Heaven's End grade, Ling Chen was able to predict where it would hit, but could not escape its terrifying AOE in time. However, the radius of the Celestial grade Warring Palace Skeleton's Earth Splitting Slash had been significantly reduced. While on the Cloud Stepping Mare, Ling Chen's maximum Movement Speed was 206, which made it incredibly easy to dodge!

Within the earthshattering sounds, Ling Chen easily escaped from the Warring Palace Skeleton's AOE, and rushed to its feet, simultaneously sending out two Ling Tian Bursts.

-1940, -3878

-194, -388.

Two Ling Tian Bursts took away about 5,000 of the Warring Palace Skeleton's HP, but his own HP had also fallen by about half. At the same time, two rays of black light silently appeared and wrapped around his body.

"Ding... you have been restricted by the "Darkness Lock", your Attack Speed, Jumping Ability and Evasion have been lowered by 30% for 30 seconds, no effect on your Hit Rate or Movement Speed."

"Ding... you have been restricted by the "Underworld Lock", you cannot use any active skills for 30 seconds."

Ling Chen raised his head. Hovering twenty metres above the ground, the girl in black's two hands were glowing with a dark light.

The Jadeite Jade proved its worth, as the Darkness Lock did not reduce his Movement Speed. As for the reduction to his Attack Speed, Evasion and Jumping Ability, he didn't mind too much. Not being able to use skills temporarily also was not a big deal. Before the Warring Palace Skeleton could attack again, he used his normal attacks to hit it.

-924, -930.

-92, -93.

After attacking four times and suffering the recoil four times, Ling Chen's HP had dropped to a dangerous state. He temporarily stopped attacking, and prepared to use a potion to recover his lost HP. Suddenly, his sense of danger alerted him of something above him. By the time he looked up, a Darkness Spike was only half a metre away from him. Before, the first time he had been attacked by this Darkness Spike, his Movement Speed had been reduced. Moreover, it was so unexpected that he did not have time to defend himself. However, this time, he definitely would not be hit so easily by it.

Without much thought, Ling Chen twisted his body and quickly dismounted from the Cloud Stepping Mare, narrowly avoiding the Darkness Spike descending from above. The Darkness Spike instead landed on the Cloud Stepping Mare, nearly instantly killing it. Ling Chen landed on the ground, and slightly frowned.

After quickly pondering for half a second, he recalled the Cloud Stepping Mare. To him, the Darkness Spike was an incredibly fearsome skill-because it was completely silent, and undetectable through any senses other than sight, Ling Chen was only able to detect it through his danger sense which had been developed after many life-and-death battles. After receiving so much damage from the Baleful Shield, he knew that if he was hit by the Darkness Spike, he would definitely die. As such, he unhesitatingly abandoned his mount... although sitting on his mount increased his Movement Speed, but it also reduced his own agility. Even without the Cloud Stepping Mare, he could effectively avoid the Warring Palace Skeleton's attacks.

The best method for avoiding the Darkness Spike was to quickly dodge once the spike had been shot out. Because the Darkness Spike flew at a set trajectory, as opposed to being locked onto its target, it would be easy to dodge it once it had begun moving.

As such, after Ling Chen recovered his HP, he took a deep breath, and used his fastest speed to run towards the Warring Palace Skeleton's body.

Chapter 197 - Slaying the Giant Skeleton (2)

Under the threat of the Darkness Spike, Ling Chen ran at his full speed. However, he did not run in a straight line, nor did his running have any predictable trajectory or rhythm. While running, his weapons struck the Warring Palace Skeleton's foot, but he did not slow down at all.

Because of how enormous the Warring Palace Skeleton was, as well as how small Ling Chen was comparatively, the Warring Palace Skeleton took a long time to lock onto Ling Chen's position every time it went to attack him. Thus, the frequency of its attacks was not very high. The moment the Warring Palace Skeleton began to raise its sword again, Ling Chen stopped attacking, and distanced himself from it, and waited for its next attack.

Boom!

Another Earth Splitting Slash landed, and Ling Chen easily evaded it again. Like a bolt of lightning, he once again charged to its feet, and circled around them while attacking, causing the semi-spirit girl's Darkness Spikes to miss. Ling Chen was right about the Darkness Spikes-although they were very difficult to detect, they required a period of time to form, and could only fly forwards in a single trajectory.

-924, -930, -1862, -921……

The Warring Palace Skeleton's HP fell yet again, and after attacking six times, Ling Chen distanced himself from it again. He

did not dare to be greedy and attack it more times than was prudent-after all, a single mistake could result in him dying. If everything went well, it would only take another 20 rounds of this strategy to kill the skeleton!

"Fall... with ... me ... into ... a ... bleak ... hell ..."

Boom!!

Boom!!

Boom!!

.....

The Warring Palace Skeleton's booming voice once again sounded out, but was not able to distract Ling Chen in the slightest. Right now, he had fully immersed himself in the battle-his spirit and mind were completely concentrated, and he consistently dodged the Warring Palace Skeleton and the semi-spirit girl's attacks. In the gap of a few seconds between the Warring Palace Skeleton's attacks, he once again unleashed a round of 6 attacks. From the beginning, he had not been hit even once, and all of the damage he had taken was only from the reflection of damage.

Back then, the Giant Greedy Toad had not been able to hit him even once throughout the course of their 9-hour battle. Although this skeleton was physically massive, it definitely wouldn't be able

to hit him either. Ling Chen hit it again and again with his normal attacks, occasionally using potions to replenish his HP. With his absolute hit and absolute pierce, as well as occasional critical hits, even normal attacks did an incredible amount of damage. After 10 rounds of 6 attacks, the Warring Palace Skeleton's HP had been depleted to only 50,000 or so.

Good, let's continue like this...

Although every single one of its attacks had missed, the Warring Palace Skeleton continued to take time to lock onto Ling Chen's position. After all, it only had a bit of its will, not intelligence or battle sense, left. After the tenth time Ling Chen retreated from it, it did not raise its sword, but instead raised its right food then stomped down.

Ling Chen couldn't help but laugh. He focused on the skeleton's right foot, and the instant it hit the ground, he jumped.

Boom!!

This was the Warring Palace Skeleton's Earth Shaking Stomp. If he was hit by tremors, he would be stunned, which would definitely result in him being hit afterwards. However, although Ling Chen wasn't able to escape outside the massive AOE of the Earth Shaking Stomp, the information that Xiao Hui had transmitted to him told him that it only affected enemies on the ground... as such, if he could grasp the timing, he would be able to avoid the tremors.

As a massive boom sounded out, the ground shook violently. Under the semi-spirit girl's Darkness Lock, his jumping ability had been reduced, but it was still enough to avoid the tremors. After jumping in the air for about one second, he landed on the ground. Some residual tremors caused his body to sway, but he did not become stunned. Ling Chen grinned, and charged up, his Soaring Cloud and Zephyr Blade relentlessly striking the Warring Palace Skeleton's foot.

-930, -1862, -921, -1858, -923, -929。

The Earth Splitting Slash posed no danger to him, and the Earth Shaking Stomp was easily avoidable. As long as he was able to dodge the Darkness Spikes, he would have no problems defeating this giant skeleton.

Yet another round of attacks wiped out another 7,000HP, after which Ling Chen retreated and replenished his HP, waiting for the skeleton's next attack. As he carried out these attacks again and again, the Warring Palace Skeleton's continuously decreased, from 20% to 15% to 10%.

15650/250000！！

-1848, -925, -919, 926……

The Darkness Lock that had been 'restricting' Ling Chen expired, but this change went unnoticed by Ling Chen. After yet another round of attacks, the Warring Palace Skeleton's HP fell to below 20,000.

15650/250000！！

Ling Chen slightly gritted his teeth. In just two to three rounds of attacks, he would be able to finish off this skeleton.

At this moment, a cry of fury sounded out from the Warring Palace Skeleton. It stopped moving, and raised its huge sword high above its head. A mass of grey light appeared over its body.

Ling Chen stopped retreating... when its HP fell to 10% or below, the giant skeleton would release its ultimate skill-Thundering Heavens and Shaking Earth.

However, facing its final, and strongest, skill, Ling Chen began to laugh. Not only did he stop retreating, but instead ran towards it. If it was the Heaven's End grade Warring Palace Skeleton using this skill, Ling Chen definitely would not have done such a thing. However, after becoming Celestial grade, this skill became pretty much useless... not because of its attack power, but because it had to charge up for 10 seconds.

With its current HP, 10 seconds was entirely enough to finish it off.

However, just when Ling Chen had reached the Warring Palace Skeleton's feet, and was about to attack, he sensed something, and looked up. The semi-spirit girl had floated down from the Warring Palace Skeleton's hand, and was only 5 metres away.

This girl, who didn't have a physical body, did not fear physical attacks. He became alert as the girl drifted closer to him, and watched her actions closely as he furrowed his brows. At this moment, the girl's eyes suddenly shone with a dark glow. Ling Chen's eyes were forcefully compelled by some unknown force to look at her in the eyes... at the same time, information from Xiao Hui was transmitted to him.

> [Eternal Eyes of Darkness]: Forbidden spirit skill, uses one's own Darkness energy to bind the target's soul. Once successful, the target's soul will be temporarily frozen, and will enter into a "soulless" state. The "soulless" state will persist for (10+x) seconds (x = own level – target's level; negative numbers will be counted as 0). If unsuccessful, the user will instead suffer from the effects. The rate of success is dependent on the strength of the user's and target's spirit respectively.

An icy feeling spread throughout Ling Chen's body causing his entire body to feel slightly numb. At the same time, a gust of wind seemed to be dragging something out of his body. This sort of terrifying feeling went on for about one second, when Ling Chen let out a low shout and tore his gaze away from the girl's eyes.

The young girl's body went stiff, and the dark glow in her eyes dissipated. She stood in the air, as if frozen.

She never expected that not only did this forbidden skill not work on this human, but after only 1 second, it was reflected back

at her, causing her to lose her consciousness.

The icy feeling disappeared from his body, and immediately, Ling Chen sprinted towards the Warring Palace Skeleton that was still charging up its ultimate attack.

-930, -925, -1848, -925, -919, 926, -1850……

-93, -93, -185, -93, -92, 93, -185……

The Warring Palace Skeleton and Ling Chen's HP simultaneously fell. However, after a few seconds, Ling Chen's HP was recovered, whereas the Warring Palace Skeleton's HP continued to fall to 10,000, then 5,000, then 3,000… that semi-spirit girl continued to hover there in the air, as if frozen by ice.

"Even the Lunar Scourge was unable to take over his consciousness, and was conquered by him; yet a semi-spirit actually tried to attack his spirit?" Qi Yue mockingly muttered. The Eyes of Eternal Darkness was a fearsome Darkness skill, which could not be used by many. This skill told Qi Yue that the semi-spirit girl's background was definitely not ordinary… but she had chosen the wrong person to use it on, and she had been the one to suffer the consequences.

-1848, -925, -919, 926……

"You can go die now!"

Seeing that the Warring Palace Skeleton had almost finished charging its ultimate attack, Ling Chen yelled out in a cold voice, and stabbed the Soaring Cloud into its foot.

-930.

With that final stab, the Warring Palace Skeleton's final shred of HP had been extinguished, and the grey light of its ultimate skill that had almost finished charging disappeared.

"Even... if ... I ... die ... I ... will ... not ... let ..... you..... hurt ....."

The skeleton's deep, booming voice was cut off, and its gigantic body fell to the ground with a crash.

"Ding... you have killed the LV20 Celestial grade boss 'Undying Will – Warring Palace Skeleton', you received Fame+2,000, SP+2,000."

Chapter 198 - Leng'Er (1)

Back when Xi Ling had used the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns to annihilate the Heaven's End grade Warring Palace Skeleton, there was no system announcement, and the Warring Palace Skeleton stood up again afterwards. However, this time, a clear system announcement sounded out, signifying that the Warring Palace Skeleton had fallen for the last time, and had truly died.

At the same time, the light from levelling up appeared on Ling Chen and Xiao Hui's bodies.

"Ding... you have levelled up to LV18...."

"Ding... your pet "Holy Spirit Beast" has levelled up to LV18."

The darkness aura, around the gigantic 30 metre or so long skeleton, began to dissipate, and Ling Chen could no longer feel the oppressive aura from its body. The Warring Palace Skeleton was now just a mass of gigantic bones, and would never rise again.

Cancer Orb and the Jadeite Jade-in just two days, he had found the two things that he needed the most, which allowed him to easily kill the gigantic skeleton even without Xi Ling's help. Ling Chen let out a long sigh, and closed his eyes, silently saying in his mind, "Xi Ling, I've taken revenge for you. Now, no matter how small the chances are, I will go to the south to find the Guardian Beast Vermillion Bird of the legends..."

When Celestial bosses died, they were bound to drop exquisite items, and Ling Chen was sure that the Warring Palace Skeleton was no exception. However, Ling Chen did not immediately go to the Warring Palace Skeleton's bones to look for items, but rather turned his gaze to the semi-spirit girl floating in the air.

The semi-spirit girl had recovered from the effects of the Eyes of Eternal Darkness, and the first thing she had seen was the fallen Warring Palace Skeleton. Her illusory body floated down to the gigantic skeleton, and landed on its chest. As she floated down, Ling Chen could clearly see tear drops rolling down from her cheeks.

"Don't... die..."

"Don't... die..."

Standing on the giant skeleton, the young girl cried and howled. Her pitiful wailing was enough to make anyone feel sorry for her.

Ling Chen gave a slight sigh and turned around. He did not know of this girl's background, and having only half a spirit, maybe she didn't even know either. Her mentality was somewhat similar to that of a 3-year-old child's, and she had stayed here with that giant skeleton day after day, year after year. All these years, the giant skeleton had been her only companion, her only support, and even her only family. Now, it had died, and the shock it caused to her was tremendous, despite the fact that she only had half a spirit. From now on, she would have to reside in solitariness in this Forest of Bones. The only thing that would accompany her would be the lifeless rabbit doll held in her arms.

The skeleton only had a last bit of its will, which was to protect the young girl at all costs... to them, Ling Chen was the vicious evildoer.

Ling Chen stood there in a daze for a while, listening to the young girl's cries. Finally, he shook his head, and looked away from the girl, and prepared to collect the items the Warring Palace Skeleton had dropped.

As soon as he moved, the crying semi-spirit girl reacted like a scared rabbit, and shot up into the air. She looked at him, her eyes filled with fear.

Ling Chen: "....."

This girl did not fear physical attacks, and Ling Chen did not have any magic attacks, so it was impossible for him to harm her. Her fear of him was completely unnecessary. However, it seemed that she did not know this. The skeleton that had just fallen was probably like a guardian or a father to her, so she probably harboured some fear and hatred towards Ling Chen.

Ling Chen decided not to look at her, and started looking around the skeleton for items. Suddenly, he saw the girl's body become semi-transparent, then opaque again.

This...

Very soon, Ling Chen found that what he had just saw was not an illusion. After a few seconds, the semi-spirit girl's body once again became semi-transparent, which allowed Ling Chen to even seen the scenery behind her. Ling Chen looked at her in shock-she would become semi-transparent every 2 seconds or so, and it seemed to become more frequent... then, at a certain point, would her body just disappear?

"After the giant skeleton died, her Soul Sacrifice Contract with it was terminated. The illusory body she created from the contract will also disappear soon... then, this girl will become a true semi-spirit, a wandering soul." Qi Yue slowly said, her voice tinted with a hint of sympathy. Compared to this poor girl, she was far better off.

Ling Chen: "....."

"Ai," Ling Chen sighed, "Back then, when I completed the quest, I shouldn't have come here."

Because of him, the semi-spirit girl had lost everything... however, many people had also lost their lives because of her. Moreover, even more people in future could have died because of her. Although he potentially saved many people, Ling Chen still felt guilty about what he had done to this girl.

Screw it, what's the point of thinking so much? Ling Chen stopped looking at her, and walked towards the Warring Palace Skeleton's body.

“… Little master, quickly leave!! Leave immediately!!”

Just as Ling Chen was about to pick up his first spoils of war, Qi Yue’s voice sounded out in his head. He did not hesitate, and immediately quickly ran away, while asking, “What’s wrong?”

Qi Yue replied, “The skeleton died, but the girl did not die. That means that the Soul Sacrifice Contract that the girl used on the skeleton was her first one. Because she can use it twice in her life, after the first contractee dies, the contract between them will vanish, and she is free to use it on another being… her illusory body is about to vanish, so she needs to find another being to use the contract on. The only being here that she can use the contract on is you!!”

Ling Chen: “!!”

If he was contracted by the Soul Sacrifice Contract, all damage taken by the girl would be transferred to him-this definitely wasn’t a good thing. If this happened, he would never be able to relax ever again. Although she was immune to physical attacks, there were many Magician profession players in the Mystic Moon world.

As such, Ling Chen’s speed increased to the max, and temporarily gave up on picking up the items from the Warring Palace Skeleton. After all, the items dropped from a Celestial boss would never disappear.

“Not good, it’s too late.” Qi Yue said in a despondent voice.

“What do you mean by ‘too late’?”

Just as Ling Chen finished speaking, a dark light shot down from the sky and landed on his head. At that moment, a strange and unique feeling passed through his heart, which then immediately disappeared. A system announcement then rang out, almost causing Ling Chen to jump in shock.

“Ding… you have been forced to undertake a ‘Soul Sacrifice Contract’ by ‘????’, all of the damage taken by ‘????’ will be transferred to you, until you die.”

“Ding… because of your status as a player, the Soul Sacrifice Contract between you and ‘????’ has recognised ‘????’ as your humanoid pet. All of her damage will be transferred to you, and her level will always be equivalent yours. None of your EXP will be split with her. Unless you truly die, there is no way to terminate the contract. Please name your new pet.”

Ling Chen stopped walking, and his expression was one of extreme confusion. He turned around, and looked at the semi-spirit floating in the air. He didn’t know if he should cry… or if he should cry.

“Well, I guess this was unavoidable. Soul Sacrifice Contracts are usually forced upon the contractee. Not only you, but even if a Moon Goddess came, they would be unable to resist either. That’s why back then there were so many people desperately looking for ways to attain the Soul Sacrifice Contract method.” Qi Yue explained.

The girl's arms were crossed in front of her chest, and looked at him darkly with a sense of fear... she was afraid that Ling Chen would harm her, but was also afraid that her body would disappear. As such, she unhesitatingly used her second Soul Sacrifice Contract on Ling Chen... This girl had not matured yet, and did not think much of the consequences of her actions.

A layer of cold sweat appeared on Ling Chen's forehead. From now on, the damage taken by this girl would all be transferred to him... he was a player, so he could revive, but every time he died his level would be reset to 0!! This contract, which he had thought was pretty ridiculous the first time Qi Yue had mentioned it, had actually been used on him... and it was a contract that could not be rejected or terminated!

Goddamit!!

"What sort of damn contract is this!? If there were even more people who could use this contract, wouldn't the entire world fall into chaos!!?" Ling Chen howled.

"Eh, little master, do you really think that there are many people that can use this sort of terrifying contract? Although there have been many stories about this contract, it has only been seen once. Legends say that there are only two types of beings that can use this sort of contract. One of them are beings with 'Godhood'."

"Godhood? You mean like a Moon Goddess?" Ling Chen asked.

“Moon Goddess? Ha... although Moon Gods and Goddesses are called ‘Gods’, in essence they’re just ‘humans’ with special powers and supernatural strength. As for ‘Godhood’, it completely surpasses the ‘human’ level, and can dominate anything in the Mystic Moon world. Perhaps the only being that touched the boundaries of ‘Godhood’ was the Shura from ten thousand years ago. However, this girl can’t possibly have any ‘Godhood’. Otherwise, she would be able to completely destroy little master with just a flick of her finger.” Qi Yue said while smiling.

“And the other type?”

“The other type are beings with incredibly strong spirit. Legends say that the person who used the Soul Sacrifice Contract had a terrifying, unparalleled spirit power. However, this semi-spirit girl only has half a spirit, and evidently has weaker spirit than you, so she’s not this type either.”

“……”

“Hehe, little master doesn’t have to think too much. These two sayings are only legends after all; no one knows if they’re true or not. However, this girl being able to use the Soul Sacrifice Contract makes even me feel shocked. Her background definitely isn’t simple.”

Chapter 199 - Leng'Er (2)

"Ding... please name your new pet."

Having not received an answer from Ling Chen, the system once again sent the system announcement. At this moment, Ling Chen was still deliberating about what he should do.

"What should I do..." Ling Chen helplessly said. Why this semi-spirit girl used this contract on him was not important anymore, but rather... what should he do about this contract? One day, if this girl didn't want to live anymore, and decided to just die, he would have to die with her as well.

"There's nothing you can do now. The only thing you can do is to take her with you wherever you go, and protect her properly. You need to make her trust you and follow you, otherwise you'll never be able to sleep in peace again. As long as she isn't attacked by a Magician, you'll be fine." Qi Yue casually said.

Ling Chen scratched his head, and could only sigh, "Alright, I guess that's all I can do."

Indeed, that was his only option. Otherwise, he would have to forever leave the Mystic Moon world as he simply wouldn't be able to play anymore.

Why did such a damnable thing exist in this virtual world.

“Ding… please name your new pet.”

The system announcement once again reminded him. Ling Chen came back to his senses, and looked at the girl floating in her air. Unless she truly had to, she probably didn’t want to use her last Soul Sacrifice Contract on him either. Her eyes were pitch black, but Ling Chen could see… fear, hatred and coldness in those eyes.

Humanoid pet… to see a girl as a pet, that was quite weird to Ling Chen. However, since the system had set her as his pet, he could do nothing about it. He had hoped that since she was a pet, she would be as obedient and listening as Xiao Hui and Xi Ling, but evidently this was not going to be possible. It was quite obvious that although “humanoid pets” were still “pets”, but she was completely different to Xiao Hui and Xi Ling.

“What’s your name?” This was the first thing that Ling Chen had said to the girl.

The sudden sound of his voice caused the girl to become frightened, and she jumped backwards in the air. She continued to use her distrusting stare to look at him, but did not reply. Ling Chen thought for a while, then replied, “I’ll call her ‘Leng’Er’.”

[TLN: Leng (冷) means cold]

“Ding… you have successfully named your pet ‘Leng’Er’.”

The girl also received the system announcement, and her dark eyes slightly quivered. Ling Chen did not try to go near her, so as to not scare her, and instead gave a smile and said, “I don’t know if

you still remember your name, so if you don't have a name right now, I'll just call you Leng'Er."

The girl didn't answer him, and instead continued to stare at him.

"Your companion has already died, so from today onwards, just follow me and I'll protect you. Our lives are already tied together, so I will definitely protect you and not let you come to any harm. Plus, I'll take you to the outside world..." As Ling Chen talked, he looked at her eyes, seeing if there was any reaction. In his last sentence, he used the ace in his hand, "In the outside world, it's very warm and beautiful, and there are also lots and lots of cute and pretty dolls."

As he spoke the last sentence, he saw some colour in the eyes of the semi-spirit girl... in this place, there was only the giant skeleton and her doll. In such an environment, her adoration of dolls became simply creepy. As soon as she heard the word 'doll', she forgot all about the fear she felt towards Ling Chen, and her lips began to move, "Lots... and lots... of cute... dolls..."

Little kids were truly easy to cheer up and please... it seemed that dolls were the ultimate tools to gaining the trust of this girl. Ling Chen took out one of the dolls he had bought from the Azure Dragon City Toy Store... it was a large, brown bear. He raised it in front of him, "Look, Leng'Er."

This doll was brand new, and was much larger than the rabbit doll that Leng'Er carried around. As he took out the bear doll, he clearly saw Leng'Er's eyes flash, and her attention focused on the

bear doll... it was a gaze of extreme adoration and desire.

"Doll... cute... doll..."

Leng'Er's gaze was like that of a little child looking at a piece of delicious candy. With this sort of temperament, it probably wouldn't be too hard to get her to stop being fearful of him, which caused Ling Chen to feel relieved. This girl obviously had not seen much of the outside world, and this doll was probably the prettiest she had ever seen-she definitely wanted it badly. Ling Chen brought the doll closer to Leng'Er, and asked her, "Leng'Er, this doll is really pretty, right? Do you want me to give it to you? Here, come and hug it."

Immediately, Leng'Er's adoration for the doll immediately was also transferred over to Ling Chen. Just a few seconds ago, she had been incredibly fearful and hateful of him, but now, with jus a doll and a few sentences, Leng'Er began to voluntarily float over. Although she floated slowly, it was obvious that for the doll, she was willing to overcome her fear of Ling Chen. Finally, she landed in front of Ling Chen and reached out with her slender arms to hug the bear doll.

Of course, Ling Chen wouldn't be so stupid as to scare her at this critical moment. He gently released the doll into her embrace... at the same time, he looked at her carefully for the first time. Her features looked flawless, and Ling Chen could not find any blemish on her. Her face was also extremely beautiful, to the point that it could be described as enchanting.

This sort of girl, as well as Qi Yue that sort of woman, could only

appear in a virtual game like this. Ling Chen momentarily zoned out while looking at her, and suddenly came back to his senses. He realised, seeing as she liked dolls so much, if someone else tried to use dolls to tempt her...

It seemed that this would have to be kept a secret.

Leng'Er tightly hugged the big brown bear doll, and buried her face into its soft fur... she seemed incredibly happy and content.

"Ding... your pet Leng'Er's favourability towards you +10."

Eh? Favourability? What's that?

The system announcement caused Ling Chen to feel slightly shocked. He quickly took out another doll from his bag. This doll was a kitten doll, and although it was much smaller than the bear, it was incredibly cute. He brought it in front of Leng'Er, and smilingly said, "Leng'Er, look here, it's an even cuter one."

This made Ling Chen feel like he was a father trying to cheer up his daughter. He felt incredibly awkward doing this, but this was his only choice.

Leng'Er raised her face from the brown bear, and looked at the kitten doll. Her eyes seemed to be glued to the kitten, unable to budge even an inch away. Ling Chen took a step forwards, and asked, "Is it cute? If Leng'Er likes it, I can also give this one to Leng'Er."

“I like… I like…”

Her voice was very soft, but it was evident that she was very excited by the doll. She put her hands together, and the big brown bear doll vanished from her arms. Who knew where she had stored it. She then stretched out her white hands, and took the kitten doll from Ling Chen’s hands… as he gave her the kitten doll, Ling Chen stretched out his finger and touched Leng’Er’s hand… he wanted to confirm if what Qi Yue had said about only him being able to touch this illusory body was true or not. Indeed, he was able to touch her hand, which was soft and warm.

Leng’Er hugged the small kitten doll, and gently stroked it. As she played with it, a cheerful smile appeared on her face. She seemed to have already forgotten about the fact that the person in front of her had killed the Warring Palace Skeleton just minutes ago.

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s favourability towards you +10.”

Ling Chen: “……”

Favourability…

Ling Chen suddenly remembered that since Leng’Er was counted as his pet, he should be able to see her stats page as well. He opened, it, and Leng’Er’s information was revealed to him.

[Leng'Er]:

Type: Humanoid Pet

Level: LV18

Grade: None,

Owner: Ling Tian

An irregular girl from the Eerie Castle at the heart of the Forest of Bones. Her background is unclear, and she only has half a spirit and an illusory body. She was not willing to leave the Forest of Bones, and is always carrying around a doll. She has a terrifying love for dolls.

[Relationship with master]: A connection created by a Soul Sacrifice Contract, which cannot be terminated. Does not need to obey her owner's commands, and the damage taken by her will be transferred to her owner. Her level will always be equivalent to her owner's, and will live and die with her owner.

[Favourability to owner]: -30 (Fearful, Distrusting)

[Favourability is a special trait of Humanoid Pets, and represents how much they like their owners. The higher their favourability is, the more they like their owners, and vice versa. When their

favourability is -5 to 10, their attitude to their owner is ‘peaceful’; when it is above 10, it signifies that they are close with their owner, and will listen to their owner’s commands to some degree, and may even sometimes take the initiative to help their owner. When favourability is negative, it signifies that they do not like their owner, and will not obey their owner’s commands, and may even leave their owner. Factors influencing a humanoid pet’s favourability to their owner include the owner’s attitude and kindness towards them. The kinder and more pleasant their owner is, the greater their favourability will be, and vice versa. Some events will cause the pet’s favourability to massively increase or decrease. When their favourability is greater than 50, their attitude towards their owner is ‘affection’. At that point, they generally will not disobey their owner, but after reaching 50, it is incredibly difficult to increase favourability. Only special circumstances will be able to raise favourability even higher. The lowest is -100 (irreconcilable hatred) and the highest is 100 (mutual dependence).]

Chapter 200 - Great Ravager

[Leng'Er]: ……

Stats: HP: ????

MP: 2800

Physical Attack Power: 1

Magic Attack Power: 560

Defence: 180

Critical Chance: 0

Pierce Chance: 0

Movement Speed: 100

Elemental Resistance:

Water: 40%

Fire: 40%

Wind: 40%

Lightning: 40%

Earth: 40%

Light: -50%

Darkness: 100%.

Passive Ability:

1: Illusory body, ignores all physical attacks and Darkness attacks. Immune to all abnormal statuses and stat debuffs. Can float up to 100 metres high.

2: ???? (Not strong enough, unable to unlock)

3: ???? (Not strong enough, unable to unlock)

Special Attributes: Owner can choose whether she is visible or invisible. Under her visible condition, Leng'Er can be seen and heard by other beings. Under her invisible condition, only her owner, or beings with extremely high magic or spirit can see or hear her. Moreover, only her owner can come into contact with her body.

Abilities:

[Darkness Spike]:

Current Level: LV2

Highest Level: LV5, increasing to LV3 requires pet to be LV20.

A Darkness element attack that uses Darkness elemental energy to create a Darkness Spike within 20 metres around the caster. Silently and stealthily pierces towards a target within 5 metres of where the Darkness Spike was formed. Base attack damage is Magic Attack Power x 180%. Upon being hit, the target has a 5% of instant death.

Costs 20MP

no cooldown.

[Darkness Lock]: Current Level: LV2, Highest Level: LV5, increasing to LV3 requires pet to be LV20. Uses Darkness energy to bind all targets within 20 metres of the caster, creating illusory chains that adds debuffs to the targets. Once bound, the targets' Movement Speed, Attack Speed, Jumping Ability, Hit, Evasion are all decreased by 20%.

Costs 50MP

Cooldown time: 60 seconds.

[Underworld Lock]:

Current Level: LV2

Highest Level: LV5, increasing to LV3 requires pet to be LV20.

Uses Darkness energy to bind all targets within 10 metres of the caster, creating illusory chains that adds debuffs to the targets. Once bound, the targets cannot use active skills for 10 seconds. Costs 120MP

Cooldown time: 60 seconds.

[Doll Grenade]:

Special skill, level cannot be increased. Transfers Undead Baleful Aura into a doll, which is then tossed out and explodes. All targets within a radius of x metres will suffer from a terrifying undead energy attack (x = level/2), which does no damage, but has a 70% chance of instantly killing all targets. Attack does not distinguish between friends and foes. Every use uses one doll, and consumes all current MP.

Cooldown: 60 seconds. Can only be used 5 times every day

Ling Chen already knew some of the information about Leng'Er through Xiao Hui. Right now, Leng'Er's status was much weaker than before, and she had far less skills. Evidently, it was because Ling Chen's level was too low, and since her level would always be equivalent to his, her overall power had also brought down. As he levelled up, so would she, and thus regain her power. However, despite her stat reductions, Ling Chen was still impressed by her overall power. Evidently, her attack power was quite weak-her main abilities focused on crowd control and debuffs. Ling Chen had already experienced the terror of her Movement Speed debuff before but this Underworld Lock... it was different to normal Physical Lock (which locked Physical Attack Skills) and Magic Lock (which locked Magic Attack Skills) skills. Instead, it directly locked all skills, no matter what sort of skills they were. Because of this skill, Ling Chen had been forced to continuously hit the Warring Palace Skeleton with normal attacks. If this skill was used on a Magician, the effects would be devastating... with low HP, no way to attack or teleport, they would completely defenceless.

As for her ultimate attack, Doll Grenade, it was a monstrous skill. An AOE skill that had a 70% of instant death, this was a nightmare to all players. Instant death was one of the most terrifying things in the gaming world. No matter how strong one was, if they didn't have resistance against instant death, all of their Attack Power, Defence, Movement Speed, meant nothing. As such, this sort of overpowered skill was very rare, and usually only appeared on powerful Darkness element monsters. Because of this, all players generally avoided Darkness element monsters. However, Ling Chen had never seen... and no one would ever believe that there existed a skill that had a 70% chance of instant death! Even in her current state, one Doll Grenade from Leng'er could instantly kill a mob of LV100 monsters!!

If he didn't have his Darkness crystal that gave immunity to instant death, and angered her, causing her to use this skill on him...

"70% chance of instant death... this girl is simply terrifying." Even Qi Yue was shocked by this number.

"No matter what, I'll have to keep her with me. Otherwise..." Her current favourability towards him was -30, and that was only after it had increased by 10 twice... that meant that it had been -50 before. She must have utterly hated him.

However, every time he gave her a doll, her favourability towards him increased by 10. With such a rate of increase, it didn't seem too hard to increase favourability. Indeed, children were easy to please.

Leng'Er happily played with the kitten doll in her arms. She had probably already forgotten about the tears she had just shed.

Ling Chen slowly let out a breath, and softly said, "Leng'Er, follow me from now on, alright? We'll go to the outside world, where there are lots of cute dolls. You can have as many cute dolls as you want. Leng'Er will definitely like the outside world. Come with me, alright?"

At the moment, Leng'Er's attitude towards him was still fearful and distrusting. However, this was greatly made up for by the dolls she had just received. Moreover, with her mentality, she had

probably wanted to go to the outside world, but did not dare to leave the giant skeleton. As such, Ling Chen's words were most likely very tempting to her.

Leng'Er stared at him, her eyes still containing a hint of fear and distrust. She tightly hugged the kitten doll, and her body began to become transparent. She turned into a murky shadow and flew into Ling Chen's body.

Ling Chen let out the breath he had been holding. Leng'Er voluntarily entering into the Pet Dimension signified that she was willing to leave with him. Even if she ran away from him, he would not be able to do anything about it.

Now, it was finally time to collect the spoils or war from the Warring Palace Skeleton.

It turned out that while he had been talking to Leng'Er, Xiao Hui had already picked up all of the items the Warring Palace Skeleton had dropped. However, Xiao Hui did not devour the Warring Palace Skeleton's body-Ling Chen knew that Xiao Hui didn't like to devour Darkness element monsters. Ling Chen took out each of the items the Warring Palace Skeleton dropped, and looked at them carefully.

Like all of the other monsters in the Forest of Bones, the Warring Palace Skeleton did not drop a single coin, but dropped ten or so yellow potions, one scroll and three pieces of equipment... it had been far less generous than the two other Celestial Bosses he had killed in the past.

[Skill Scroll-Baleful Shield]:

Requirements: Any profession above LV10. After using this scroll, the user will learn the skill [Baleful Shield]. After the user's HP drops to 50%, they will reflect 10% of all Physical Attack Damage. The skill will deactivate when the user's HP rises above 50%.

This skill was exactly the same as the Warring Palace Skeleton's. However, while it was a godly skill on the boss, it was pretty much useless on players. Ling Chen thought about it, and decided not to use it. Although this skill was not too amazing, this was still a scroll that could allow one to directly learn a skill. It would definitely be able to fetch an astronomical price.
Ling Chen looked at the three pieces of equipment, and his eyes shone.

Although the Warring Palace Skeleton had not dropped many pieces of equipment, there were two pieces of Gold grade equipment... and out of the three pieces of equipment, one was a Gold grade ring, and the other was a Celestial grade piece of equipment!!

[Spectre Staff]:

Type: Long Staff

Grade: Gold

Equipment Requirements: Non-Priest Magical Professions above LV20. A staff made from white bones. Holding it will cause one to feel an ominous chill.

Attributes: Magic Attack Power+70, Spirit+15, MP+100, +20% damage to Darkness elemental magic, adds a 5% chance of inflicting a “curse” status when casting Magic Attacks.

[Four Spirit Ring]:

Type: Ring

Grade: Gold

Equipment Requirements: Any profession over LV20. An ordinary ring that is hiding great and mysterious power. Wearing it increases all major stats.

Attributes: Strength+10, Constitution+10, Agility+10, Spirit+10.

Both of these Gold grade equips had incredible stats, especially

the Four Spirit Ring-it added a whole 40 points to the four Basic Attributes. Ling Chen immediately put it on his left hand. Every player could simultaneously equip two rings-one of their left hand and one on their right hand. As for the magic staff, Ling Chen decided that he would give it to Xiao Qi. Right now, she had a LV15 magic staff, so once she reached LV20 she could change to this one. He was sure that she would be incredibly excited about it.

As for the last piece of equipment, upon looking at it, Ling Chen fell into stupor for a few seconds.

It was about as long as the Zephyr Blade, but it was many times wider. The hilt was slightly thinner, but the blade itself was thirty or so centimetres wide... it was simply massive. The sword was so heavy that Ling Chen almost couldn't raise it up.

Ling Chen had to use both hands to heft up the sword, and struggled to keep it in the air. It would be almost impossible to fight properly with this huge sword.

What sort of weapon was this!? Ling Chen quickly looked through its attributes.

[Great Ravager]:

Type: Two handed weapon

Grade: Celestial

Equipment Requirements: Strength above 200. Once formally equipped, it will be bound to the user, and cannot be traded. Once discarded, it will disappear. A strength type weapon from prehistoric ages which was created using thousands of kilograms of stones, and is incomparably heavy. There are very few people able to wield it. Its power has decreased over time, and now can be easily used.

Attributes: Attack Power+220, Strength+30, Agility-30, Attack Speed-20. When attacking, if the target's Strength is lower than the wielder's Strength, there is a 100% chance of knockback, and if powerfully swung, it can also result in knockdown or knock-up.

Special Attributes: Parry Level: 9, when parrying, or if your attack is parried, if your Strength is higher than the target, there is a chance the target's weapon will be knocked flying.

Bonus Skill:

[Thousand Kilogram Rend]: uses all of the Great Ravager's mystical power to attack a single target with an incomparably heavy strike bearing the force and weight of thousands of kilograms. Base attack damage is equal to 500% of normal attack power, 100% chance of knocking the target flying, 30% chance of stunning the target for 3-5 seconds.

Cannot be parried

Costs 130MP

Cooldown: 60 seconds.